



白
花
傳
上

所嫁非良人

酒小七！
五子折！

白雲后

上

所嫁非良人

酒小七
五子折

Empress With No Virtue - Chapter 01-81

Table of Contents

1. [Chapter 1](#)
2. [Part 1](#)
3. [Part 2](#)
4. [Part 3](#)
5. [Chapter 3](#)
6. [Chapter 4](#)
7. [Chapter 5](#)
8. [Chapter 6](#)
9. [Chapter 7](#)
10. [Chapter 8](#)
11. [Chapter 9](#)
12. [Chapter 10](#)
13. [Chapter 11](#)
14. [Chapter 12](#)
15. [Chapter 13](#)
16. [Chapter 14](#)
17. [Chapter 15](#)
18. [Chapter 16](#)
19. [Chapter 17](#)
20. [Chapter 18](#)
21. [Chapter 19](#)
22. [Chapter 20](#)
23. [Chapter 21](#)
24. [Chapter 22](#)
25. [Chapter 23](#)
26. [Chapter 24](#)
27. [Chapter 25](#)

28. [Chapter 26](#)
29. [Chapter 27](#)
30. [Chapter 28](#)
31. [Chapter 29](#)
32. [Chapter 30](#)
33. [Chapter 31](#)
34. [Chapter 32](#)
35. [Chapter 33](#)
36. [Chapter 34](#)
37. [Chapter 35](#)
38. [Chapter 36](#)
39. [Chapter 37](#)
40. [Chapter 38](#)
41. [Chapter 39](#)
42. [Chapter 40](#)
43. [Chapter 41](#)
44. [Chapter 42](#)
45. [Chapter 43](#)
46. [Chapter 44](#)
47. [Chapter 45](#)
48. [Chapter 46](#)
49. [Chapter 47](#)
50. [Chapter 48](#)
51. [Chapter 49](#)
52. [Chapter 50](#)
53. [Chapter 51](#)
54. [Chapter 52](#)
55. [Chapter 53](#)
56. [Part 1](#)
57. [Part 2](#)
58. [Chapter 55](#)
59. [Part 1](#)
60. [Part 2](#)
61. [Chapter 57](#)

62. [Chapter 58](#)
63. [Chapter 59](#)
64. [1](#)
65. [2](#)
66. [Chapter 61](#)
67. [Chapter 62](#)
68. [Chapter 63](#)
69. [Chapter 64](#)
70. [Chapter 65](#)
71. [Chapter 66](#)
72. [Chapter 67](#)
73. [Chapter 68](#)
74. [Chapter 69](#)
75. [Chapter 70](#)
76. [Chapter 71](#)
77. [1](#)
78. [2](#)
79. [Chapter 73](#)
80. [1](#)
81. [2](#)
82. [Chapter 75](#)
83. [Chapter 76](#)
84. [Chapter 77](#)
85. [Chapter 78](#)
86. [Chapter 79](#)
87. [Chapter 80](#)
88. [Chapter 81](#)

Chapter 1

Da Qi Xi 2nd year, August 9th, avoid travelling but good for marriage

This day is indeed auspicious, it was carefully selected by the Chinese Astrology Department, clear skies, sunny, that made even the lion seemed tamed.

Cheung Ning Street near the forbidden city, a line of guards of honor can be seen leading a wedding procession. But unlike the ordinary people, the palanquin is not red, but instead a gold one with a raised ceiling carried by 16 people. The palanquin is draped with gold embroidered Phoenixes, top to down golden tassels, and surrounded by expensive pearl strings, waving in the wind where together it dazzled to the point where eyes aches.

The only person that is eligible for this type of marriage treatment, is non other than the Empress.

The streets were lined with people, everyone was trying to see the procession. Even though there were other festivities that could match the occasion, but seeing the Emperor's wedding is something that is very rare.

Although there were many people in the procession, some playing music and some not, it kept moving forward in an orderly manner. There was also four young presentable eunuch responsible to throw candies and coins placed in hemp bags to the crowds. Whenever the young eunuchs raises their arms, there will be a burst of fury in the crowd.

The procession can be seen to be moving towards the Ye Manor, and from far at the main door, a group of people dressed in dark colours can be seen kneeling on the floor and amongst them, the leader is a white haired, respectable expression, and shining bright eyes.

"That would be Ye Ge Lao" someone from the crowd said after identifying that old man from a far.

"Who is this Ye Ge Lao?" asked one young teenager.

"Ye Ge Lao is Zhong Ji Hall, head scholar, two generations of high positions in the cabinet and three dynasty veteran minister." Following the explanation of

the old man's background, the speaker's voice increases in confidence, even though he is not close with Ye Ge Lao, but it does not decrease him being proud of that man.

People around the area are also satisfied with the speaker's introduction. Even though this matter is known to all, however every time it is brought up by someone, Ye Ge Lao will still receive the respect from many, like the street performances that has been seen many times, but one could not help but to see it again when available.

"Today's bride is Ye Ge Lao's first grand daughter, maiden name is Ye Zhen Zhen, 17 this year. Ye Ge Lao have 3 grandchildren but only one grand daughter, she has been brought up like a treasure, loved by many" another person said.

"You dare to address the Empress with her maiden name, are you not afraid of being caught and be planked?" Someone jokingly asked.

"I heard, this marriage has been confirmed three years ago"

"Then why only today, did they get married?"

"Three years ago, the late emperor passed away, the current emperor wanted to fulfill his filial piety therefore pushed the marriage till today."

"Daddy, the emperor wants to marry Ye Ge Lao's grand daughter, then won't he need to call Ye Ge Lao grandfather?" A little boy asked.

This time there was no answer, but instead the father uses his hand to cover his son's mouth.

The young eunuch raises their arms, coins falls from the sky. People no longer stay to chat but to bend down to collect the coins from the ground.

At the Ye Manor, today's is a day of celebration, everywhere is pasted red papers with auspicious words, all the household members are looking happy, well except for one person.

Ye Zhen Zhen, with a expressionless mood faced herself in the copper mirror. The mirror was purchased before the marriage, with a very good quality which enables anyone to properly see themselves. This is also the first time Ye Zhen

Zhen found out how she really looked like. Egg shaped face, small but high nose bridge making the face seems very charismatic; a pair of single lid phoenix clear eyes, which sometimes portrays a very strict expression. And also a pair of eyebrows that has the same length with her eyes, that made her look unhappy if she raises them.

Even though the make up was grand, it matches well with Ye Zhen Zhen's face, making others feel cautious and in awe around her. But it is unsure whether the emperor will like this type of woman.

Xi Niang, helped Ye Zhen Zhen reorganize her clothes and her phoenix crown, making sure all is right, then helped her stand up. "Miss, it will be time soon, please first receive the title"

Ye Zhen Zhen, did not answer and followed her to receive the decree.

Seeing Ye Zhen Zhen, receiving the royal decree and the title of empress, Xi Niang felt calmer, thinking that no matter how unwilling Miss is, the position of empress has already been confirmed. Oddly enough, when other people would think being an Empress is a great glory, it is only their Miss that is very unwilling. Normally Miss and the Master of the house have a great relationship, and because of this marriage they have been fighting a few times. However, in the end Miss still couldn't win over her grandfather and finally submit to the wedding.

Not long after receiving the decree, it is finally the auspicious time, Ye Zhen Zhen was guided towards the gold and sparkling palanquin, and the wedding procession begins bringing along a trail of carts, which happens to be Ye Zhen Zhen's dowry. It does not matter if the bride is willing or not Ye Ge Lao wanted to make sure his beloved grand daughter got married proudly.

Inside the palanquin, Ye Zhen Zhen, was remembering her grand father's final words to her "Must not be dethroned as an Empress". While massaging her shoulders due to the heavy phoenix crown, she acknowledges that her grandfather knows her really well. But since you know me so well, why do you still push me into that palace that eats up people without leaving even bones.

Thinking about her future husband, Ye Zhen Zhen feels her head aches more. No matter from which angle, the emperor does not match her ideal husband

type at all.

In the Da Qi dynasty, women's social status has been increased comparing to the previous dynasties, where women can have a certain freedom in marriage. Ye Zhen Zhen is from a big family, grandfather is 3 dynasties veteran minister, also the emperor's teacher, her father is working in social affairs department, where if without accident her father will also join the cabinet. Therefore besides the princess, there should be no other girl that is as prestigious as Ye Zhen Zhen. With such a strong family background, there will be endless types of husband for her to choose from, and no matter who she decides, it definitely would not have been the emperor. She has been brought up in a pampered environment, and if she is at her husband's place she would be treated the same, and of course the most important part is that her husband would not be able to look down at her. Above, is something the emperor would not be able to do.

Moreover, ever since the current emperor got throned, he has not been seeing the Ye Family in good terms. One is a powerful veteran minister, another is a new emperor with thoughts, in the court power has always been fought over. The emperor still does not have strong grounds to be able to do anything towards the Ye Family, but it does not mean that in the future he will not. At this moment, she may seem very lucky to be the empress, but when the emperor wants to get rid of the Ye Family, most probably Ye Zhen Zhen will be the first person the emperor will start with.

The more she thinks about it, the darker her future becomes. Ye Zhen Zhen can only stop her thinking and holds on to her yawn. This morning, before the sun comes out, she was awoken to wear the complicated and heavy wedding attire, making her tired to the extreme.

She fell asleep all the way to Kun Ning Palace, even when she was brought to her chamber, she was still drowsy. That's why when Ji Wu Jiu walked in to the room, the first thing he saw was her yawning. Originally cold faced Ji Wu Jiu, when faced with the current situation turned even colder. What an Empress, which such actions, blaming Ye Xiu Ming (Ye Ge Lao).

After yawning Ye Zhen Zhen saw Ji Wu Jiu, so she slowly got up and greeted him. The emperor received the greeting even though he is not happy with it. But certain things still had to be done. After that he sat down next to her. One

looked like a polished jade, another like a flower, they looked great as a pair.

This pair, looked at each other for a brief moment, and turned away. Both wanted to get a better glimpse.

Ye Zhen Zhen, poured herself a cup of wine, remembering that someone mentioned the first night of marriage will be rather painful. Therefore she would prefer to be in a drunk state so that she will not be aware of what is happening and won't feel the pain.

Right after she drank her first cup, she realised Ji Wu Jie was watching her. Ye Zhen Zhen got a bit embarrassed and asked if he wanted a cup. She got up and poured another cup for the emperor, thinking that she should have first offered him a cup, but she ignored him earlier because he was not pleasant to her eyes.

Still, the emperor received the cup from her, and drank all in one shot. Finally, Ye Zhen Zhen remembered that she have forgotten the couple shot that newly weds needs to consume together, which was reminded by Xi Niang earlier, but due to the complicated ceremonies she has left it out, it should be understandable right..?

Ji Wu Jiu, after finishing his cup, filled it up, drank a little and passed the cup to Ye Zhen Zhen. Unwillingly she took the cup and drank it all.

After finishing the couple shot step, the next step is much more awkward. Ji Wu Jiu, willed himself to carry Ye Zhen Zhen to the bed, and starts to remove her clothes. But under her "you are a beast" gaze he no longer has the will to continue on.

"Close you eyes" Ji Wu Jiu requested.

Even after she closed her eyes, her expression still did not let him increase his 'appetite'

But luckily she is still considered a beauty, and her charisma has dropped after closing her eyes, not to mention that her body figure is very good, and she feels good to his hands...

Therefore this love session can be considered good.

And then, Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly feels a pang of tearing pain at her lower

body, without using her brains to think, her body has already given a reaction, her leg has already given a kick to the person who gave her the pain.

Peng!

Ji Wu Jiu fell to the floor, with a unbelieving expression. Ji Wu Jiu is actually a person that is good with martial arts, with a good teacher too and normally when handling Ye Zhen Zhen's level of capability he would be able to avoid easily. However, just now he was concentrating on doing that type of thing....

"How dare you!" Ji Wu Jie retorted quickly, looking at Ye Zhen Zhen with a stern face. Even though he has always been able to hide his emotions well, this time he was not able to totally control his anger, heavily breathing, that is appears that he could breath out fire any time soon.

Ye Zhen Zhen, kneeling on the bed, trying to put on a sincere expression said "It is my fault, accidentally harmed the dragon body, may the emperor give punishment"

Punish? How to punish? This type of crime is very big. However this is the first night of marriage, and if he were to punish the empress, it would mean to not give face to Ye Ge Lao. No matter how much he wanted to, it is not the right time.

Furthermore, on the wedding night, allowing oneself to be kicked down the bed by his wife, if its spread out, the husband himself will lose face as well. That is why when Ji Wu Jiu looked at Ye Zhen Zhen, it has added an emotion of complicatedness.

Then, someone from outside called "Emperor", allowing the both of them to come out from the awkward atmosphere. The person who called the Emperor is none other than his head eunuch Feng You De, who have accompanied the emperor ever since he was a crown prince, which has been over a decade.

"What is going on?"

"Emperor, just now Lu Hua Palace's eunuch has reported that Li Concubine has accidentally fell quite badly."

Leaving out a huge sigh, Ji Wu Jiu feeling better said "Head to Lu Hua Palace".

“Following the Decree”

As Ji Wu Jiu was heading towards the door, he turned his head to look at the Ye Zhen Zhen on the bed, to only find her covering her mouth and taking a big and long yawn.

...

Note: As I am still new to translating, and that this is a period novel, many words are hard to substitute. Hopefully it will be smoother in the future chapters. Do drop any comments so that I can improve the translation.

Part 1

Second Day of the Grand Marriage, Ye Zhen Zhen still had many things to do, praying to her ancestors, meet with the Empress Dowager, and which after she still had to lead and bring the inner court ladies/concubines to greet the Emperor. When she can finally return to her Kun Ling Palace, her shoulders are already in ache due to the amount of things she had to do, not to mention that her lower body is in dull pain. All in all, she was very uncomfortable.

Her maid servant, Su Yue is giving her a shoulder massage, while the other maid servant, Su Feng serves her a cup of tea, Ye Zhen Zhen drank a sip.

Su Yue and Su Feng, are both part of the dowry that has been serving her since young. Su Yue, does her job in detail and concise, while Su Feng is smart and has good wits.

“Niang-Niang, yesterday night the Emperor spent the night at Lu Hua Palace” Said Su Yue.

“En”, Ye Zhen Zhen answered nonchalantly.

“That Lee Concubine is really too daring, just because the Emperor is doting on her a little, she actually dared to pick a fight with you, she really don’t know what’s her worth” Su Feng added.

“oh”

Seeing that her own master is not paying attention to the matter at hand, Su Feng got a little anxious and said “Niang-Niang, you shouldn’t be like this now, you will allow others to bully you easily”

Sighing, Su Yue added, “Now the most important thing is to attract the Emperor, that Lee Concubine, is so arrogant now due to the Emperor’s doting, Niang-niang you should....”

Shaking her head, Ye Zhen Zhen said, “She is this arrogant, because her father is the general in charge of fighting of the Western Regions Barbarians.

What a joke, the emperor is not doting on her now, if he was Ji Wu Jiu wouldn’t let her enter the inner palace. It is just a way to control her father, to

help control the western regions. The border is in current need of people, even though General Su is not a great general, but still considered talented and loyal, and since it is hard to find good generals, when there is one, it is best to placate them when possible, and one of the best way is to keep her daughter in the bed of the emperor.

Su Feng, however found this hard to accept. “ then the emperor....”

“The emperor can be considered sacrificing his body for the country, speaking of which I also admire his will” said Ye Zhen Zhen.

Her maid servants bursts into laughter upon hearing this sentence. Slowly Su Yue, stopped laughing, and said “ Our Empress, why are you still the same as last time, now you will need to control yourself, we need to be vary of the ears behind these walls, if it happens to get to the emperor, I am just afraid he will sentence you that you did him great disrespect”.

In her heart Ye Zhen Zhen said “ So what, nothing could be worst then yesterday night”

After resting a while, the other inner palace ladies and concubines came to greet the empress, and which after today, they are to come and greet her every day before she leads them to greet the Empress Dowager.

Ji Wu Jiu, is only 20 this year, that’s why his harem is still small, and higher rank concubines are even less, as for imperial concubines there are only 2 of them, Lee Concubine and Xian Concubine. Lee Concubine is the daughter (not from main wife) of Su General, originally she was just an inner court lady from Dong Palace (Crown Prince Quarters). After the coronation of Ji Wu Jiu, her rank has ben raised step by step. Xian Concubine on the other hand is the daughter (from main wife) of the Ministry of Household Fang Xiu Qing, which just entered the palace together with Ye Zhen Zhen yesterday. According to the rules, when an Empress are to be coronate, one or two other imperial concubines needs to be canonized as well. There can be two ways, either choosing from within the imperial palace or to bring in from outside, Xian Concubine belongs to the latter.

Note- Some terms are abit hard to translate, so i will stop here for now, the imperial concubine ranks.... gotta go research on them first. Will try to update soon.. when possible

Part 2

The ranks of the imperial consort are as below, in the second rank there are 3 sub ranks, Zhuang rank, Hui rank and Xi rank. In the third rank, “Jie Yu” there will be 3 person, fourth rank “Zhao Yi”, 2 person and fifth rank “Mei Ren”, which are the rest of the people. All these imperial consorts are pretty in a various ways, showing that Ji Wu Jiu has many different tastes. Without an expression Ye Zhen Zhen glanced through the consorts. An action albeit natural brings forth grace and majesty, and those who was glanced by her could not help but to feel in awe.

Then, her gaze stopped at Li Concubine. Initially she didn't want to find trouble, but since Li Concubine arrived late today, she wanted to give her a chance to explain herself. Sure enough, Li Concubine started to explain herself, “I was not feeling well, therefore made it late here, therefore was rude to Empress, hope you give me punishment”. Ye Zhen Zhen answered nonchalantly “Li Concubine, you don't have to worry and be so formal, after all it was to serve the emperor, what is there to blame.

Li Concubine observed that Ye Zhen Zhen, did not show any expression on her face, feeling a little surprised. Another doted consort, the consort of Xi rank, smiled and agreed with the empress. Then turned and smiled at Li Concubine “Mei-Mei, heard that yesterday Sis accidentally fell yesterday, are you feeling better now?” “Yesterday the Emperor already asked the doctor to check on it, it is not a big deal, thanks for the concern” answered Li Concubine. “Sis, although you got hurt, instead of informing the doctor first, you told the Emperor, the way you act was truly cautious” Xi rank consort said while glancing at the Empress, to find out that her eyes were closed without any expression on her face.

The other consorts were happily watching them bicker, as Li Concubine were usually the most powerful one, not many dared to anger her. But since the empress is here today, Xi rank consort wanted to express her dislike as well as loyalty towards the empress. However it seems like the empress will not be bothering about them and sat there to watch them bicker like the rest.

Xi consort, went a little speechless although still wanted to stand by what she said. Then, Zhuang consort, who has always sided Li Concubine added “ Sister Xi, perhaps you didn’t know, the emperor has given instructions to the eunuchs and servants, if anything were to happen to Li Concubine, they are to report to him first. Also, that the Emperor arrived earlier than the doctor it’s because the empress’s chamber was nearer to Li Concubine’s place in comparison to the doctor’s office. The emperor also arrived quicker, perhaps because he places Li Concubine in his heart.

“What a clever mouth” commented Ye Zhen Zhen, with an expression full of praise. It seems that she was only paying attention to those words. Zhuang consort, did not know how to response, unaware whether the empress is praising or sneering. Unsure of the empress’s true intention. Li Concubine on the other hand smiled and said “ Zhuang mei-mei, what you said is true, I was not aware that the servants in the palace were like this, they didn’t think it through before reporting it to the emperor. I didn’t know that the emperor care so much about me as well”. Using words to uncover the scars of Ye Zhen Zhen.

Author’s Note

The ranks of the imperial concubines.

Empress = Sole Leader

1st rank = Concubine (or Fei in chinese)

2nd rank = Zhuang, Hui, Xi (chinese, no translation)

3rd rank = Jie Yu (chinese, no translation)

4th rank = Zhou Yi (chinese, no translation)

5th rank = Mei Ren (chinese, means beautiful person)

Hope the addressing of the concubines are not too confusing. Part 3 coming up soon. The chapters are very long.. sorry for the wait.. hehe =)

Part 3

Bored with their arguments, Ye Zhen Zhen made a gesture, and Su Yue immediately brought out a prepared gift towards Li Concubine. According to the rules, when one served the emperor they are to be gifted something by the Empress.

“Even with the grand wedding, even if you are the empress, the Emperor still slept at my place” thought Li Concubine, happily she looked at the thing that was brought forward to her. There was a few priceless jewelry, showing the generosity of the empress, also there was a white jade carved toad?

The toad is the size of a fist, clear and snow white, very well carved, looks almost like a real toad, but because it is too realistic, it does not really look too good and slightly disgusting. At the eyes, there are 2 red bean sized rubies.

The toad is placed in the middle of the platter, with an eerie feeling, the toad seems to be staring straight at Li Concubine, making her feel goosebumps all around, and she was also afraid that it will jump on to her. “Empress, what, what does this mean?” losing her smile Li Concubine asked.

Ye Zhen Zhen answered “Li Concubine, didn’t you know, Toad has a lot of children, and can grow wealth, it has long been a symbol of wealth and prosperity, today I think that it is the most suitable gift for you”.

Normally, after serving the emperor for concubines to get a symbol of fertility is good, but why is it a toad, is it that the empress wants to imply that Li Concubine is one.

Li Concubine is no longer able to smile, looking at the toad, it is already a wonder that she did not show her disgust. “Such a valuable item, its, its still best to keep it by the empress’s side”...

Ye Zhen Zhen stopped her, “Li Concubine, you don’t have to worry, this type of things, I have plenty, almost no place to put them anymore” Although not shown on the other consort’s faces in their hearts they are secretly enjoying it, looking at Li Concubine speechless..

Something that the Empress have too much, was seemed as a treasure by Li Concubine, this clearly shows that Li Concubine has not seen the world. Without anymore words to retort back, Li Concubine can only gratefully accept the gift.

In the Emperor's Study

"Pu".....

After hearing the Eunuch's report, Ji Wu Jiu, spit out the tea that he just sipped. The dark brown liquid was spilled on the papers on his desks, which were about where the emperor should have slept yesterday night, submitted by the ministers.

"She really said that?" Ji Wu Jiu asked while calmly wiped his mouth with the given handkerchief.

"To answer the emperor, even though if I have to die, I wouldn't dare to keep anything from you!" The little eunuch was scared by Ji Wu Jiu's reaction, still shivering he pondered about the details he told the emperor. It does seems like he knows a little too much and these info should have hurt the pride of the emperor a bit.

"Understood, you did a good job, next time keep being vigilant, do not let the empress find out"

"To work for the emperor, is my duty, your humble will definitely be able to do it".

"Alright, you all may leave"

Because the emperor said all, Feng You De, also carefully left, not forgetting to close the door behind him. The moment the door was closed, he hears a porcelain item being smashed to the ground.

Looks like the emperor is really angry, Feng You De thought while shaking his head.

In the study room, Ji Wu Jiu was almost having a fit. So daring to say that "I" am sacrificing my body to save the country? And that she is admiring this will?? This woman.. really.. really....

Ji Wu Jiu, realized that he could not find a good word to describe Ye Zhen Zhen. Looks like she has already surpassed a normal person's intelligence. Then, he slammed the table.."Really, looking for trouble!"

Since meeting her the first time yesterday night, Ye Zhen Zhen did not managed to please him at all, remembering her face of displeasure the other night, Ji Wu Jiu suddenly took a deep breath. He is the emperor, he is supposed to be the one that chooses which woman to like or despise, but now a woman actually dare to look down on him.

Indeed, those with the Ye surname, all are troublesome.

Chapter 3

Eventhough Ji Wui Jiu does not wish to admit that it is true, to a certain extend, what Ye Zhen Zhen said was true. However, since he is the emperor, his pride does not allow himself to admit that he sacrificed his body for the empire. Therefore, he automatically ignored part of the truth.

Reality hits fast, Li Concubine was already waiting outside with her maid servant holding a tray with a colorful lotus shaped bowl. Bowing Feng You De said; “Niang Niang, the emperor is currently going through the imperial documents, why not you give me the items instead” Then you can leave...

Of course Li Concubine would not want to leave this easily. Initially today she wanted to show off in front of the empress, and in the end it didn't turn well, and not to mention the tease she received from Xi Consort. So she is here to tattle tale to the emperor.

“This bowl of soup, is personally made by me. The emperor is doing his best for the country, I must of course serve him better, don't worry I will bring it in myself”

Although he has tried his best to give some hints, not sure if Li Concubine understood them or not, that she still wants to go in. It is also not right for him to tell her that the emperor is in a bad mood now too. Right at this moment, from the study comes a roar..”Who is out there!?”

“To answer my emperor....”

“Emperor, I have cooked a bowl of nutritious soup for you, will be bringing it to you now”

“Feng You De, let Le Concubine in”

Taking the tray from her maid servant, Li Concubine went into the study.

Looking at her being all petite and pretty walking in, placing the tray onto the table, each move seems like she is being flirtatious. Actually, even without General Su, with just her beauty alone, Li Concubine is worthy of being one of his consort. Not to mention that she is very good in making Ji Wu Jiu happy.

Normally, even when Ji Wu Jiu is not in a good mood, seeing Li Concubine will appease him, but today with her being the reason he was unhappy, he is still far from being appeased. Li Concubine served the soup to him “ Emperor, why not try a sip”

Drinking a little, without any expression “My beloved concubine, it was hard on you”

“To be able to do all these for you, it makes me very happy”

Ji Wu Jiu, held her hand for a moment and said “ I know”

“Furthermore”, Li Concubine smoothly moved to sit on Ji Wu Jiu, with her hands on his shoulder, gently continued “Emperor, is working everyday for the country, you would be more tired. Eventhough the country is important, your majesty should take care of your ownself more”

In the whole sentence said by Li Concubine, he only caught “ For the country”. His mind then wandered off to “Sacrifice for the country”

“I still have to look through the imperial documents, my beloved concubine you can go first” Pushing the pretty maiden away from his arms.

“.....Your majesty?” Li Concubine was astonished, not sure what happened, but this is different from what she predicted.

“By the way, you should not come to the imperial study anymore, this is not a place for woman in the first place”

Immediately kneeling, Li Concubine looked at the emperor with tears forming “Did I do something wrong?”

Answering her coldly “ It seems that I really dote on you too much”

In Kun Ning Palace, Ye Zhen Zhen opened up a blueprint, examining it in detail. On it was a detailed design of a gun. Looking at the intricate design, Ye Zhen Zhen’s eyes were shining brightly.

While holding down the drawing with her body carefully Su Feng asked “ Niang Niang, are you not afraid that Li Concubine went to the Emperor to tattle tale?”

“Tattle about what? I did not do anything wrong..”

“But....”

“Not to mention, even if she did not tattle, the Emperor will still dislike me”

“Niang-niang, aren’t you worried?”

“Worried.. yes very..” Looking at the drawing.. “ I want to get this gun made fast”

Looking at both of them, Su Yue can only shake her head.

“The emperor has arrived——” announced by the eunuch guarding the door. At the end of this sentence, Ji Wu Jiu has already reached. Wearing an intricately design yellow robe. Ye Zhen Zhen, bowed too him while thinking “ this emperor, what is he doing here when there is nothing”

Ji Wu Jiu glanced through her room and saw a drawing, initially he thought that the empress is just learning how to draw some flowers or mountains, so with interest he walked towards it to get a better look. When he saw that it was a detailed blue print of a gun, he closed his eyes “ Where did you get this drawing from!?”

“I found it”

“O? Where?”

“Imperial Garden”

“What the empress means is that, some defense minister sneaked into the imperial garden with the drawing, and lost the drawing there?”

“....” In her heart, “what I meant was, your ability to talk nonsense is better than me”

Nodding, Ji Wu Jiu continued, since this is what you have said, there shouldn’t be any error. Those defense ministers are useless, I will go investigate now”

“Your Majesty!” Ye Zhen Zhen kneeled in a hurry. “This has nothing to do with the ministers of defense, nothing to do with my second brother as well” (Her brother is one of the minister there). If Ji Wu Jiu were to investigate, her second brother would be implicated as well.

Looking down at Ye Zhen Zhen, happy that she finally submit to him, “Then tell me, from where did you get this drawing from? Don’t tell me you drew it!”

With a crying face Ye Zhen Zhen “ Really it is drawn by me”

Taking a second look at the drawing again, he saw that although it was drawn properly, it still lacks in some aspect and really looked like a beginner’s drawing. But...

“How did you manage to draw it? From where did you refer?”

“I once stole my cousin brother’s gun, took it apart..” “and also placed it back”

“Cousin Brother”.. Of Course he knows who is her cousin brother, the head of the imperial guards, Lu Li. Every 3 to 4 days he will be hanging around him, of course he knows who he is. Lu Li, really does have a gun, this way Ye Zhen Zhen has successfully helped save her 2nd brother, Lu Li will not be at fault as well. No matter if Ye Zhen Zhen told the truth or not, she is clever to use this excuse.

However, Ji Wu Jiu, haven’t decided to let her go easily, then with his finger slowly rapping the table, “Then, it looks like you have lied to me”

“Your Majesty, I am wrong,” A little scared, Ye Zhen Zhen understood that she cannot take on the crime of lying to the emperor.

Seeing her being afraid, Ji Wu Jiu felt a little better. “Seeing that it is your first time, I will let you go” Ji Wu Jiu, mentally take note of this matter, at this speed she will soon over take her grandfather. (In terms of ticking him off)

“Thank you, your majesty” Ye Zhen Zhen replied looking at him with the utmost sincerity.

“Ok, you may stand” Ji Wu Jiu said and returned his gaze to the drawing.

Trying to guess what does the emperor want actually, sitting opposite him, Ye Zhen Zhen was looking at the emperor. From her angle, she saw a high bridged nose, handsome face, high forehead, a very elegant face; blinking once in a while, with long and thick eye lashes, with a very fair complexion....

Such a nice face. Ye Zhen Zhen pouted..

“You have a lot of mistakes in your drawing”

“Which part?” Ye Zhen Zhen’s body leaned forward, looking at the drawing. While she leaned, she accidentally exposed her chests by 1 inch more, and she did not realize.

“.....” Ji Wu Jiu, tried to look somewhere else “A lot of parts”

A little down, thinking that she has edited the drawing many times, thinking that it is finally time to make it into a real gun. Who would have known that it is far from completion.

With a gentle tone “I have a lot of completed blue prints and drawings of guns”

Ye Zhen Zhen with gleaming eyes “Will you show it to me your majesty?”

Ji Wu Jiu replied with a sly smile “ Of course... not”

Ye Zhen Zhen finally understood, the reason why he is here, is solely to make her unhappy.

When he say Ye Zhen Zhen looked like she just swallowed a fly, Ji Wi Jiu suddenly felt a little more happy.

Chapter 4

After coming out from Kun Ning Palace, Ji Wu Jiu's expression seems better. Compared to yesterday, when the emperor came out from the same place, he was scary. Feng You De initially thought that the emperor really disliked the empress, seems like it might not necessary be the case now.

It is hard to know a man's thinking... Thought Feng You De...

If Feng You De found out the reason the emperor is happy, is because the empress is unhappy, not sure what he will think next...

At night, Feng You De brought the tray with the name plates of his consorts for him to choose who to serve him tonight. "Your Majesty, kindly flip a name plate"

Glancing through the names, he raised his hands and stopped above "Su Rou Zhi", however after another thought, he flipped "Fang Liu Yue".

Feng You De, respectfully retreated and turn to his subordinates to ask them to go to Yao Yue Palace to tell Xian Concubine to prepare to serve the Emperor tonight.

Because Xian Concubine's name has a "Yue" word, therefore the Yao Yue Palace was bestowed upon her as her living quarters, it is a great honor to receive such a gift from the emperor himself. Not to mention, Ji Wu Jiu and Xian Concubine has another story of their own.

Years back, when Ye Ge Lao wanted to marry off his own granddaughter to Ji Wu Jiu, Ji Wu Jiu found a reason to defer the wedding and wanted to find a empress on his own, not only to take care of his internal palace, but also to reduce the power of Ye Ge Lao. Therefore he looked upon Fang Xiu Qing, although he is not the most powerful in the cabinet, but he still has some people on his side, and ever since his entry, he always has different opinions with Ye Ge Lao.

Therefore, Ji Wu Jiu thought that it would be suitable to choose Fang Xiu Qing's daughter, and had the intention to make Fang Liu Yue his empress, and thus tested Fang Xiu Qing on the matter. Fang Xiu Qing, has had enough of Ye Ge

Lao and of course agreed to the marriage easily.

However, one person did not agree...

Ye Ge Lao, would never allow the emperor and Fang Xiu Qing to work together against him, therefore he got all the ministers to send in reports, with the same sentence. "It will anger the heavens and earth if you do not marry Ye Zhen Zhen"

Then, he also found Taoists to help Ji Wu Jiu and Fang Liu Yue count their compatibility with each other and submitted the reports of "Not Suitable", "Very Not Suitable", "Extremely not suitable"..

Another named Taoists also help listed what would happened if they were to get married, and got the signatures of many other monks and Taoists as well, to submit the report to Ji Wu Jiu. Making it the first ever report to be submitted by monks and Taoists straight to the emperor.

After receiving all those reports, it made Ji Wu Jiu very angry, while slamming his table " If I were really to choose her, don't tell me that calamities will really happen!"

Coincidentally, the next day an earthquake happened at Da Tong, until the capital also felt the shake. This time, even more reports flooded in about the emperor's decision on the empress, stating their disagreement and ask him to rethink his decision. Suddenly all the ministers appear to be very united in scolding him.

During his daily court meeting, he tried his best to appear to listen to their advices and finally made a statement " I am sure our gods, will not be so cruel to not let me decide who I want to marry, I have already made my decision final, let's end it here today". After that he left the court.

3 days after he made that statement, an eclipse happened.

Though this does not count as a coincident, because the astrology department has already predicted that it would happen and the date have been reported to the emperor. Therefore even though he knows it is not a coincident, the ministers know it is not a coincident, even Ye Ge Lao that old fart knows that is it not a coincident but the mass citizens are not aware about those and this time there was a huge disagreement by the citizens about the emperor's choice of the

future empress. Making most citizens stand by Ye Ge Lao's side.

Even this type of outcome was not expected by Ye Ge Lao, but since it is good for him, he accepted it with much grace.

Under this much pressure, Ji Wu Jiu had no choice but to let go of his decision to make Fang Liu Yue as the empress, and can only wait for his marriage with Ye Zhen Zhen.

Fang Xiu Qing, was a clever man, he thought that even though his daughter cannot be the main wife, being the small wife is also not too bad. Furthermore Fang Liu Yue is very good in dealing with things, very cautious, kind and gentle, not to mention she was very pretty as well. This type of woman will definitely be treated well by the emperor in the palace. Furthermore, the emperor has already made known that he will work with him, therefore Ji Wu Jiu won't treat his daughter badly.

Ji Wu Jiu also thought that this idea is acceptable. Therefore on the day he got married to Ye Zhen Zhen, he also brought in Fang Liu Yue.

Therefore Ye Zhen Zhen has always known that her marriage will be a disaster, and still can't like Ji Wu Jiu. Where else for Ji Wu Jiu, he actually treats Ye Zhen Zhen as Ye Ge Lao's representative, so how much he hates him, will equal to how much he hates her.

Following this route of thinking, it is not hard to guess what type of feelings Ji Wu Jiu has for Fang Liu Yue.

Of course.. he likes her..

After dinner, and settling some documents, Ji Wu Jiu headed to Yao Yue Palace. Xian Concubine was waiting for him at the entrance, in a white gown slowly fluttering gently with the wind, her long hair knotted simply with a jade pin. Tonight the moon was bright, under the moonlight she was beautiful, skin as white as snow, almost like a fairy, making it hard to look away.

Ji Wu Jiu, of course had his fair share of pretty woman, therefore he still can withhold his desires. He walked towards Xian Concubine and held her hands, feeling her cold hands, smiling Ji Wu Jiu said "It's Cold out here, my beloved concubine didn't have to come out to receive me, let's quickly go in to warm up"

Allowing him to guide her in, after Ji Wu Jiu sat down, he pulled Xian Concubine onto his lap, the maid servants and eunuch getting the idea immediately left the chamber.

After some small talk with Xian Concubine he found out that, she is very gentle and knows what he is thinking, always capable of knowing what he wishes to hear from her. As an emperor Ji Wu Jiu, comes to the inner palace is mostly to release some stress, and if anyone was capable of making him happy, he will also make an effort to say some sweet words.

But, Xian Concubine has a very thin skin, after some sweet words from Ji Wu Jiu, she has turned very red, making her look very tempting. Ji Wu Jiu slowly raised her chin, looking at her quivering pink lips, smirked and approached those lips.

The mood is good, it is time to get down to business...

The next day, Ji Wu Jiu was awoken by Feng You De, Xian Concubine also woke up. She was struggling to get up to help serve the emperor, but feeling weak she fell back to the bed.

Ji Wu Jiu held her down “ Your body is not feeling well, rest more, no need to bother about the others” after that added “ Today you no need to go to Kun Ning Palace to greet the empress as well”.

Xian Concubine looked at him lovingly, He bend down and pecked her forehead “ I will be leaving now, after the morning court I will visit you again”

Xian Concubine slept for a while then woke up, had breakfast, and went to Kun Ning Palace. Although Ji Wu Jiu said she didn't have to, because she is normally cautious and does not want others to talk about her, and furthermore she can obtain a title of being gentle and benevolence, so why not.

When she reached Kun Ning Palace, the time was just right, the last one to arrive should be none other than Li Concubine.

The moment Li Concubine sat down, Xi Consort said “ Li Concubine Jie – Jie, was there anything that dragged you? I didn't hear that the Emperor visited you yesterday night..” A lower rank consort heard and nearly laughed out loud, she

then tried to cover with her handkerchief.

This two sentence was really powerful, it can make the empress and li concubine lose face, and perhaps make Li Concubine and Xian Concubine to dislike each other as well as make the empress jealous of Xian Concubine as well.

With a sigh, Ye Zhen Zhen thinks that Xi Consort is really a talent.

As expected, Li Concubine got angry, glancing through Xian Concubine saying “The emperor only wanted to have a taste”

Ye Zhen Zhen held her forehead for a while, this person really is daring to say what she wants. Not to mention that Xian Concubine is the same rank as her, even if it's a lower rank consort, if to be ridicule by her this way, they are surely to have a grudge against her. People in the palace shouldn't make so much trouble. But looking Li Concubine it seems that she likes to create more trouble for herself, how lonely must she be.

Ye Zhen Zhen looked at Xian Concubine, seeing that her facial expression remains the same, just that she was clenching onto her clothes, looks like she is patient. Ye Zhen Zhen, thought that this person is ok. Looking towards Li Concubine now she added smiling “What Li Concubine said was right, the emperor wanted to try something new, but this is also because someone else is not fresh anymore”

With a change of expression, Li Concubine wanted to retort, but Zhuang Consort held on to her sleeve. Looking at the rest, Zhuang Consort added “Our Empress, surely are a happy go lucky person, but what you said would also make the rest of us unhappy” In another words she was trying to imply that in the many consorts here besides Xian Concubine the rest of us are also not fresh anymore.

“New people got new style of doing things, the old ones has theirs. Accordingly there shouldn't be any problem whether new or old, whats important is to treat each other well. When one wants to be ahead of others, most of the time their did not receive good endings” Actually Ye Zhen Zhen liked to watch dramas more, but today she was eager to join in because seeing Li Concubine angry was very fun. Zhuang Consort really does not know how to read situation, really dislike this type of talkative person.

Zhuang Consort wanted to add something, Ye Zhen Zhen, though made a gesture and Su Yue brought forward a tray towards Xian Concubine.

Some delicate jewelry and a toad.

This time, the toad is made out of green jade, very high quality with good engravings, good feeling when touched, and if you closed your eyes when touching it, one will surely like it.

Compared to Li Concubine, Xian Concubine received it with grace, and asked her servants to keep it. And because she was very calm, the rest also has nothing to say.

That night, Ji Wu Jiu, flipped Xian Concubines name plate again.

And the next day, Xian Concubine once again received another jade toad.

Until now, does people realized that Ye Zhen Zhen's previous " This type of thing, I have plenty, almost no place to put them anymore" was actually a fact and not to anger Li Concubine.

This realization was proven, after two months plus.....

Chapter 5

The Empress Dowager, does not really like Ye Zhen Zhen, Although most people can't tell, but Ye Zhen Zhen can feel it, and those that know a little about the past could also guess. Initially the empress dowager's family, Xu family was also quite powerful in the court, but after the appearance of Ye Xiu Ming (Ye Ge Lao),.....

Though, previously Ye Xiu Ming did not grow power for himself only, because the Xu family has too much power that even the previous emperor has to consider their feelings before making any decisions. Therefore Ye Xiu Ming couldn't take it anymore and joined hands with the previous emperor to cut down the Xu family's power. In that power struggle, although nobody was sacrificed, has made Xu family very weak and until today they have not fully recover.

And now Ye family, is the one with power, it feels like the history repeated itself.

That's why whenever Ye Zhen Zhen visits Ci Ning Palace to greet the Empress Dowager, she can feel that the empress dowager is treating her rather cold, though to others it seems normal because the empress dowager herself is known to be the quiet and calm type.

However, the Empress Dowager seems to like Xian Concubine, to the point that even when Ye Zhen Zhen speaks a little more to Xian Concubine, others will look at her weirdly

First, the emperor's doting and now even the Empress dowager's concerns, it's only been a few days and Xian Concubine seems to be gaining more power.. in the long run..

"In the long run, won't over Niang Niang be stepped over by her?" Su Feng exclaimed. She was keeping it to herself the whole day, only let it out in this manner, instead of "Phoenix Seal being snatched by her", which was not too auspicious to say.

Ye Zhen Zhen was sitting in front of the mirror, letting Su Yue remove her make

up, although she did glanced at Su Feng, and saw her frowning while looking at the sky, a frown so deep that makes people want to flatten it for her.

“You should really start changing your attitude, sometimes not everything needs to be said” Ye Zhen Zhen said.

Su Feng feeling better “Niang-niang, you are the one being bullied here, and yet you are the one consoling me”

Su Yue added “Although what Su Feng said was not pleasing to the ears, but its true, isn’t it time to worry. The Emperor...”

“I got it, I got it” Ye Zhen Zhen, once both of them come to this topic, she finds it bothersome. “Why must we mention him, tomorrow will be the mooncake festival, I want to eat lotus mooncake.”

Su Feng wanted to continue the previous topic but Su Yue gave her a glance asking her not to continue, and both of them have no choice but to continue the mooncake topic. After that when Ye Zhen Zhen was finally happy, she went to sleep.

After she fell asleep, Su Yue and Su Feng went out to discuss.

“Tomorrow will be the mooncake festival, according to the rules every month’s 1st and 15th day the emperor will visit Kun Ning Palace, We should prepare properly, we can’t let the empress do according to her will...”

“I heard that each lady in the palace would personally prepare a mooncake to be presented to the emperor, our empress....”

“Don’t even mention to personally make, our empress’s skills don’t you already know.. Didn’t lord cousin brother said that after eating what she ate, he wanted to go and die. If we were to present the mooncake from her to the emperor, won’t we be charged with treason”

“But..”

Ye Zhen Zhen was laying on her bed, with her eyes wide open. Because she slept to much in the day, she cant really sleep well now. Her ears are quite good therefore the conversations outside can be heard clearly by her.

The next day, during lunch time, Ji Wu Jiu received 2 plates of mooncake from

Kun Ning Palace, the little eunuch who brought it over especially told Feng You De that the mooncake was personally made by the empress, and to make sure that the emperor try it. Feng You De, although still not clear of the intentions of the empress, still made sure to pass on the message to Ji Wu Jiu.

A little surprised, “has this Ye Zhen Zhen finally realized her part”.. Ji Wu Jiu ponder.

Looking at the mooncake, the size is just as big as an egg, very small and cute, with Chinese prosperous words such as “花好月圆” and “国泰民安”. His dislike towards Ye Zhen Zhen was reduced by just a tiny wee bit, taking a piece, he took a huge bite.

After that, he was in a bad shape...

The little mooncake was lethal, during the dinner celebrations, Ji Wu Jiu was still in a bad mood. Although Ji Wu Jiu shouldn't really be blamed, he was born in the royal family as the eldest son, was fed with good food from young, not to mention after being the crowned as the crowned prince at 8, he was treated even better, with delicacies and great food, making his palate extremely high quality. In other words, the food that he thought was so-so, if given to a normal citizen it would be an extremely rare delicacy, therefore if it is something that even normal people would think it is not so good, then.. to him it will be...

That's why after receiving such a huge blow to his tongue, it is only understandable that he is in a bad mood.

Therefore, the consorts that were very happy to join the dinner, after seeing the expression of the emperor, also left quietly after the celebrations.

That night, Ji Wu Jiu went to Kun Ning Palace, turned one round and left. This was a very clear message to everyone, the Emperor does not like the Empress.

After the dinner, Xian Concubine was deep in thoughts, standing by the entrance of her Yao Yue Palace, she was thinking about the last time she met her father, and his last instructions to her. “Must make the Emperor dessert the empress” (Actual meaning her is to change the empress)

It is certainly not an easy thing, that Ye Zhen Zhen is a really hard to guess

figure, not to mention she is very clever, never in a rush to make decisions

Also, after receiving her second jade toad, the emperor has not flipped her name plate since.

Thinking about that, she let out a sigh..

“Niang-niang, are you thinking about home?” her maid servant Qiu Feng asked.

“This type of sentence, do not let me hear a second time, once I enter the palace, the palace is now my home”

Ji Wu Jiu heard this from outside, and was pleased. It is easy to find fault in a person's words. Looking at Xian Concubine alone, she is indeed a beautiful woman, clever, very graceful and thoughtful, however when placed with Ye Zhen Zhen, she is still not up to par. Thinking about Ye Zhen Zhen, thanks to her all his consorts seems to be better.

Smiling Ji Wu Jiu went into Yao Yue Palace. Xian Concubine was too happy and lost for words when she saw him, looking at him with a very touched expression filled with watery eyes, Ji Wu Jiu felt good as a man. Both of them then sat at the courtyard, and enjoyed the moon light together, like a pair of match made in heaven

The atmosphere was very good, after a few drinks Xian Concubine was red, and blushing in the cheeks. Ji Wu Jiu saw and felt warm too. He carried her princess style, and lightly pecked her lips, and decided its time to enter the chamber for the important business.

However, outside there was an eunuch making an emergency report. “Your Majesty, something happened at Lu Hua Palace”

This night was truly tiresome for Ji Wu Jiu, one of his most tired mooncake festival, in one night he had to change so many venue.

Therefore when he reached Lu Hua Palace, his was in a bad moon.

Ye Zhen Zhen was already in Lu Hua Palace, was in a pleasant mood sitting at a side looking at a crying Li Concubine, while pretending to console her. Hearing the words she used to console Li Concubine, Ji Wu Jiu frowned.

“You are still alive and well, why are you crying, stop crying”

“That little animal must have been involved with you in the past life, that’s why he is here to save you now. If it is fated, there is nothing you can do about it.”

“Zhuang Zi died a wife also didn’t cry, you just lost a cat”

“Su Feng, go to Kun Ning Palace, take some jewelry for Li Concubine to help her calm down, remember to bring the extra-large toad that I have, it’s a set with 12 other small toads, bring it over as well”

Li Concubine immediately stopped crying, facing Ye Zhen Zhen now, to persuade her to change her mind, which she agrees after. (about the toads..haha)

After understanding what happened, Ji Wu Jiu finally made his appearance, In the inner palace, something like this actually happened, this time he really wants to ask the Empress about it. (Planning to trouble her)

Chapter 6

Li Concubine received a poisonous mooncake on the night of the mooncake festival, if not for the cat she would have nearly died. The emperor got really angry after knowing about it, and the empress got an earful about it at Lu Hua Palace. The inner palace is not peaceful, therefore the fault was placed on to the empress, and she were to solve the case in 3 days.

This was the most gossiped news from the palace.

Of course Ye Xiu Ming would have heard about this matter by now, early in the morning court, he has already received many questioning glances, and after reaching home he got reprimanded by his wife. Most people know that Ye Ge Lao is afraid of his wife, in his whole life, he does not even have one concubine, even though he only has one son Ye Kang Le, which is Ye Zhen Zhen's father.

"It is all your fault, did not want to listen to my advice, our Zhen Zhen is very straight forward, entering the inner palace will definitely get framed to the death by the other women" reprimanded Ye Laofuren (Old Madam).

Ye Xiu Ming clarified in a low voice " Zhen Zhen is the empress, who would dare to frame/harm her"

"So what if she was the empress, she can't even come back to see her grandmother. My poor granddaughter.." tears streaming down her face.

"It was all for the benefit of Ye family, if the daughter of Fang Xiu Qing were to be the empress, it will be dangerous for our Ye family... don't cry anymore, our Zhen Zhen will surely be fine, my granddaughter will definitely be able to overcome such a small case.

While still crying Ye Laofuren started to scold Ye Xiu Ming, and he also does not dare to fight back, can only allow her to continue.

Ye Kang Le was outside listening to his parent's conversation, shaking his head and sighed in the end he didn't enter. Previously, for the benefit of his daughter's future, he did not agree this marriage as well, and also had selected a good candidate for her, but because his father was too adamant he couldn't do

anything.

There is nothing to be done at this stage now, just hoping that Zhen Zhen will behave properly in the palace, unlike at home where she can do what she likes, and that she will be safe there.

In Kun Ning Palace, Ye Zhen Zhen is in a daze while staring at a piece of mooncake.

The mooncake is a white snow skin mooncake, with shrimps inside. Ji Wu Jiu has people purposely made for Li Concubine, and because the taste does not suit the rest of the consorts and even Ji Wu Jiu, every year this type of mooncake is only made for Li Concubine.

The only mooncake with problem, is only this snow skin shrimp mooncake. Yesterday night, when Li Concubine wanted to eat the mooncake, she took some out first to feed the black cat in her arms, but who would have thought, immediately after eating, the cat died.

According to the imperial doctors, inside the mooncake, something called “Xiang Fei Zi” was added. This thing is made from some fruits from the southern side. When smelled carefully, there will be a slight sourish smell, and does not really attract the attention of people, but when eaten there is a special flavor. This “Xiang Fei Zi”, can be used to cook, and also used as medicine however it cannot be mixed with shrimp to be eaten, if not one will appear to be poisoned or if not worst, death.

Ye Zhen Zhen already ordered all chefs that day to be detained and questioned, the kitchen has also been thoroughly searched, there was still no signs of the “Xiang Fei Zi”. This item is made from the south and is hard to get, not to mention low production, and also the northern people also doesn’t really like it, therefore it is not in the list to be purchased into the palace. Though there is some in the doctor’s office, but according to the inventory list, there was no one using it or even any that has gone missing.

Therefore, the only other option is to obtain it from outside and someone were to stealthily got it in the palace, and if it were really the case then, it will be hard to solve.

Ye Zhen Zhen, also questioned the guards guarding each gate, and did not get any clues as well, all of them said they were doing everything according to the rules and did not detect any abnormality. Ye Zhen Zhen did not want to use torture to get the answer, and even if she were to get the answer that way, Ji Wu Jiu is not easy to fool. This time it seems that he purposely made her do all the work. Only afraid in the future there will be more to come.

In other words, if anything were to happen in the inner palace, she will be brought to be reprimanded one round, and after scolding she will still need to clean up the problem, if not with a “Inner palace not peaceful, empress not worthy” title will be given to her, there will be no place for her to even cry later.

This method really is cruel and evil.

Alright, even though at this moment he can't do this yet, but it will be hard to say in the future.

That's why Ye Zhen Zhen does not want to leave too many faults in the hands of Ji Wu Jiu, especially the obvious types.

Therefore, Ye Zhen Zhen continued to stare at the mooncake, trying to find for any clues at all.

Another problem with this case is that the people that could be involved are too vast. Li Concubine has been in the palace for many years, she has worked her way up to her current status, and it's already a miracle. But in this palace, even a little eunuch can be the culprit, no need to mention Xian Concubine and Xi Consort, these people that does not really have a good relationship with her. Even the emperor can't be out from being suspected, this item after eating will most probably get poisoned, not necessary will be lead to death. There is also Li Concubine herself, she did not actually sustain any injury, it could be that she acted this play herself to get pity and also to frame people that she doesn't like.

Ye Zhen Zhen is gonna lose it while thinking about this matter. Who on earth did this, if I find out I will definitely cut that person into a thousand pieces!

The next day during lunch time, when due to the case, Ye Zhen Zhen did not have appetite, Ji Wu Jiu was eating happily and even added a bowl of rice.

After lunch he dropped by Kun Ning Palace to kindly remind Ye Zhen Zhen, that she has one day left.

Without an expression, Ye Zhen Zhen looked at him “ If I can’t solve the case, what do you plan to do?:

Ji Wu Jiu replied “ You are my empress, I would not punish you for sure”

Only Ghost will believe you!!

“I will only note down another fault by you, oh right, you already have 2 in my hands”

“Which was the second time?”

“Poisonous Mooncake”

“There is still time, how would you know if I wont be able to solve it?”

“What I meant, was the poisonous mooncake you made”

“”

The third day reached very fast. About the snowskin shrimp mooncake, Ye Zhen Zhen still did not have much clue. What a joke, she is in the inner palace, not the Crime Bureau, how would she know how to solve this case, not only that this case has so many suspects, it is also basically clueless!

After lunch, Ye Zhen Zhen already acted like a pig that is not afraid of the hot water. Afterall, all she will get is another fault with Ji Wu Jiu. Holding a tray of treats she was prancing around, totally unlike the head of the inner palace.

Su Feng suddenly ran in hurriedly “Niang Niang, our Kun Ning Palace’s Ding Da Xiang committed suicide!”

Ye Zhen Zhen was shocked, without swallowing, holding her chin she asked “Which Ding Da Xiang?”

“The little eunuch that cleans the courtyard.. niang niang, now is not the time to think, lets go see him first. Su Yue thinks that there is some sort of hidden agenda, is currently guarding over there, not allowing anyone to touch the body or the room”

Su Yue is definitely courageous! Ye Zhen Zhen felt in awe towards her, a lady eventhough facing a dead body still can be so calm and think of the hidden agenda and carefully guarding it.

Ye Zhen Zhen hurriedly arrived at the side courtyard, where all the eunuch's of the Kun Ning Palace stays. Ding Da Xiang shares a room with another eunuch, today the room mate was working, and not sure why, he suddenly came back, and found that Ding Da Xiang already hanged himself. When Su Yue asked him, why did he return he could not even answer properly.

Ye Zhen Zhen asked “ Most probably you wanted to take a nap and sneaked back here quietly”

The eunuch immediately kneeled and knocked his head to the ground “Niang Niang please have mercy, I do not dare anymore”

..... it was actually just like that, Su Yue thought, indeed only lazy people will understand lazy people.

Ye Zhen Zhen did not bother with him anymore and walked towards the corpse. It has already been taken down, laying on the ground, with eyes popping and tongue hanging out, it was truly gruesome.

“Niang Niang, I found this from his body” Su Yue, quietly gave a packet of thing to Ye Zhen Zhen.

Receiving it, she opened and smelled it a little, there is a little sourness smell. Closing her eyes for a moment, “This couldn't be Xiang Fei Zi right?”

Many images flashes through her mind, like a few scenes matching into one, making a complete storyline. Ye Zhen Zhen realizes something and shouted “Not Good!”

“What happened, Niang Niang?”

“Su Yue, you stay here and see what you can find out, Su Feng bring all eunuch from Kun Ning Palace to Yang Xin Dian (emperor's living quarters), if anyone were to even come close to the Yang Xin Dian, all knock them out and bring them here. Hurry!”

Su Feng rushed out after receiving the order. Ye Zhen Zhen gave a kick to the

kneeling eunuch and said “ You also go! Hurry and go”

The little eunuch also ran after Su Feng.

Ye Zhen Zhen followed them as well after an afterthought, she was still worried. With her own set of orders Su Yue, cant leave the place and can only shout after Su Feng to look after the empress.

The moment Su Feng heard this, a red figure has already rushed in front of her, when she came back to sense, the red figure is already way ahead of her, sprinting through was Ye Zhen Zhen.

“ Nlang Niang’ With the fastest speed she gathered the eunuch and chased after her as well.

Today, many people in the palace saw a hot red dressed empress running true the palace as though she was being chased after. Even though the maid servants and eunuch has been in the palace for a long time, they have not seen such a thing as well. All was scared white, not sure what happened and was afraid they would be involved, so they can only kneel on the floor not daring to move. After Ye Zhen Zhen finally passed by, Su Feng who was leading a group of eunuch was racing past them as well, it made them shiver again.

Everyone was shocked, anyone would be curious, therefore those that are scared remained while does that was a bit more courageous joined the group of eunuch that Su Feng was leading and ran together. Su Feng was leading in front therefore was not aware of what happened in the back, and the eunuch from Kun Ning palace also just received order to catch people, so they did not bother with the rest that were following them as well.

Therefore, as they ran past, their group has expanded 15 times the original size, it seems the people in the palace are really free....

Chapter 7

Ji Wu Jiu is a good emperor, every day after lunch, majority of his time is spent on dealing with the incoming reports and to meet up with ministers at his Palace.

That's why becoming an emperor is not as easy as it seems, and not as good as it sounds, not something most people can handle. Therefore in history there is equal amount of wise and good emperor, but most of them are useless..

Ji Wu Jiu is an ambitious, and responsible emperor, he wants to be a wise emperor, and the cost of being a good emperor is to spend more time in Yang Xin Dian then his inner palace. Therefore everyone knows, if you want to look for the emperor, go to Yang Xin Dian.

But today, after looking over the documents and report, he wants to drop by Kun Ning Palace to admire Ye Zhen Zhen's troubled face.

However, before he can even leave he saw a little eunuch kneeling in front, looking very anxious wanting to report something. "Your majesty I have something to report"

Though, Ji Wu Jiu ignored him as he was attracted by something else.

Who can tell him, what on earth is the Empress doing?

From far, Ye Zhen Zhen was sprinting in her red robe, that was flowing with the wind, looking almost like a pretty cloud that appears during sunset. This cloud was floated towards Ji Wu Jiu, ignoring the look from Ji Wu Jiu, without saying anything she knocked out the little eunuch.

After that only was Ye Zhen Zhen calmed, taking deep breaths. There was little sweat droplets forming on her forehead, and have a natural blush that comes after exercising, like the blooming plum blossoms in March.

The group of eunuch and maid servants finally reached, from far they already saw what Ye Zhen Zhen did, they all touched their necks, as if they were they one to receive the blow from her.

Ji Wu Jiu, looked at Ye Zhen Zhen.. "Empress, after your meal you have nothing

better to do?”

Then only did Ye Zhen Zhen start greeting the Emperor, “Your majesty... y..”

“Its ok, “ waving his hand, Ji Wu Jiu was getting impatient. Glancing at the fainted eunuch “Empress, shouldn’t you give me an explanation for this”

Ye Zhen Zhen, after finally catching her breath, “Your majesty, this eunuch is involved in the poisonous mooncake case at Lu Hua Palace, I need to investigate him”

“O..? then why must you knock him out, Is there something that I shouldn’t know?”

“I wouldn’t dare to hide anything from you, its just that the inner palace should be under my control, I wouldn’t dare your majesty to be concerned about it, however if you are still worried, you can listen but you must not show your face”

“Why?”

“You will know after the interrogation”

The little eunuch was awoken with a splash of water.

Looking at the eunuch carefully, Ye Zhen Zhen figures that he is around 15 years old, with a white face, looked quite weak as well. When he first opened his eyes, he was abit out of place, but when he saw Ye Zhen Zhen, surprisingly he was not shocked or anxious, he even properly bowed to Ye Zhen Zhen.

Ye Zhen Zhen, was sitting, stiffen her expression and placed her tea cup down, “Wang Xiao Hu, do you admit your fault?”

“Replying to your majesty, I do not know what mistake have I done”

“Ding Da Xiang didn’t die, he already admitted.” Even though Ding Da Xiang already died, but Kun Ning Palace has managed to keep it down, and even if the news was leaked, the person here now won’t even have the chance to know.

His expression changed and returned back to normal in a split second. Though even this slight action was caught by Ye Zhen Zhen.

“I do not understand what Niang niang has said, I hope niang niang can explain”

“Your Shi Fu, works in the imperial kitchen, and is in charged of the snacks department, this year the snow skin shrimp mooncake was made by him. However the day he made the mooncake you were not on duty, that’s why when I was catching people I missed you out, allowing you the chance to go report to the emperor. Today, what did you want to tell the emperor? To tell how the empress ordered someone to force you to put the Xiang Fei Zi into the mooncake ??”

“Niang niang, I was framed, framed...”

“Framed? Okay, then why don’t you tell me, as a cook in the kitchen, what is so important that you have to go report to the emperor personally?”

“i.. i...”

“This is clearly a good show that you have planned with Ding Da Xiang! That day you sneaked into the kitchen, and placed the Xiang Fei Zi into the mooncake. Ding Da Xiang has also worked with you, that he will commit suicide today, and to purposely place some Xiang Fei Zi on him, afraid that no one would find out that I would be definitely linked to the case. And on the other hand, you act liked you found out about me being suspicious and wanted to report to the emperor, and because this involves me, after listening to you, surely he will come to Kun Ning Palace to ask me about it, and he will surely find the evidence on his body then. By that time, even if I were to jump into the yellow river, I would be able to prove my innocence, is that right???”

“”

“If this plan was successful, not only can you get rid of Li Concubine, you will also make me take on this blame, and perhaps to even vacate the empress’s position. This, plan, so detail planned,... “

“”

Hitting the table loudly Ye Zhen Zhen continued loudly “ Speak the truth, who is the one who made you do this!”

Looking at the situation Wang Xiao Hu, realize he will die anyway, therefore he

harden his heart and said “I admit, but it has nothing to do with others, I have always disliked Li Concubine, therefore I could not stand it anymore and made such a mistake, whether you want to kill me or not, I will accept”

“How loyal”, Ye Zhen Zhen laughed, she stood up, circling Wang Xiao Hu twice, then slowly continued “Wang Xiao Hu, it doesn’t matter what Hui Consort gave you” looking at the kneeling eunuch who started shivering with a terrified expression, and super pale. Closing her eyes a little, “You only need to know, what she can do, I can also, but what she can’t do, I will be able to do”

Her husband is the current emperor, her grandfather is the prime minister, the most powerful 2 person in this empire is also related to her, that’s why she is able to say so, not to scare anyone especially.

The current Wang Xiao Hu, already has tears streaming down his face, bowing non-stop, hitting his head to the floor. “Empress, Hui Consort used my parents, brother and sister’s life to forced me, that’s why i... I .. I will speak the truth, but I beg your majesty to help me, I deserve death, but my family is innocent”.

Sitting back down, Ye Zhen Zhen, shook her head, “ Stand up first, Hui Consort must have just scared you, you are still young, easy to be fooled, Whatever that happens in the palace does not implicate what is happening outside. Hui Consort’s father is not foolish, if your family is really innocent, he definitely won’t help her daughter to harm the innocent, to use his own job as a wager to try to win something so small.”

Finally calming down, Wang Xiao Hu ceased crying, initially he thought that he would not be able to escape death, and was only thinking to safe his family, but after listening to the empress, he finally can be more calm.

“After your death, I will make sure your family gets compensation” Added Ye Zhen Zhen warmly. Ji Wu Jiu who was sitting behind the screen can’t help but wonder if that is the proper way to console someone. Furthermore an eunuch that dares to harm an imperial concubine, was it necessary to even console him.

Ready to face everything, Wang Xiao Hu, who was initially not someone who lies too much hope in his life, now that he knows his fate from the empress, he was actually touched. “Thank you for your mercy your majesty, in my next life I would be willing to work as a cow or horse for you, to pay back your mercy....

Niang Niang, I still have a question, how do you know it was Hui Consort that made me do this?”

Ye Zhen Zhen, laughed, “ I was just guessing, who knew one trial and I got it”

“ ...”

Wang Xiao Hu was speechless, thickened his face and praised Ye Zhen Zhen a little. Ye Zhen Zhen’s mood became better and start some small talk with, asking how many people are there in his family, what do they do, how did he enter the palace, how many years has it been

Wang Xiao Hu, thinking that he will die soon anyway, he answered her honestly, while adding a lot of outside news and stories for Ye Zhen Zhen, whom thought it was very interesting, and was always letting out a small laughter here and there.

The atmosphere was very good.

The atmosphere behind the screen was not good.

While listening to the both of them outside, Ji Wu Jiu can’t help but wonder how did the 2 person who was having a strict and tense interrogation session now turn to be a story sharing session with laughter? Even if he heard the entire conversation he still couldn’t understand.. this two... are they idiots?

The most important thing was, she placed him here and seems to have totally forgotten.

Waiting for a while more, still Ye Zhen Zhen did not come to escort him, he stood up and headed outside.

“Niang Niang, the things outside although not as intricate as the ones in the palace, but they are better because things are always new, there is many things that you can try, like at that famous restaurant, with various types of cuisines from all over the world, not that I want to praise them overly but in terms of variety they can totally fight with the ones in the palace”

“Really? Have you tried them?”

“I have only been there once, I ate Japanese cuisine, the fish are eaten raw, some people can’t take it, but I think it is still not too bad, it’s rather fresh.”

“Can raw fish be eaten?”

“Can, there is many things to eat there, there is also a deep fried prawns, it is too bad that I am going to die soon, if not I would be able to bring back some for your majesty to try”

“Even though you did something grave, but since you were forced by someone, I will try to ask the emperor to change your.....thats right the emperor!” Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly remember that person, immediately stood up and looked back, only to find that Ji Wu Jiu was already standing outside the screen.

Immediately Wang Xiao Hu kneeled down to greet the emperor. “May the emperor live for tens of thousands of years”

Ji Wu Jiu looked at the both of them coldly, “the both of you are very compatible”

Ye Zhen Zhen, turned to Wang Xiao Hu and said “You may leave first”

Ji Wu Jiu, sat down. Ye Zhen Zhen asked Su Yue to bring a cup of tea, and she served him personally.

“Since when did you get the clue about this case” After everyone left, he asked..

“When I saw Ding Da Xiang’s corpse”

Normally if someone were to commit suicide out of guilt, they would not purposely put the evidence on their body, it was obvious he was trying to frame someone. Furthermore even the time to commit suicide was too matching, and if not because someone went back to sneak a nap, afraid only when the emperor arrives only we will know about him. And if want to frame the empress, then the only person to report the case to will be to the emperor.

“Why did you think it is Hui Consort?”

“The dogs that normally bite doesn’t bark”

Framing the empress is not as easy as to try to murder Li Concubine, to face two woman of high rank at the same time, will require a lot of courage, intelligence, and relations in order to do so. Of course, by doing this that person must be able to get something with the fall of the empress. That’s why Ye Zhen

Zhen reduced the size of the suspects to those with the Consort rank and above. Zhuang Consort sides Li Concubine, so she was eliminated, Xian Concubine has not stabilized her position, and with her behavior she would not do something as rash as this, Xi Consort, is someone who just knows how to bark but doesn't bite. As for Li Concubine herself, as per her simple mind, the person she dislikes most now should be Xian Concubine who stole the emperor's doting, that's why it is not her as well.

The last one left is Hui Consort.

"Why did you not suspect Xian Concubine?"

"Xian Concubine is your favourite now, how would I dare to suspect her?"

Hearing this type of sour words, Ji Wu Jiu felt very good, "But Hui Consort does not have any grudge against you?"

Ye Zhen Zhen looked at him "Your majesty, I am a very straight forward person, always speaks what comes to mind, this time when I finally decided to talk less, are you sure you want me to tell you everything?"

Hui Consort, actually won't be so daring to find trouble with Ye Zhen Zhen, but then, one should know, the person behind Hui Consort is the Empress Dowager.

"Its fine" .. Ji Wu Jiu shook his head. His eyes met hers, her gaze has no expression. "You are clever", he then took a sip of tea.

"Not only clever, actually I am very clever"

"Pu——"

The tea could not be stopped from coming out from his mouth. Looking down at his robes, and looking at the still calmed Ye Zhen Zhen, he shook his head while wiping his robes with a handkerchief, and sighing tiredly at the same time.....

Chapter 8

The Lu Hua Palace mooncake case, was solved in three days, Hui Consort was evil for trying to harm the imperial concubine, to frame the empress, her punishment was to be lowered to the 8th rank Xuan Shi, and to stay in the side courtyard of Yao Yue Palace.

Yao Yue Palace.. Yao Yue Palace.. snorted Ye Zhen Zhen, The empress dowager is really too much, what Hui Consort have done, not to even mentioned being punished to the cold palace, even if she was placed to any other palace, she definitely won't have a good time, all but this Yao Yue Palace... No matter Xian Concubine is willing or not, she now have to side the empress dowager.

Though according to Ye Zhen Zhen, the empress dowager is really too eager this time. Hui Consort is already no longer useful, if the empress dowager really don't want to treat her badly, ask someone to take care of her properly will, but to place her in Yao Yue Palace to be a hindrance for Xian Concubine. Furthermore, when Xian Concubine was alone, she still appeared to be independent, but this time round the empress dowager made it known that she is on her side, openly helping Xian Concubine to snatch the empress position, it was almost like turning her into a shield for arrows.

Ye Zhen Zhen yawned and thought, if the Xu family is only at this level of thinking as well... then their family is really easy to understand, and one can't really blame her grandfather.

"The Emperor arrives!", Wang You Cai loudly announced standing outside Kun Ning Palace, and because he has never done this before, therefore he used his voice wrongly, at the last word his voice cracked, sounding like a crow getting shot.

Ji Wu Jiu frowned after hearing that..

This Wang You Cai, is Wang Xiao Hu, Ye Zhen Zhen asked for him with Ji Wu Jiu herself. He was originally a criminal, should have been sentenced to death, but since Hui Consort received a lighter punishment intended, and Ye Zhen Zhen did not even complained, Ji Wu Jiu gave her a face and gave her the little eunuch.

Ye Zhen Zhen thought that Wang Xiao Hu's name was too lame, and not suitable for Kun Ning Palace, so she followed Feng You De's name and changed his name, (You Cai, You = Have, Cai = Wealth.

Ji Wu Jiu couldn't believe that Ye Zhen Zhen thought this name was very elegant.

Although Wang You Cai's announcement gave people goosebumps, even the birds flew away, Ye Zhen Zhen seems to have missed it.

That is why when Ji Wu Jiu went in, he saw Ye Zhen Zhen sitting down, eyes staring at something and seems to be lost in thought. Walking towards her slowly, and saw in front of her there was a chess board with 9 boxes. On the board there were randomly placed pieces with numbers on them. That board is different from normal board, but it is a combination of 9 smaller 9 box chess board, with a total of 81 small boxes in a square, and in each small square a chess piece with number can be placed in. (Sudoku)

Ye Zhen Zhen was still deep in thought, with a deep frown, and didn't know Ji Wu Jiu was there.

Ji Wu Jiu also didn't hope that Ye Zhen Zhen will realise herself, "What are you doing?"

Ye Zhen Zhen got shocked and turned towards him, stood up in a hurry and paid her greetings.

Ji Wu Jiu only continued to frown.

"You have arrived, why did the eunuch outside did not announce?" Ye Zhen Zhen said.

"How Disrespectful" Ji Wu Jiu said while showing her 2 fingers, this would be the 2nd fault in his books for her.

Ye Zhen Zhen, stucked her tongue out at him,

Ji Wu Jiu's gaze returned to the chess board "Is this a 9 boxed chess board?, Though it does not really look like it"

"It isn't, this is called Sudoku, its created by someone called Shi Tian Chang, in this small boxes vertically should have 1,2,3,4,5,6,7,8,9 and cannot be repeated,

and in each 9 boxes board, its also these numbers that cannot be repeated.

It seems interesting, Ji Wu Jiu walked closer to the table and took a chess piece, and started thinking.

Ye Zhen Zhen advised him “This game has different levels, since this is your first time, why don’t we start at the beginner’s level, I have a manual book here, there are all sorts of levels.

“You talk too much” Ji Wu Jiu said, and then placed down a chess piece on the board.

Ye Zhen Zhen thought, I was trying for half a day, it is not possible that you are able to solve it.

Ji Wu Jiu kept placing the chess pieces on to the board, and in a short while the board was completed.

“So easy” He can’t help but to comment.

Turning his head, he saw Ye Zhen Zhen’s face in awe. Beautiful like a flower, eyes shining. Ye Zhen Zhen, was never one to know how to act elegant, whatever she found nice will be placed onto her hair, clear jades, colourful gems, delicate and intricate designs, are her choices. If a normal person were to place it like her, one would think that the woman got rich suddenly and wanted to show off, but when Ye Zhen Zhen has a very exquisite face, when she uses them, it does not seem weird at all, and in the exact opposite, it suits her very well, and manages to carry them very well.

Ji Wu Jiu suddenly remembered something she once said. “This luxurious things, its like it was made specifically for me” ..

“Your majesty, your majesty, this is supposed to be a 2” Ye Zhen Zhen said pointing to a small box.

Jiu Wu Jiu returned to his senses and placed a 2 into the small box, then thought for a bit and shifted his body abit. He was still not used to be too close to Ye Zhen Zhen.

Time places quickly while playing, it was already dinner time, Ji Wu Jiu was lazy to change place so he decided to have dinner at Kun Ning Palace. He thought

that his act of playing the game in Kun Ning Palace was kinda shameful, as he neglected his work, then thought that this was Ye Zhen Zhen's game so it counts as her attracting him to play, so Ji Wu Jiu decided to involve Ye Zhen Zhen and added another stroke in his little black book.

Ye Zhen Zhen didn't know what he was thinking, and was too lazy to try to understand, eating is an important thing, must focus. She didn't like people to purposely serve her food— where this service should only be provided with those that are paralyzed. Normal people also will not really like if someone to serve you every single item on the menu. That's why both of them was holding their own chopsticks and helping themselves. Ye Zhen Zhen likes to eat meat, and asked the kitchen to make braised meat, and not sure what did the chefs do, but the meat was very tender and almost melts in the mouth, and was very fragrant.

That's why Ye Zhen Zhen was very happy. Even when she eats alone, the people surrounding her will also feel very hungry, Ji Wu Jiu also ate a little more than normal. He also liked that braised meat, and ate quite a few pieces. Ye Zhen Zhen was not too happy someone was sharing her food, therefore she took the remaining pieces and placed it into her bowl. Almost overflowing it.

Su Yue saw and quickly ordered someone to bring in another bowl.

This two person was very heated up in eating, but Feng You De who was outside was in a dilemma, he couldn't guess the emperor's thinking, that's why he didn't ask him to flip name plates, and also not sure if what he is thinking is what the emperor is thinking.

After dinner, both Ji Wu Jiu and Ye Zhen Zhen was started to feel awkward. If he didn't flip any names and have dinner at Kun Ning Palace, it means that he will be staying over at the empress's palace, but Ji Wu Jiu didn't mean it that way, and Ye Zhen Zhen also wish it was that way. That time during the marriage night was still painful for her. Remembering it make her looked at Ji Wu Jiu

Ji Wu Jiu""

"Your majesty, I heard that Xian Concubine is not feeling too well, are you not going to visit her?" Faster go....

"Ji Wu Jiu didn't answer, and instead asked another question, "In this inner

palace, who do you hate the most?”

Ye Zhen Zhen looked at him, with accusing eyes. It was very obvious.

Ji Wu Jiu was trying to calm himself, and asked “What I meant was, which woman do you hate?”

“Zhuang Consort” she replied quickly

“Why?”

“She speaks to eloquently, I can’t win her”

Ji Wu Jiu, smirk and nodded, stood up and left

That night, the emperor didn’t not flip and name plates but went to Han Guang Palace. Zhuang Consort was both happy and shocked, it has been some time since the emperor visited her. Because there was many choices and she was not extraordinarily pretty, talents are normal, although knows what to say, but more frequently used to bicker with others therefore she was not doted on much.

Not only that the emperor stayed at her place that night, he also promoted her rank to concubine level, now as Zhuang Concubine, the same rank as Li Concubine and Xian Concubine.

But what made Zhuang Concubine confused was that, according to the emperor , the reason for her promotion was because of the empress.

After hearing this , Li Concubine did not treat Zhuang Concubine like before, when speaking to her, it was weird too.

Zhuang Concubine was not happy, she didn’t think she did anything wrong, last time when she was helping Li Concubine, they were very close, and Li Concubine actually treated her like a maid servant. Now because of these rumours, Li Concubine totally changed. Now that the both of them are of the same rank, how dare she still show power in front of me.

That’s why, Zhuang Concubine no longer listens to Li Concubine.

Looking at the both of them having an internal fight, Ye Zhen Zhen was happy inside.

Also the 1 big 12 small toads that was supposed to be given to Li Concubine was finally gifted to someone. When they arrive on 2 separate trays in front of Zhuang Concubine, she went pale.

After seeing this gruesome matter, all the other concubine and consorts were also afraid, all placed on a firm heart and wanted to report to the emperor.

Next Chapter ->

Chapter 9

Today is the ninth day of the ninth month, not only today is the Chong Yang Festival, it was also Ji Wu Jiu's birthday, After today, he will turn 20.

Normally for men at the age of 20 they have a coming of age ceremony, but as an Emperor with huge responsibilities, he already had his ceremony a few years back. Therefore this year for his birthday, the celebration is not as grand. During the day, to have a family gathering at the inner palace and at night to celebrate with the minister, that would be all.

The family gathering would of course be organized by Ye Zhen Zhen.

The birthday celebration reminds Ji Wu Jiu of the present he received from Ye Zhen Zhen, it was a own made gun. Ji Wu Jiu also tested it with real gun powder, it was quite nice to use.

Of Ji Wu Jiu would know what was Ye Zhen Zhen's intention; See, you didn't let me reference the other drafts you have, I still can create a gun, now you will know what is called super clever and intelligent.

He is at the point where he knows what sort of expression will appear on Ye Zhen Zhen when she says this sentence. Laughing coldly, gunpower is something that can kill, she really dared to gift something like this to me as a birthday present...really.. really.... Sigh..

Besides the gun he received from Ye Zhen Zhen, he also received various gifts from his other small wives, there were some self made embroidery, drawings, antiques, and etc. Xian Concubine, gave him a piece of jade accessory, which was initially made to be a pair of dragon and phoenix, Xian Concubine gave the dragon shaped one to Ji Wu Jiu and kept the Phoenix one for herself. Of Course Ji Wu Jiu would have understood what she meant, but it was such a cheesy gift, in the end he just gave it to Feng You De to be kept, and didn't not wear it. His romantic side will only come out when there is something important, for an example, before any intimate "business".

After hearing about it, Ye Zhen Zhen only thought Xian Concubine was stingy, only giving half of the item.

Actually, what Xian Concubine did was not right, if they were normal citizens using the dragon and phoenix jades as a couple gift was fine, but in the palace the emperor is the dragon and the phoenix would be the empress, and at this moment she is still far from being the empress. Although many others thought that Ye Zhen Zhen will surely sooner or later drop from the empress position, however she is still in that position so it seems that Xian Concubine can't wait to be the phoenix. Although what she meant for it was just to remind Ji Wu Jiu of their love.... After much thought Xian Concubine also let out a cold sweat, scolding herself for being reckless. Luckily Ye Zhen Zhen did not take this matter seriously.

His favourite gift that was still the one he gave himself. A few days ago the head of the main 3 army camp, Ye Lei Ting did a little mistake, so Ji Wu Jiu used a "not competent" fault and sent him far away to Ning Xia to be a lieutenant there. Although there was an increase in rank, to most people it was still a severe punishment. The 3 main army camps are elite forces and have a few hundred thousand army, it definitely cannot be compared to the Ning Xia army camp.

Why did Ji Wu Jiu want to find fault with Ye Lei Ting?

This Ye Lei Ting originally comes from a family that produces good general, also he was capable, strong in martial arts, strict army ruling and held a high position at a young age. But it was too bad that he has family ties with Ye Xiu Ming, although during his father's generation there did not really had a good relationship with Ye Xiu Ming, but it changed with Ye Lei Ting.

Really, looking for punishment.

That's why Ji Wu Jiu punished him. Initially Ye Xiu Ming wanted to help Ye Lei Ting, but it was Ye Lei Ting who personally asked to be transferred to Ning Xia, ending his own career. So, Ye Xiu Ming couldn't do anything and can only curse Ji Wu Jiu for being foxy.

After Ye Lei Ting left, the new person he choose was Fang Xiu Qing's brother in law.

That's why Ji Wu Jiu slept very well for the past few days, feeling revitalized. When he saw Ye Xiu Ming, he was able to have small chats with him, and was very happy when he saw Ye Xiu Ming being unhappy.

Back to topic, about the family gathering.

The weather was great, with blue skies. The summer's humidity is gone, the autumn's air surrounding the atmosphere, one of the most comfortable weathers in the year. Initially Ye Zhen Zhen wanted to held the banquet inside Yan Chun Ge, but since the weather was good she got her people to take everything outside to Tai Ye Pond to enjoy the breeze and scenery.

All the ladies from the inner palace payed extra attention to their dressings and appearance, happily greet the emperor with prosperous words. Ji Wu Jiu was in a good mood, and let out a seldom seen smile, making the atmosphere even better.

Autumn is when the chrysanthemums blooms best, Ye Zhen Zhen ordered people to place them around the banquet, also added some green peony, and many other types of flower varieties. Ji Wu Jiu took a sip of chrysanthemums wine, and happily asked his wives to make poems with flower as a topic. The consorts happily agree, and especially those with high talent. Thinking that in a little while, they would get the attention of the emperor.

Between them, Wang Zhao Yi stood up, looking at the pot of green peony, looking a far in deep thoughts made her look attractive. Wang Zhao Yi entered the palace when she was 13, although Ji Wu Jiu has a wide chest and accepts most types of woman, but towards a child he just couldn't do it, that's why she was only allowed to serve the emperor 2 years later. It was only recently that she was promoted from the fifth grade Mei Ren to forth grade Zhao Yi. Although she was not as pretty as Li Concubine, but she is very talented in the arts and literature field, so Ji Wu Jiu will occasionally change his taste and dote on this talented girl.

Suddenly with a glimmer in her eyes, it seems that Wang Zhao Yi got something and took the brush to write out the words.

After that, Ji Wu Jiu looked at Ye Zhen Zhen at his side, and only saw her frowning and drawing nonsense on her paper. His mouth curved up a little, showing a smile that was not easily detected.

After an incense stick time, it was time to submit their work. After checking them Ji Wu Jiu decided Wang Zhao Yi wrote the best, and the last person was

naturally Ye Zhen Zhen, though luckily what she submitted wasn't the drawings that she was doing earlier. Ye Zhen Zhen was never a talent girl, even when she was at home and her father tried to turn her into one, it didn't work. Ye Zhen Zhen also told her father "As a girl, without talent means she is benevolent" Ye Kang Le couldn't help but laughed, "so everyday ignoring your duty as a lady and playing with swords and guns means that you are benevolent?" Ye Kang Le was frustrated, their family was all into the arts and literature, and never produced any strong generals, but why did this girl turn out to be Mu Lan? Ye Zhen Zhen didn't really bother as she was pampered by Ye Xiu Ming, naturally what she wanted to do, she will, what she didn't want to do, she won't.

Ji Wu Jiu loudly read out Ye Zhen Zhen's work, all the ladies was trying their best to not laugh. He also commented " My Empress's knowledge, on literature I am afraid did not grow after the age of 7"

Ye Zhen Zhen has a thick face, without any change in her expression " It was said that too much literature only brings trouble, it might not necessary be good" thinking a little it sounded like she scolded her own family as well, added "but of course not those that really uses it for the country and people"

This time Li Concubine agrees with Ye Zhen Zhen, because if not for her, she would have been the worst. She hated making poems the most. Looking at Wang Zhao Yi, she could not help but to keep repeating in her heart "bitch.."

After that, they started another round of games which was for one to say a sentence with regards to flower and according to the word count, following how they sit, the next person would have to drink a cup of wine and continue with the game if the last word falls on them. Wang Zhao Yi got twice, and each time her sentence would end at Ji Wu Jiu, and when he drinks his eyes will look at her and making her go all shy, both of them exchanging glances was so intense that it seems that sparkles will ignite soon.

Li Concubine was not happy, even Xian Concubine was not in a good mood anymore.

The other ladies followed as well to try to end the sentence at Ji Wu Jiu, and in the end made the birthday boy drank a lot of wine, but what made Ye Zhen Zhen angry was, everytime Ji Wu Jiu finished drinking, he will always make sure that

the sentence ends at her. Therefore after a few rounds, how many cups of wine Ji Wu Jiu drank, that was how many cups of wine Ye Zhen Zhen had to drink.

Li Concubine was starting to get bored and hurriedly catch an opportunity “Today, it is your majesty’s birthday, I would like to play a song to celebrate”

Although Li Concubine might not be strong in literature, she is very good with the Zither, to the point where even Ji Wu Jiu was shocked. She has the ability to make people drunk with her skills.

That’s why Ji Wu Jiu gestured for them to stop the game and to listen to Li Concubine play.

This time, Xi Consort smiled “If only Li Concubine playing the Zither is too simple, I am willing to sing along to her song”

Ji Wu Jiu allowed as well, because Xi Consort was good at singing too.

Then, Ye Zhen Zhen added “There is music, there is song, if there will be someone dancing, that would be best”

Xian Concubine was happy, she has a good body to dance and when she dances it was very beautiful, she dances Ling Bo Xian the best, even Ji Wu Jiu praised her previously. “I...”

“That’s why I have already prepared” Ye Zhen Zhen stopped Xian Concubine. “A few days ago I found a very pretty dancer, today would be just right to let the emperor enjoy”. While saying she gestured, and a dancer walked towards the pre prepared dance floor, and started dancing along to the music.

Whether this dancer was pretty or not, Ji Wu Jiu still couldn’t tell, because all his attention was given to the hair style.

Ye Zhen Zhen saw Ji Wu Jiu turning purple, and explained with a smile, “I asked the dancer to combed this 18 circle style, thinking it should be able to brighten up the atmosphere some more. What do you think of it your majesty?”

“It was hard on you to prepare this, although I am not sure how does 18 circle hair style looks like, but I think it shouldn’t have been simply tying 18 circles on the head” while looking at her. He starts to be astonished by her, this woman really has the wits to attract/diminish his appetite. (this part is abit hard to

translate, I am not sure if he meant, she was getting more attractive or she was able to make the pretty dancer not attractive to him..sorry)

On the dance floor, the dancer was dancing with 18 circles on her head, and was under a lot of stress, she was afraid if she angered the emperor, her head will be gone.

Actually this hairstyle is not ugly, just very funny.. The dancer was wearing a yellow chiffon dress, with graceful dancing skills, and great body. It is just that the hairstyle made it looked very weird with the combination.

Most of the people were trying to cover their mouth, trying to stop laughing, but once they saw the black faced Ji Wu Jiu, they didn't dare to laugh, and it was suffering to stop laughter.

Ye Zhen Zhen saw that Ji Wu Jiu was finally going to be unhappy, was then only she became happier. Towards this emperor, her feelings towards him was very complicated, although she dislikes him, she also don't dare to do anything that is too over so she only occasionally do small things to make him angry. The life in the inner palace was too boring, she needed to find something to put her thoughts on.

Howevever, Ji Wu Jiu 's feelings towards Ye Zhen Zhen was also very complicated, always gritting his teeth on matters regarding to her, but also in the same time couldn't do anything about it. At first he thought that she was stupid, but actually she was very "super clever"; he was also afraid that she will do or plan anything behind his back, but she always place her "clever" at the front, very honestly, showing everyone. Actually this is something that surpasses clever.

Now, both of them was in their thoughts, and suddenly their eyes met, and then both turn their eyes away again....

Note: This chapter there was alot of parts that were very difficult to translate word by word, so some parts i turn them into summary instead, like the wine drinking game... and some others.. but the story line flow remains ~ hehe

Chapter 10

Even until the dinner banquet with his ministers, Ji Wu Jiu can still vaguely see the spinning circles. Ye Zhen Zhen is really like a curse. She also gifted him the dancer, and because of his status and pride, he had no choice but to accept it. Even thinking about it makes him speechless.

Originally, Ye Zhen Zhen only wanted to anger the emperor a little, but accidentally hurt another person.. Li Concubine..

Li Concubine counted her toads and compared with Xian Concubine's, and found out that Xian Concubine has more, although Zhuang Concubine has more than both of them (13 toads one shot previously), that was another case.

That means, ever since Xian Concubine entered the palace, she served the emperor more than her.

Li Concubine was afraid that she will lose power soon, and furthermore the emperor's attitude towards her has also cooled down more if compared with previously. She needs to think on how to win over Xian Concubine as well as to attract the emperor's attention again.

To play the zither during the birthday celebrations was such a good opportunity, as she was the best in the inner palace she believed. The plan started well, until Ye Zhen Zhen called out the weird dancer.

Everyone's attention was only given to the dancer, wherever she danced towards, the people's eyes will surely follow. The emperor also stopped her zither playing, which is the first time since she entered the palace.

The plan to shine again was a failure, hating on Wang Zhao Yi, Xian Concubine as well and of course she hates the empress the most. Then, the next day the empress was sending out gifts to each palace.

The empress's family is very rich, besides food, Ye Zhen Zhen doesn't really care about the other things, and when she is in a good mood, even without proper reasons she will distribute some gifts to the other consorts in the palace. So now, the maid servants and eunuchs was carrying these gifts and heading

towards the palaces of the other consorts.

In order to show hierarchy, the gifts for the 3 concubines, will be brought by the closest maid servants and eunuchs of the empress.

The one that went to Lu Hua Palace is Su Yue. She was followed by 2 little eunuchs, carrying brocades, jewelry and etc, while she wasn't carrying anything. After reaching Lu Hua Palace, she bowed a little and said "This is the gifts bestowed by the empress, to thank your hard work during the birthday celebration yesterday, please check them niang niang"

The moment she mentioned "birthday celebration" Li Concubine's face changed.

Actually Su Yue did it purposely, although she has a mature attitude, and normally the one that advises Su Feng not to be rash, but she is still young, and didn't like Li Concubine much anyway, so she thought she wanted to anger her a little using words for the empress. Thinking that she is from the empress's side, even before beating dogs you have to look at the owner, most people would not dare to do anything.

But.. she was wrong.. Li Concubine is not most people....

So after receiving the gifts Li Concubine said "Thank you you majesty" then turned towards Su Yue, "I didn't know that the maid servants from Kun Ning Palace knows only this much about palace rules, didn't even kneel after meeting me"

The moment Su Yue heard this, she knows something bad will happen, and immediately kneeled "My apologies niang niang" Kun Ning palace's maid servants was all thought by Madam Tan who was from the Empress Dowager's palace. Of Course they all are well aware of palace rules. "It is because I was in a hurry to present the items to niang niang, I ask for forgiveness"

But then again, for Su Yue to receive this scolding is a little hard to accept as well. Although maid servants are required to pay proper greetings when seeing concubines, but they are the empress's main maid servants, and today was ordered to send gifts from the empress, that's why bowing a little should have been enough, most concubines will not take this matter seriously. Although the palace rules are strict, it does not mean all rules must be follow rigidly.

“Such an ignorant servant, still daring to make excuses after making a mistake, Fan Chun, slap her!” Li Concubine didn’t want to let go of this chance.

Li Concubine’s personal servant Fan Chun, was in a dilemma while looking at Su Yue, “Niang niang...” This is the empress’s people, do you think the people that you have upset in the palace is very little.

“Slap now!” Li Concubine was very angry, of course advices won’t go in.

Fan Chun was the main adviser for Li Concubine, this girl still had some intelligence, she is considered half, while the other was Zhuang Concubine, but it was too bad that Zhuang Concubine wanted to take a lead as well.

Anyway, Fan Chun always helped Li Concubine plan, and normally most of the time Li Concubine will listen to her, but when her temper is here, she would not listen to anyone, not to mention she was only a maid servant.

That is why Fan Chun knows that whatever she says now would be useless. All she could do was stopped talking and walked towards Su Yue, lifted her hands and slapped her lightly. She now only hopes this slap would not leave her hand print on Su Yue’s face, and that Su Yue won’t report this to the empress.

“You didn’t eat rice ?” Li Concubine was not satisfied

Fan Chun couldn’t help, sighed and with a loud “Pa”, slapped again.

Finally Li Concubine was feeling a bit more satisfied.

Ye Zhen Zhen was holding Su Yue’s chin, looking at the swollen face, squinting her eyes, and said angrily “Who did this?”

Su Yue also didn’t know what to say at this point. She felt that today it was her fault first, letting someone hit her one or twice would be fine. The empress’s status is currently not stable yet, she shouldn’t create extra trouble, that is why in the afternoon she was staying away from the empress, and only left Su Feng and another main servant to be by the empress. But who would have known after being asked by the empress a few times, Su Feng accidentally slipped about Su Yue, and also asked the empress to help Su Yue.

“Niang Niang don’t be angry, it was me who first made a mistake, and made Li

Concubine angry, next time, I will surely act properly and not give you any more problems”

“Hitting you meant that she hit me” Ye Zhen Zhen said coldly, “No matter what, I am still the Empress, who ever dares to bully people from Kun Ning palace, really lived too long!”

Su Yue paled, and kneeled, “Niang niang, don’t be angry!, It was all my fault, niang niang’s status is still not stable, there is many people thinks that you should not be here, the emperor could not protect you, you shouldn’t act rashly..”

“Of course I will not do anything to Li Concubine now” Ye Zhen Zhen gestured for the emotional Su Yue to stop. Now the most dangerous person that is challenging her empress position would be Xian Concubine, such a good knife, why should I throw it so fast”

After listening to her, only was Su Yue able to calm down. She knew although that the empress is a little weird but she will still consider the big picture.

“However,” Ye Zhen Zhen said seriously “This matter I will surely revenge”

Su Yue wanted to advise the empress again, but then an eunuch came in to speak on behalf of the emperor. The emperor wants the empress to meet him at Bi Xin Pavilion.

As long as it is Ji Wu Jiu taking the initiative to look for her, it would not be good news. Making such a mental preparation Ye Zhen Zhen rushed to Bi Xin Pavilion.

Bi Xin Pavilion was placed on a manmade island in Tai Ye Pond. During summer, at the pavilion the scenery was very good and the pond water would be emerald green, calm and gentle. But why is he here now?

Ye Zhen Zhen couldn’t guess what did Ji Wu Jiu wanted on her way here, until she reached only she saw that the Emperor was with Wang Zhao Yi.

“Greetings to your majesty”

“Empress, you may rise”

Straightening her body, realizing the atmosphere was a little weird. Looking

around, on the table she saw a scenery drawing drawn by Ji Wu Jiu, and another drawing has a pair of mandarin ducks strolling on grass, should be drawn by Wang Zhao Yi.

“Such a great pair of Mandarin ducks!. Ye Zhen Zhen exclaimed.

Wang Zhao Yi got embarrassed and turned red, looking at Ji Wu Jiu for a bit and looked down, and her gentle eyes seems to have a glimmer of sharpness and hate.

Ji Wu Jiu also felt a little embarrass, accordingly he and Wang Zhao Yi is not a pair of scandalous adulterous. Both of them where just having a chat and drawing session, for him to release some stress, there should be nothing wrong. Although the location is abit quiet, though it should not be enough to be called a pair of wild Mandarin Ducks.

However, the little guilt feeling in his heart.. why is it there?

“Your majesty, why did you call me over in a rush, is there any matter?” Ye Zhen Zhen asked looking at Ji Wu Jiu.

Ji Wu Jiu looked serious “Empress, look at it yourself”

Feng You De lead Ye Zhen Zhen down the stairs. Nearing the edge Ye Zhen Zhen saw, and pondered. Why is there people dying every few days, and not to mention one dying worst then the other, it would be such a tiring life.

Chapter 11

The emperor once again reprimanded the empress in public.

This time it was because of the corpse found at Bi Xin Pavilion. The body was tied both hands and legs, mouth stuffed, and thrown into the pond, and was discovered by Ji Wu Jiu while it floated up, and was immediately ordered to be brought up.

Normally, at the inner palace, any maid servants or eunuch passing away is nothing new, but if it was found personally by the emperor, than it will make matters complicated.

Furthermore this corpse is a close maid servant to Wang Zhao Yi, when she saw it she nearly fainted.

After scolding, Ji Wu Jiu asked Ye Zhen Zhen to investigate the case. And that the palace actually have someone so cruel to take lives, he added another order for her to reorder the inner palace to restore peace.

After receiving the order, Ye Zhen Zhen could only laugh coldly in her heart. As a person above all, Ji Wu Jiu would never place such importance on a mere maid servant's life, he surely is trying to make her troubled that is all. To reorder the inner palace? Definitely he is trying to use this chance to find fault if she didn't do it properly, but if she do it too well, she would make a lot of known and hidden enemies. Even as an Empress, her position was not stable, the emperor does not dote her, the empress dowager does not like her, and with all this matters it is really going to be hard to stay here.

"This Ji Wu Jiu is really too cunning, not a good person!" Ye Zhen Zhen, scolded out, as she can't take it anymore

Su Feng paled, and immediately closed the empress's mouth, "My empress, you shouldn't!", Although they are at Kun Ning Palace, but who knows if there are any ears here sent by the emperor. Such rude words should not even be thought of, mentioning the emperor's name is even worst, daring to say it out like this, not sure if she should be called brave or foolish.

Su Yue was shocked and she was already kneeling, “My empress, you are a smart person, for once I will say truthfully. In this inner palace, there is no one that is not cunning or evil? Even for Li Concubine is she was foolish or innocent how would she reach her position now. You are the head of the inner palace, the higher the position the more dangerous it is, there are countless pairs of eyes staring at you! I have followed you for so many years, I am well aware of your temper. You are brought up in Ye Manor like a jewel, if when you made mistakes, no one in the Ye Manor actually punishes you. But in the palace it is different, nobody will overlook your mistakes, everyone also wants to win over you, also wants you to die”

Ye Zhen Zhen got shocked, “still dare to say me, you also said what you shouldn’t have said”

‘It is because I can’t help it, please listen to my advice, I know that you understand fully in your heart, but its just that you can’t swallow it, but if it were to continue I can only be afraid of the consequences.. Even if you don’t think for yourself, you need to think for Ye Manor as well”

“Stand up first”, Ye Zhen Zhen said, while looking at Su feng, who immediately helped Su Yue stand. Ye Zhen Zhen sighed and continued “Everyone thought that I would be able to protect Ye Family, but I can’t even protect myself, how am I to help Ye Family?”

To be a powerful political family, it almost always require a weak emperor, but Ji Wu Jiu is a very healthy, keen and good emperor, and he definitely would never allow any family to grow strong. If Ji Wu Jiu is a cunning tiger, then Ye Xiu Ming would only be considered a female lion. Not that Ye Zhen Zhen does not believe in her grandfather, but it is a fact. Time is standing by Ji Wu Jiu’s side, it would not be possible for Ye family to win.

Not to mention, the more power you have the more trouble you would get, then Ye family now even have an empress, using the “family” status, how is it possible that others would not feel jealous.

Sighing again, Ye Zhen Zhen thought that this chess move of placing her as an empress, was done wrongly by her grandfather.

“How can a good person be a good emperor” Ji Wu Jiu said after listening to the report, while placing his brush down. In a low voice, almost like talking to himself, but also seems like telling the people there.

There were only 2 eunuch’s there at the moment, and both of them also does not have the right to comment.

“You may go”

The eunuch kneeling, stood up and left, while still bending his waist. If Su Yue were to see his face, definitely she will know that he is no stranger.

There is only 2 person left in the room, Ji Wu Jiu said, “the empress is an understanding person”

“She is still Mr Ye’s granddaughter” Feng You De replied. Though this sentence is merely pointing out the facts, but there seems to be more to it, it was like to remind him to keep his distance from her.

Ji Wu Jiu, looked at Feng You De, said what was her servant’s name again? Su Yue?

“Yes that is the name”

“It clashes with Xian Concubine’s name”

Feng You De thought that the Emperor really thinks a lot about Xian Concubine, even to this extent. Su Yue is the personal maid servant of the empress, whether name clashes or not is decided by the emperor’s one word, as there are a huge difference between an empress and concubine, even if Xian Concubine is being doted on, she is still only a concubine.

He thought that the emperor will give order to Ye Zhen Zhen to change Su Yue’s name, but after waiting for a while, the emperor still did not say anything. He looked up and found that Ji Wu Jiu has already picked up his brush and continue looking through the documents.

“....” Feng You De don’t know whether he should ask the emperor, after contemplating for a while, and finally have the courage to ask, Ji Wu Jiu looked at him with a cold glare. Feeling a chill, he quickly looked down again.

Ji Wu Jiu flipped open a document, it came from the newly appointed 3 main

camp head soldier, asking the emperor to personally visit the army camp to motivate the soldiers.

This is the type of people that he wants, someone who know what to do.

These days, there are rumors flying in the inner palace. Everyone is saying that the maid servant that died at Bi Xin Pavilion has spoke to Ye Zhen Zhen through a dream, to tell her about what happened, and also told her the murderer.

But the people around the empress has very tight lips, no matter how they tried to ask about the case no answers were given. Only Su Feng, who slipped a little that the murderer clashes with the flower god. This sentence has then been spread about by the servants throughout, to the extent that even if the empress does not punish the murderer, the flower god will do it.

Actually this matter is very amusing, there are many ways to clash with the flower god, it could be birthdate clash, or fate clashing, or that day that time accidently clash... Which type was the empress referring to?

Ji Wu Jiu after hearing about this, only laughed a little. This type of drama to create ghosts and gods, we shall see what will happen.

Ye Zhen Zhen's drama was actually very simple, she didn't really want to investigate the case, and the people that died without reason in this palace are too many. She only wanted to look for a scapegoat, to answer Ji Wu Jiu. As for what type of scapegoat-- of course is the one that she dislike.

These days, the one that she dislikes the most would be Fan Chun, the maid servant who slapped her Su Yue.

And Fan Chun's name can be somehow be related to clashing with the flower gods.

Today, Ye Zhen Zhen was talking a walk with Wang You Cai in the imperial gardens, from far she saw a big built person leading a troop of army passing by, and they also saw the empress's entourage, and quickly went aside. In the inner palace the guards can move around their designated areas, and if not necessary they are to avoid contact with the ladies in the inner palace.

“Captain Lu” Ye Zhen Zhen called the person leading the troops.

Lu Li heard her calling, walk towards her and kneeled “Your majesty”

The person kneeling is wearing a dark red palace uniform, on the uniform there was an embroidered an image that represented the 4th rank martial minister rank. This person has a big built, and when he walks he has an air of superiority, when kneeling his back is straight, not even slightly moving.

Looking at the people who she grew up with greeting her according to the rules, Ye Zhen Zhen felt a little awkward. Looking at the back of his head, “Raise your head”

“I do not dare”

“Cous.....”

“Niang-niang!, niang niang.. .. is there anything I can help you with?”

“Do you know anyone from Da Li Shi (something like FBI)?” Da Li Shi is in charge of investigations.

“In Da Li Shi, I have some connections, is there something wrong?”

“Nothing much, just want to you to help me ask if anyone from Da Li Shi is interested to be an eunuch.”

“.....”

After sending Ye Zhen Zhen off, Lu Li can finally feel better, after thinking, he frowned and shook his head, Zhen Zhen is a very straightforward person, in this inner palace one would not know how much she will need to suffer.

After walking for a while, suddenly there was a maid servant running towards her ,and whispered to Ye Zhen Zhen. “Bring her” Ye Zhen Zhen replied.

After a while, a maid servant was sent to her, looking pale, after seeing Ye Zhen Zhen, she kneeled on the ground and started knocking her head to the floor, “Please have mercy, please have mercy”

“Which palace are you from?”

“Your majesty, I am from Ci Ning Palace”

Ye Zhen Zhen stopped asking and gestured “bring her out”

This was really unexpected, Ye Zhen Zhen didn't think that simply giving out some seeds will attract a bird on its own. The maid servant in bright daylight, was burning incense and memorial papers in the imperial garden, not even sure if she wanted to fall into the trap herself or really got scared by the rumour, thinking that she really angered the flower god. Therefore, this case no longer needs to be investigated further. Anything that happens in the inner palace, there will be no one daring enough to try to blame Ci Ning Palace, therefore she should be the murderer. Just that, being able to catch and tie up another person, stuffing the mouth and quietly thrown into the pond, shouldn't have been done by a mere maid servant.

But why did the empress dowager want to harm Wang Zhao Yi? This is harder to understand, Wang Zhao Yi does not have a high rank, and also not very doted on, and have just only showed herself a little, not even possible to effect anyone. Ye Zhen Zhen couldn't think of an answer, and could only take it as that unlucky maid servant saw something that she shouldn't have.

No matter what, it is the end of the story, giving face to Ci Ning Palace, and able to close Ji Wu Jiu's mouth.

As for to reorganize the inner palace..... hehe.. you want me to reorganize, I will "properly" organize it for you.

Chapter 12

9th September, clear skies.

Early in the morning, Ji Wu Jiu lead a group of people and headed towards the 3 main army camp. If anyone woke up early today, they would have seen the emperor. Wearing a gold robe and shoes, riding on a pure white horse, with a treasure sword on his waist.

Although his attire gifts of the royalty feel, but it seems that the citizens like it very much, that's why there was a lot of ladies looked at him with gazes full of admiration, until the people standing next to them pulled their sleeves reminding them to greet the emperor. "Long Live the emperor"

The dragon embroidered robe and armor has long gave out Ji Wu Jiu's identity.

He was in a good mood, even if there was people gawking at him, he did not feel offended. Carefully guiding his horse, in order to avoid any casualties with the citizens. In front opening a path, and guarding at the back was all well trained guards, then there were also some hidden armies around protecting him, that is why even blind people would know his identity, but still he needs to be protected.

Until they finally left the city gates did he flew with his horse towards the destination.

When the emperor was busy meeting the army outside, Ye Zhen Zhen was not shaking her legs in the palace.

Actually, it was the busiest day since she has entered the palace.

Reorganizing the inner palace would be; anyone that will harm Kun Ning Palace, thinking of how to get rid of them; anyone that will hinder her rivals; thinking of how to make them stay; everyone needs to be properly placed and no longer taking any chances.

She has to make sure everyone is well placed so that not all will aim at her only, as well as creating some rumors that there are people that reported the news to the empress so she has no choice to take action, sending Xi Consort's people to

Li Concubine and sending people from Li Concubine to Xian Concubine.

Anyway, after this “reorganization” Kun Ning Palace’s servants was left with only half, the rest were outside kneeling waiting for the decision of Ye Zhen Zhen, there were all sorts of mistakes and faults that were placed on to them. As the head of the inner palace, Ye Zhen Zhen’s place is full of spies from everywhere, this she knew right from the first day she entered this place. Those that were chased out however, she is also not 100% sure that they are spies, but anyone that she suspects even a little, will be best if they were kicked out. There are also some that were brought here from other palaces, all are those that acts snobbishly and creates trouble making people dislike them, therefore a lot of people agreed to her punishing them. This also counts as her pleasing the mass.

Today, would be the biggest palace punishment given in the hundreds of years of the Da Qi Empire.

Outside Kun Ning Palace, a floor full of kneeling servants, the atmosphere was really tense. A lot of people came to watch as well, there was eunuchs as well maid servants and also some concubines and consorts, but not daring to stand to near, afraid of getting the bad luck.

Wang You Cai was holding a list of names checking with the kneeling people there, and when he called their names, the person will reply “I admit my mistake”. All of them was kneeling in a very neat formation, almost like the army’s formation at the army camp. The last one to be called is Fan Chun, she was kneeling in front of the rest, almost like the leader amongst them.

After all the names have been called out, the punishment starts.

The punishment is separated into 3 stages, 20 hits, 40 hits and 60 hits. (The olden days punishment hitting the back with wooden logs) First the 20 hits, then the 40 hits receivers are made to get ready. Listening to the rest getting hit, those that were watching, some were afraid, looked away and even closed their ears, and was thinking why did they even come here in the first place.

As for those waiting for their turn, they took it even worst, most of them was in cold sweat, some were crying some screaming, some even wet their pants.

After 20 hits, most people will be left without energy to scream anymore, after this group of people are brought away, then it was the next group’s turn.

After the 40 hits turn finish it was the last groups turn, 60 hits, and only Fan Chun one person.

The mental torture she received from the earlier groups, made Fan Chun faint, but after 1 hit, she woke up again and screamed.

“Stop it, all stop it”

Li Concubine rushed over, Wang You Cai gestured, and 2 strong eunuch stopped her.

“Daring to ask your majesty, what did Fan Chun did wrong?”

“A! A! A!”

Ye Zhen Zhen smiled and reply in the midst of Fan Chun’s screams “A consort’s miscarriage case, Wu Zhao Yi poisoned case, Xi Consort’s palace arson case, Hui Consort falling in to the water case, all are related to her!” Ye Zhen Zhen just said a few. Actually she didn’t investigate this cases thoroughly, but thinking that Li Concubine aren’t really afraid of anything in the palace, anything bad that happen most of the time can’t not be related to her. Not to mention, even if you are not involve, I just wanted to put salt to your wounds.

“Xi Consort’s palace fire was not done by her!”

“Does that mean the rest of it is true?”

“.....”

“Li Concubine, I am fine.....A....!!!!”

“You... are framing her!” Li Concubine said struggling, eyes nearly popping out with anger.

Ye Zhen Zhen smiled “You dare to speak to me with this manner!, Su Feng, slap”

“Yes”, Su Feng walked towards her, bringing up her hands, Li Concubine laughed coldly “ You Dare?”

Su Feng is still only a maid servant, her hand stopped in midair, contemplating to continue or not.

“She don’t dare, I dare!” Ye Zhen Zhen walked towards her, raised her hand

and slapped. The slap's sound was covered by Fan Chun's scream, so there was no dramatic effect, but Li Concubine's face was starting to swell, and 5 fingerprints was forming.

"If you dare, try to hit me one more time!"

"Alright" Another slap was given.

A lot of people saw Ye Zhen Zhen slapped Li Concubine twice, most of them feel better.

"You, You, You,.. Very good, wait for the emperor to come back, after he comes back...."

"The emperor will be returning shortly" Ye Zhen Zhen waved her hand "Li Concubine is not feeling well, someone please send her back to Lu Hua Palace".

After Li Concubine is sent back, Ye Zhen Zhen turned and faced Fan Chun "Just now the 2 slaps for your master was because of you, I will deduct 20 hits for you". IF she really get hit 60 times, it might take her life, Ye Zhen Zhen still need this person to help advise Li Concubine, still does not need her to die.

After the punishment was over, Fan Chun got carried back to Lu Hua Palace, and the people see that it is over they also left. Ye Zhen Zhen returned into her palace drank some tea to rest, and also ordered Wang You Cai to bring over the new eunuch that just entered the palace she wants to personally choose some new ones.

"Niang Niang" Su Feng suddenly kneeled and looked sad.

"What's the matter?" Ye Zhen Zhen asked placing her cup down and asked.

"I am useless", Su Feng thought about her actions just now, that she got scared by Li Concubine and did not hit her.

"Stand up, you did not do anything wrong, I didn't think properly, if you really hit her, she will definitely hate you, next time she will definitely revenge, what happened to Su Yue, I don't want it to happen to you as well." After what she said, both Su Yue and Su Feng looked at her touched.

Su Yue suddenly thought of another thing and frowned "Niang Niang, today you slapped Li Concubine, really made alot of people happy, and making it to

such a big fuss, if Li Concubine were to report it to the emperor...”

Ye Zhen Zhen replied bravely “she will confirm report to him, but i dare say he confirm would not help her do anything”

Ji Wu Jiu this person, she does not dare to say she understands him fully, but can guess his temperament. He can punish Ye Zhen Zhen with alot of reasons, but definitely would not include this type of things. To dote on concubine is one thing, facing the ministers is another thing. Li Concubine was rude to the empress in public, shouting and not minding her usage of words, therefore is the one at fault and to be punished by the empress, there is truly nothing wrong. If the emperor were to reprimand the empress because of a few cries from Li Concubine, then the emperor would be facing a title of “lusting towards woman and ignoring the country”, a whole bunch of ministers is still waiting for him.

That is why today Ye Zhen Zhen dared to embarass Li Concubine in public. Although the method was a bit simple and crude, but it feels awesome!

When Ji Wu Jiu returned from the army camp, he felt that the palace felt abit different from normal, it seems like some people are weak and floaty.?

Not understanding why, changed his clothes and wanted to take a scroll in the palace, but saw Li Concubine coming over while crying.

Accordingly, today the empress did such a big act, the people that wants to report should be many, but all also knew that Li Concubine got embarrassed by the empress as well as the 2 slaps, thinking that they did not receive any worst than her, they just thought of standing back and wait to see the tattle tale from Li Concubine. She also, not bothered to think how others think, her palace both masters and servants also got hit, and by the person who is the not doted empress, she can’ stand it anymore. Once she heard that the emperor is back, she immediately rushed over.

Ji Wu Jiu listened to Li Concubine’s report, consoled a few sentences and asked her to return to her palace. Then asked Feng You De to investigate what really happened.

Feng You De returned quickly, bringing a few witness with him, to report what

happened today to Ji Wu Jiu in detail about what Ye Zhen Zhen did, including who got changed from which palace to another, punished who, and what Li Concubine said to get slapped, etc etc..

Hearing it Ji Wu Jiu thought that Ye Zhen Zhen's punishment was for those that could not be trusted, or arrogant normally, it was hard on her to find so many people, to create such a big show, looks like his orders to "reorganize the inner palace" tasks has been completed by her.

That woman is clever, although she created such a big fuss, in actual she didnt really offend that many people.

But.. Ji Wu Jiu suddenly realised and asked "What about the 3 eunuchs i placed in Kun Ning Palace?"

Feng You De answered " There was 2 that got 20 hits and sent to other place, and the other....

"So..?"

"the other one, because he looks too ugly according to Ye Zhen Zhen and since she didnt want to see him often, he was sent to guard the doors outside her palace and also to order the eunuch if the empress were to make any mistake, he must immediately report to the emperor".

Chapter 13

When Ji Wu Jiu reached Lu Hua Palace, he saw Li Concubine still crying, both eyes swollen red, her pretty face also lost colour. He felt his heart soften.

“Your majesty”, While wiping her tears she said softly. Most probably because she cried too long, she voice sounded abit hoarse already.

She is still his woman, so he didn’t want to be too harsh. He sat down, and allowed Li Concubine to climb into his bosom, a delicate body is now laying gently on him.

“Your majesty, you must help me!, Li Concubine stated clearly. Although he does not like Ye Zhen Zhen, but if the empress wants to punish a servant she really does not need Li Concubine’s permission.

Futhermore as a concubine, she also fight back against the empress in public.

Originally, he thought Li Concubine was a clever girl who knows how to take care of his heart and listens well, she is pretty too, so he doted on her a little more, but who knew she would be like this now, losing her temper and not following the rules, really not presentable.

With these thoughts in mind, he slowly push away the woman in his arms.

Also, towards why Ye Zhen Zhen want to punish Fan Chun, Ji Wu Jiu knew as well. That is why when he see Li Concubine now, the feel is not as good as before, Ye Zhen Zhen is the empress, in the palace the only person that can bully her is only Ji Wu Jiu, who is Li Concubine.

Li Concubine felt that the emperor’s reaction was abit weird, she looked at him with teary eyes, “Your ma.. majesty..”

“Looks like you still didn’t realise your mistakes” Ji Wu Jiu said, “then you are grounded in your palace for 2 months, please reflect”

What happened in Lu Hua Palace was spread throughout the palace in a day, most people changed their opinion about Ye Zhen Zhen and respected her more.

Initially they thought that there will be a war between Ye Zhen Zhen and Li Concubine, but who knew it was just one side that was strong. Thinking that Li Concubine got hit, and that she was once the most arrogant one amongst consorts, who knew that today she would be under the reign of the undoted empress.

The empress really has her ways. A lot of people are counting themselves lucky for not offending her last time, and those that got punished who wanted to report to the emperor, all stopped as they have seen what happened to Li Concubine.

Even with many people now respecting her, the empress is not too happy “Will being grounded be too serious? I have already punished her” The most important part is if Li Concubine is no longer in the picture, then who will help her go against Xian Concubine?”

Ji Wu Jiu was sitting at the desk playing with a globe, this Kun Ning Palace really have a lot of interesting things to play, “where did this thing came from?” Ye Zhen Zhen’s inner thoughts he would know very well, because he understood that’s why he would not let her get it.

“A western merchant gift it to me, he also gift many other types of play things, I wanted to send to you, but it got stopped by the ministry of household affairs, so I let them choose a few, treating them like it was something I bought”

“Why did it get stopped?” Ji Wu Jiu asked while playing with the round globe, making it spin around. On in there was the maps of his country and some others that he knew, but also some that he was not familiar with.

“I think it was because the merchant said something that didn’t make sense so they didn’t let him register”

Though the merchant was stopped, but the item still reached the empress, and also went into his view, what motive did the merchant have? What motive did the empress have as well for doing so?

As the emperor, it is unavoidable that he thinks too much, Ji Wu Jiu looked at Ye Zhen Zhen, “What do you think my empress?”

“I think it is very fun” Ye Zhen Zhen replied honestly, and walked towards the

globe “that person said the earth is round, there are a lot of square lands, that is similar to those under our feet, but there are also some covered by the ocean, the ministry people said that he was talking nonsense. Also that the western gods does not ride on clouds, but have wings instead, and the people over there don’t like to wear clothes”

“You think it is believable?”

“How would I know, I did not see it myself. But then again the world is big, since did not see it personally, I can say I don’t know, and naturally I wouldn’t know if it is real. Your majesty take a look at this” Ye Zhen Zhen said, and gave Ji Wu Jiu a stick like item.

That item is made from copper, both ends has a glass piece, Ji Wu Jiu does not know what was that, placing on his hands, it seems that it can be treated as a weapon.

Ye Zhen Zhen brought him to the window, and took the item and placed it at Ji Wu Jiu’s eyes. Because he was a bit tall, that’s why her shoulder’s are getting tired, and shivered abit. Ji Wu Jiu just held her hand and closed in, and held the single binocular.

Ye Zhen Zhen “.....:

Ji Wu Jiu looked to the side and saw her serious face, and slowly curved up his lips a little.

“Your majesty, what did you see?”

Ji Wu Jiu squinted his eyes, and tried to see through the glass, and saw through the item, this item can actually allow him to see further things nearer, very clear.

In his view, there was an eunuch he never see before walking towards Kun NIng palace’s back hall, looking back and front, and shook his sleeves a little, then left with his head down.

His actions were very small, if from far it would not have looked suspicious.

Ji Wu Jiu moved his eyes and stopped at Ye Zhen Zhen.

Ye Zhen Zhen didn’t understand and asked “ whats there?” She took the binoculars and looked carefully, but couldn’t see anything.

“Let’s go out and see” Ji Wu Jiu said, stopped abit and added “Feng You De, call the imperial doctor”

Kun Ning Palace’s back garden was not big, the flowers and grass was fluttering with the wind, but Ye Zhen Zhen normally sit here to sun bath. The clear autumn afternoons, with a big day bed, laying on it to look at the blue sky making one feel to be able to fly in the sky, but always stops at the start of a flying gesture, as the calmness and wind will bring you to sleep deeply.

Kun Ning Palace is located in the middle of the inner palace, left and right are palaces for the other consorts, front is Gan Qing Palace and back is the imperial garden, although there are special walkways outside her walls, but because of convenience, there are people crossing the gardens of Kun Ning Palace as well. Therefore, although inside her palace is guarded strictly, there are still people that can pass through outside, and it could be anyone.

Today, Ye Zhen Zhen was standing in front of the garden, and saw Ji Wu Jiu walking towards somewhere, and the imperial doctor went to dig out some soil, and brought to smell at his nose, and used his nails to get some and placed on to his tongue.

“Your majesty, in the soil someone placed a slow effect poison, if smelled frequently will make someone weak and easy to fall ill, and also...”

“And what??”

“Unable to be pregnant”

Ji Wu Jiu paled.

Ye Zhen Zhen got shocked as well “Will it kill?”

“Er.. if always in the long term.. “ the doctor was trying his best to reply.

Ye Zhen Zhen did not wait for his reply and placed her hands out “Fast, help me check!”

Got really scared eh~! Ji Wu Jiu thought in his heart.

The Ye Zhen Zhen who is afraid to die finally got diagnose by the doctor as nothing wrong, it looks like this poison was only placed not too long ago. Ye Zhen Zhen finally felt relieve, tomorrow she will get people to dig up the entire garden,

and change all the soil.

“Thank you your majesty” Ye Zhen Zhen said sincerely, because he could have not told her at all.

“If you want to create chaos in the inner palace, you must first protect your life” Ji Wu Jiu knocked her head alittle and left.

Now Ye Zhen Zhen got a bit confused. Ji Wu Jiu and her have never been on good terms, both of them understood this very well, but why today he helped her? He could have just been an observer, it was a slow poison anyway, there should be nothing wrong in the mean time, and wont die so fast. Furthermore, what if she died, wouldn't he feel its more appropriate?

Then again, they are a married couple, and if she died and he clapping happily, Ye Zhen Zhen felt it would be too obnoxious.

However, Ji Wu Jiu was thinking differently; What ever happens between him and Ye Zhen Zhen are their business, other people does not need to bother. First it was Li Concubine thinking that she was doted on tried to embarrass the empress, then now someone tried to harm her quietly, this inner palace really has skillful people with all sorts of tricks, once they know Ye Zhen Zhen is not doted on, they all want to step on her as well, they really forgot who is the actual master of the palace.

Clever people hates other people trying to act clever and play tricks in front of them, therefore in the eyes of Ji Wu Jiu, so comparing with these people Ye Zhen Zhen who always does think proudly and with such a straightforward manner, it appears that it is quite cute.

Realizing that he placed the word “cute” together with Ye Zhen Zhen made him feel a bit uncomfortable.

So all the way from Kun Ning Palace, his emotion changed a few times, although most people would not be able to detect, but Feng You De has followed him for many years, so he could feel that there was some conflict in the emperor's mind.

“Feng You De” Ji Wu Jiu called after returning to his chamber

“Yes your majesty”

“Find me an eunuch, could be a maid servant dressed up as one too, his right hand has a birth mark. After you found out, no need to let anyone know, no need to bring him here, you only need to tell me which palace he is from”

“I understand”

“Also send someone to ministry of household, I want to meet the western merchant”

“Yes your majesty”

Chapter 14

Ji Wu Jiu met up with the western merchant Matthew at Wu Ying Hall, and did not invite Ye Zhen Zhen, but she put on a thick face and went.

Wu Ying Hall is in the front of the palace, the place where the emperor works, normally woman are not allowed to enter, except for Ye Zhen Zhen.

That is because Da Qi was founded by a female emperor, so the term “woman cannot interfere with court matters” can’t really be used. Furthermore this dynasty has a history of formidable empress that helped overlook the court matters.

But if all the ladies from the inner palace also wants to add in their opinions in the court matters, it would be troublesome as well, so someone clever thought of a plan. The empress as the mother of the country, would be allowed to participate in the matters related to the country, and can be considered to help the emperor to relieve some burden, as for the rest of the woman in the inner palace, they should do what they normally do that’s all.

So the empress’s status in the palace is a bit complicated, she is the head of the inner palace, leading the rest of the other woman, and she can also enter the front palace, and help give advice with matters related to the country with the request of the emperor.

Actually, besides those woman that has a hidden agenda they would not really be interested in the court matters. So all these years the rule of only allowing the empress to enter did not really face any problems from the court ladies.

Today, Ye Zhen Zhen held down her dislike of Ji Wu Jiu and still went to Wu Ying Hall.

Matthew is a tall, ginger haired, blue eyes, pale skin, big built and with an eerie feel surrounding him. These years, following the grow of Da Qi, and opening of the ports allowed many types of merchant to enter. Ji Wu Jiu and Ye Zhen Zhen had so far only heard about them, this would be their first time meeting one.

As a smart merchant, Matthew properly learnt how to greet the emperor

according to the rules and regulations. He knew that it is a very rare opportunity, at this mysterious and big eastern country, he is going to be the first European to meet the leader of the country. It seems that he could see shimmering gold ingots on his hand soon, as well as the boot licking that will come from the nobles soon. Normally those people would only be polite when they want something new from him.

Ha! Ha! Ha!

This type of thoughts, it made him happy for just thinking about it.

That was why when Ji Wu Jiu thought Matthew will be the same as the stories he heard about westerners where they are arrogant and does not bow to others was shocked when he actually kneeled down and paid his greetings “Greetings to your majesty, may you live tens of thousands of years”

Ji Wu Jiu “.....”

The person kneeling on the floor with the ginger hair, was doing it with the right posture.

“You may stand, sit”

Then, outside came a loud announcement “The empress has arrived” the moment the announcement ended, a woman dressed in the full formal attire entered. Matthew suddenly remembered someone told him “You must not stare at the empress, and you must not kiss her hands! Let’s put it this way, if you even touched a corner of her dress, the emperor will definitely cut off your head”

Therefore, even before Matthew can sit down properly he quickly got up, bowed towards the empress and greeted her “Your majesty, may you live a thousand years”. His eyes saw her robes and shoes, the intricate and detailed design of them made him can’t help but to admire them, agreeing that she is the highest ranked woman in this country.

Ye Zhen Zhen first greeted the emperor, then after only looked at the merchant “Stand up, have a sit and talk”

Ji Wu Jiu did not feel bitter towards Ye Zhen Zhen who came without invitation. Both of them were chatting with Matthew, asking this and that, and

he would answer, the atmosphere was quite good.

Ji Wu Jiu also asked about Matthew's home country's cultures. So he replied what ever he could. But truth to be told, Europe in front of the strong countries really didn't have much to tell, especially in front of this long historical place. Though some scientific invention would be the plus points, but presenting them here would just be some sort of show. Ji Wu Jiu was only so so with what he heard but Ye Zhen Zhen was very much interested, she also asked about their sea expedition journeys, as well as fight between the few countries in Europe for the ocean territory. The European country's history is rather complicated and involves a lot of war, so no matter how well they describe it, smart people would definitely catch the bloody history involved.

Ji Wu Jiu is the smartest amongst the smart people, that is why he find that something is not right: These people are very brave and cruel, their sea army seems to be very strong, and if one day our prosperous country has been chosen by them... Ji Wu Jiu closed his eyes..

So the emperor also joined in the discussion, the atmosphere getting heated up.

After Matthew left, Ji Wu Jiu looked at Ye Zhen Zhen calmly "You are very clever"

"Thank you for the compliments your majesty", I already told you many times I am super clever.

No, not only clever. Ye Zhen Zhen's specialty lies on her not locking herself in a fixed square only, but being all over the place, thinking about everything. The Da Qi dynasty's people normally follow rules and thinks about, family, country and world problems but who knew the way of thinking should be to open up to everything. As a head of a country, one must be open minded as well, there are still good things that we can learn from another that may seem worst then us. Even if they were barbarians, there are also things that we can learn from them.

"Your Majesty" Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly said breaking his line of thoughts.

"hmm?" Ji Wu Jiu turned and looked at Ye Zhen Zhen.

"I heard in a few days you will be going to hunt?" Ye Zhen Zhen said with

glittering eyes and a sweet smile “I also admired your majesty’s martial skill, I really want to see with my own eyes how your majesty ride the horse and pull the bow at the same time”

“Such a rarity to hear compliments from the empress’s mouth” Ji Wu Jiu replied. He knew what Ye Zhen Zhen is thinking, but purposely didn’t say anything about it.

Bei Yan is around a hundred miles from the capital, under the Yan Mountain. There are many mineral stones there, and the ground are quite even, the royal family marked out a piece of land, to let people raise some deer, rabbit and all. During autumn, the emperor will bring along some ministers to hunt there. Taking the lesson from the previous dynasty that placed martial skills aside, this dynasty takes martial skills seriously all the man from royal families takes pride in being good in both literature and martial arts. Every year this time, it would be the opportunity for the royal family males to show off their skills in front of the emperor.

Ye Zhen Zhen before getting married, her brothers will also bring back some souvenirs home, she always wanted to experience it a little, but never had the chance, the people at home was always afraid she would get hurt.

Looking at Ye Zhen Zhen’s face full of anticipation, Ji Wu Jiu said “I want to test you first, if you answered them right, I will bring you along”

“What type of test?”

“Now the season for farming is over, the court wants to ask the farmers to fix the Yellow River. I plan to ask the workers to build a dam, and to make a water reservoir, that can help stop flood and to have water for drought. What do you think?”

Ye Zhen Zhen agreed “this is a good idea, you are very wise”

“En, “ Ji Wu Jiu nodded, “but this is a very big construction, and there is no one in charge yet, who do you think should this person be?”

“...” The answer cannot be simply replied, especially when Ye Zhen Zhen’s second brother works in that department. After thinking, she replied, “this... I am not sure of the people there, how can I give my opinion, your majesty you are

clever, you would definitely find someone suitable”

“Couldn’t answer?” Ji Wu Jiu asked.

“No.. your majesty, why not you change a question?”

“Fine, this construction will require a lot of money, but there are other places that will require food rations as well, empress, what do you think we should do in order to make sure the money and rations will not thin down along the line?”

To handle corruption matters, this matter cannot be cleared of properly, from last time countless capable ministers are also troubled with this matter. Ye Zhen Zhen think a little longer and said “ Why don’t we take a more drastic measure?”

“O? how so?”

“Don’t need to support the funds from here, hold the money at our finance department first. The construction can be done by the people nearby there, and let the state people there take care of it themselves. Those who participate in the building of the water reservoir, the whole family will be free from tax for 2 years according to the numbers in the family, it can be reduced or increased. Wait until the next year, when they collect tax, the local tax government just have to minus out the tax money from their accounts and the finance department will only need to note down and do the accounting. The farmers after autumn harvest until the next year spring, will have some free time in the middle, since nothing to do they will also just be loitering around, there should be many people that takes the initiative to take this job. With many people joining, the work progress will speed up, perhaps by next year summer the work would be completed already”

Ji Wu Jiu was tapping the table lightly, without a clear expression.

“O, right, if nearby there are army camps, and if they have nothing to do, they can go work too, just to take it as an exercise for health”

Ji Wu Jiu suddenly nodded, smiling at Ye Zhen Zhen “this is good”

Ye Zhen Zhen got surprised, according to her experience Ji Wu Jiu is not a person who likes to smile, once he smiles nothing good will happen. She does not feel too good, “I just said it simply, your majesty does not need to take it too serious as well”

“No, you answered very well” he stood up “Let’s go, accompany me to visit the empress dowager at Ci Ning Palace”

I just saw her this morning... Ye Zhen Zhen thought unwillingly.

At Ci Ning Palace, the empress dowager are seldom able to see the emperor and the empress coming together, and Ji Wu Jiu even seems to be in a good mood. She doesn’t feel good about this, but on her face you wouldn’t be able to tell, and when facing Ji Wu Jiu, she smiled like a blossoming flower.

“It was hard on you to visit me even if you were busy with work”

“What are you saying mother, looking at you all healthy makes me able to do my work better”

This two person starts to perform the loving act between a mother and son.

Ye Zhen Zhen was starting to get bored, looking at them caring for one another, but not saying a thing. She knew that it will be hard for the empress dowager to like her due to where she came from, so in the end she don’t even want to waste her energy to make the empress dowager like her.

“This was given to me by Xian Concubine few days back, this praying beads, look at it in detail, it also has a nice faint smell, while I pray it almost seems like I can see the Buddha. She really is thoughtful.” The empress dowager starts to say, praising the praying beads but not forgetting to bring up Xian Concubine together.

“As long as you like it” Ji Wu Jiu always never take the Buddha chants/prayers seriously, but because the empress dowager is his real mother, he also won’t say anything rude.

“Xian Concubine is really likeable... are you both doing well?”

In Ye Zhen Zhen’s heart she was thinking, in front of the empress you are saying things like that, what cunning plans are you thinking about your majesty.

“I have not seen her these few days” Ji Wu Jiu answered honestly.

The empress dowager let out a big sigh.

Ji Wu Jiu added “mother, the matters in the inner palace, I will know what to do, other things are also properly done by the empress, you don’t need to

worry”

Ye Zhen Zhen raised her ears, why does she feel Ji Wu Jiu is implying something else?

Looking unhappy the empress dowager replied “ You are my child, how can I not worry?”

“To let you worry, I feel bad. But the empress needs to do what she has to do since she holds the title, and not letting her hide behind you and be lazy” Ji Wu Jiu said while taking a look at Ye Zhen Zhen.

Ye Zhen Zhen upon receiving the glance from Ji Wu Jiu, “Yes, mother you don’t have to worry ,if you worry too much you will make me feel terrified”

Only some will understand what is implies, the empress dowager after listening to Ye Zhen Zhen almost couldn’t control her facial expression anymore.

Ji Wu Jiu felt surprise, don’t tell me she found out?

Then they continued some small talk, then Ji Wu Jiu brought Ye Zhen Zhen leave with him. When they leave he asked the empress dowager for a person, a not eye catching eunuch.

Ye Zhen Zhen couldn’t guess why, thinking maybe that eunuch angered Ji Wu Jiu, looks like the little eunuch will receive some bad luck.

The moment he reached Gan Qing Palace, Ji Wu Jiu ordered one eunuch to be flogged to death.

Tsk tsk.. so cruel.. Ye Zhen Zhen thought after hearing about this.

Note: Aww, she doesn’t know he killed the eunuch for her... hehe..

Chapter 15

Ever since Li Concubine got grounded, Ye Zhen Zhen couldn't see her and Xi Consort bickering, so she has less entertainment.

Seeing that the empress is stronger than Li Concubine, and that there is Xian Concubine that is doted as well, most people thought that Li Concubine will no longer be able to make a come back. There was an obvious power shift that divided the people in the inner palace to 2 sides, the empress or Xian Concubine.

Today, Ye Zhen Zhen was walking around the inner palace, wanting to look for an open place to train her archery skills. When passing by Han Guang Palace, she looked up, admiring the work of the name board. Hundred of years ago, there was an emperor, that has very good hand writing skills, and decided to write the name boards of each palace in the inner palace. The name board in front of her now, is really admirable, Ye Zhen Zhen nodded with agreement while looking at the board.

Outside Han Guang Palace, there was an eunuch that saw Ye Zhen Zhen, perhaps he was too nervous that is why instead of greeting the empress he went "The empress has arrived"

Zhuang Concubine heard and quickly rushed out, and greeting her along with her servants.

Ye Zhen Zhen "...". I really was just passing by only.

But now, she has no choice but to drop in Han Guang Palace and to sit for a while. Zhuang Concubine immediately brought up some pastries, Ye Zhen Zhen took a bite, it was quite good.

"This pastry is made from this year's Gui Hua, I am not very skilled, am not sure if the empress will like it."

Ye Zhen Zhen a little surprised ask "you made it?"

Zhuang Concubine nodded 'I made it personally'

"Very good"

“Thank you for the praises your majesty, but it was thanks to the flower’s freshness” Actually this pastry was made for Ji Wu Jiu, it is not hard to make, but just takes up a lot of time and effort. That is why since the flower has been plucked in august, she could only produce one small plate in this one month plus. Ji Wu Jiu has never praised her handwork, but she knew he liked to eat it, and every year he will also finish the pastries she sent to him.

Ye Zhen Zhen got happier after eating something good, so she started to chat with Zhuang Concubine. Zhuang Concubine got shocked, as one should know that the empress is not a tiger made from paper, and normally she is not closed with anyone, today she purposely came to my palace, perhaps.....

“I heard previously Li Concubine angered you, making you shocked, are you feeling better now?” Zhuang Concubine suddenly brought up another topic.

“Thanks to your concern, I am good”. What do you mean you heard, you saw it yourself.. Ye Zhen Zhen thought.

Sighing Zhuang Concubine added “Li Concubine is very temperamental, these years I have told her before, but she never listens. After you have arrived and stabilized the inner palace, she is already considered to be in more control. You need to know last time, she was worst then now.”

Ye Zhen Zhen did not reply while chewing her pastry. She knew Zhuang Concubine is using Li Concubine’s history to surrender to her. As long as she ask, Zhuang Concubine will surely tell all the shocking bad history of Li Concubine, that might even make Li Concubine to never make a comeback.

Ye Zhen Zhen knew from the start that Zhuang Concubine will be like this. A concubine that did not come from a powerful family, and not really doted on, and only wanted to live a bit more comfortable in this inner palace, a powerful back up would be required.

Under the expectant eyes of Zhuang Concubine, Ye Zhen Zhen slowly said “Your pastries is very good, please give me the rest of them as well”

In order to survive in the inner palace, it is normal to look for allies, but if one to accept just anyone, then there is a chance that the allies would be the one that will bring you down. Li Concubine just got punished, Zhuang Concubine is already in a hurry to change sides, it shows that this person’s loyalty is very

limited. Also Ye Zhen Zhen haven't find out much about her strengths.

Besides Zhuang Concubine, those who wants to get Ye Zhen Zhen's attention are many.

Ye Zhen Zhen know that if she were to gather people to side her in open, then Ji Wu Jiu will dislike her even more, and won't only find small troubles for her. Also personally she does not want to be involved in the fights in the inner palace. The reason they fight is solely to gain power and doting. As for power she does not need to fight for it already, as for the emperor's love, she doesn't even want it, therefore as long as the small wives does not bring her any trouble she will be happily watch the show from afar.

So Ye Zhen Zhen has always treated those people that wants to ally with her coldly.

"Niang Niang, the empress seems to be doing nothing, after punishing Li Concubine." Qiu Feng asked while holding a cup of tea for Xian Concubine.

"She is the empress, of course she can do nothing, and only react when there is something" Xian Concubine said, frowned and shook her head. If Ye Zhen Zhen does not take the initiative to act, then she also shouldn't be proactive as well. Ji Wu Jiu likes woman that is obedient"

"Even so, you are still important in the emperor's heart. Yesterday he already sent someone to ask if you would want to go see the hunt" The emperor, will think of you no matter what he does" Qiu Feng said with a sweet mouth.

So what, the emperor flipped the name plate of Wen Jie Yu, thought Xian Concubine. Ji Wu Jiu, this person can sometimes be romantic and sweet, sometimes can be cold as ice, she no longer knows how to make him happy.

Of course Qiu Feng would know what Xian Concubine is thinking, so she consoled "daring to advice you, you don't have to think too much. Even the common people has a few wives, furthermore he is the emperor. It is not possible for him to only dote on one person, as long as in his heart you are there, thinks about you, and helps you if anything happens, then it is enough"

Xian Concubine nodded, but still let out a sigh.

If the two main power in the inner palace is not doing anything, the rest of the people also feel helpless and can't act as well.

Ye Zhen Zhen finally found a nice place to train her archery skills; Beside Jing Yun Gate, there is an empty land in between Qian Zhao San Hall and the Eastern Palace of the crown prince, it is vast and long, not to mention archery training, it can be used for horse riding as well. This part belongs to the front palace, so people from the inner palace cannot come here; also the Eastern palace is vacant now, Jing Yun gate is also a closed gate, rank 2 and below ministers are not even allowed to come close, that is why this place has very little people passing by, the perfect place for her.

Ye Zhen Zhen made Wang You Cai stand far from her, she pulled her bow, and aimed. The arrow flew out and stopped at Wang You Cai's hat. Wang You Cai's whole body was shaking.

Su Yue and the rest was clapping and cheering at the back.

After that Ye Zhen Zhen thought it was fun enough, so she let the eunuchs from Kun Ning Palace to stand in a row, she took 3 arrows and let them out at the same time, 3 of the eunuch's hat also got hit by the arrow.

Another wave of cheering and clapping can be heard.

Inside Eastern Palace, side hall.

Ji Wu Jiu walked around the hall, and stopped in front of a drawing. In the drawing there is a girl wearing a red cape standing in the middle of a snow path. In her hand there is a white vase, and in this vase there was a blooming plum blossom. The girl in the picture smiling towards the person beyond the drawing.

While in deep thoughts about the drawing, Ji Wu Jiu suddenly heard from outside loud noises.

"Who is outside?"

"Your majesty, the empress is training her archery skills"

Daring to make a fuss in this place, there could only be that woman. Ji Wu Jiu shook his head.

"Your majesty, should I go stop them?"

“No need, it is normally quiet here, it is good to add some noises too” Ji Wu Jiu said and sat down. Although there is no one that stays here, but there are people cleaning it everyday so it is clean. Thinking back about the 10 years that he stayed here, it was still very clear and he could remember each part detail. That time he was also very busy, everyday he was at Wen Hua Hall learning about the court matters, or listening to Ye Xiu Ming that old fart’s lecture. The hatred he have for Ye Xiu Ming started then, no matter who it is, if to be scolded by that old fart everyday, will also start to have negative feelings towards that person.

It is such a pity, Ye Zhen Zhen had to be that person’s granddaughter.

It seems that Ji Wu Jiu’s thought has floated quite far. After a while, voices can be heard from outside.

“This is where the emperor used to stay” This is Ye Zhen Zhen’s voice.

“When the emperor was a crown prince he stayed at Duan Jing Hall, this place is the side hall, it is one of the place where the servants may live. Li Concubine and Xi Consort also stayed here before”

Ye Zhen Zhen held her bow and arrow to the side, Wang You Cai immediately take it from her. She walked towards the side hall, and looked at the words on the name board, it is not from that emperor years ago, it looks like Ji Wu Jiu’s handwriting instead.

Ji Wu Jiu raised his hand to stopped Feng You De that was going to go out. He sat in front of the window, and looked at Ye Zhen Zhen silently. Her hair was tied up in a simple bun, making her look fresh, her clothes were tightly fitting her, showing her figure, very enticing. She just exercised, so her breath was still not very stable, and has natural blush on her face, and with small sweat droplets forming on her forehead, with a pair of very big and clear eyes, looking at the name board lost in thoughts.

“Empress, you stared at it for so long, you don’t know the words?” Ji Wu Jiu asked from the window, mischievously.

Ye Zhen Zhen then only realized he was there. The afternoon sun was shining into the window, shining on to his face, taking off the serious face he has normally, making him look gentle and easy to approach. Almost like a person picking flowers that came from a drawing.

Looking at Ji Wu Jiu, Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly smiled, and thought that he was just a flower picker (to imply that he have a lot of woman). “it seems to fit the occasion...”

Ji Wu Jiu is unsure why, but he felt that he just got flirted with...

Note: Oh my, the words are getting harder to translate... there are more and more words with no direct translation.. so i have to rephrase them to make them at least mean the same.. the best i can.. i hope it doesn't run to much.. but if one to read it in chinese, it would be much funnier or serious in certain parts.. sigh.. i am not up to par yet.. T_T

Chapter 16

September 19th, another day with good weather,

At dawn, the emperor and the ministers headed towards Bei Yan. The citizens in the capital have something to look at again. Ye Zhen Zhen, Xian Concubine, Xi Consort, Wen Jie Yu and Wang Zhao Yi also followed. Besides Ye Zhen Zhen the other woman can ride the horse only, but not able to even pull a bow, they only went to see.

The emperor's big and small wives each has a carriage, and the most luxurious one would be for Ye Zhen Zhen. Inside, Ye Zhen Zhen flipped open the curtain, to take a look outside, initially thinking that she will be able to see how normal citizens live day to day live, the hustle and bustle, but all she could see now was a floor of black hair facing them.

Lu Li passed by while riding a horse, when he turned back to take a look, his eyes matched with Ye Zhen Zhen, he quickly turn his gaze away, only showing his side profile to her. He gave her a slight smile and left.

Ye Zhen Zhen felt down while looking at him leave. As an empress now, he is her subject, the most intimate interactions that they can have would only be smiling from a far, though this would also be considered too much. Once they were studying together, training martial arts together but now, it could never be that way again.

The entourage of people begins travelling, there were a few elder ministers that want to proof that they are still capable of riding horses and refused to sit in carriages. Therefore this entourage could not speed up even if they want to, they only reached Bei Yan in the afternoons.

There was already an organized banquet here, under the emperor's instructions the prepared dishes are brought up, the emperor and the ministers need to first eat and drink before starting to hunt. Ye Zhen Zhen and Ji Wu Jiu sat together on the top, below them at both sides were the rest of the consorts, after that were the ministers. Ye Xiu Ming is a high ranked minister, so it is normal for him to be sitting in front of the other ministers, and Ye Zhen Zhen can

see him easily. Looking through the crowd again, she can still manage to find her father, as for her brothers, not sure where they are at..

Although only a glance, she is already happy. The reason why she followed Ji Wu Jiu out is not to hunt, but more to meet her family. After entering the palace, she realized how much she misses them, and how much her family has doted on her. Just not sure when she will be able to meet her mother and grandmother again.

After enough food and drinks, the hunt starts. Ji Wu Jiu did not rush to join the hunting group, but he sat at observation deck. Looking at the group of youngsters riding horses, they are all sons of royalty of ministers, all the families future, at this type of occasion they are all trying to compete against one another.

Some soldiers started the hunt by blowing some trumpets, the horses started to move towards the forest leaving a dusty air. Xian Concubine and the rest watched with shocked. The gentle woman, really did not see this type of occasion before.

Ji Wu Jiu brought Xian Concubine down the deck, Feng You De had already prepared two horses and waited for them, one is a red strong horse for Ji Wu Jiu, another is a white horse for Xian Concubine. She was wearing a sky blue outfit, pairing with this horse, she really looked like a fairy, very good to look at.

Ji Wu Jiu admired her for a while. Men, they will never think that their woman is too pretty.

Xian Concubine got embarrassed by his stare “Your Majesty, why are you not riding the horse yet?”

Ji Wu Jiu agreed and ride the horse in a swift movement. Both of them, one white horse, one red horse, they looked very good together, and very eye catching.

Ye Zhen Zhen was looking at them as well, to be more accurate she was looking at a flower on top of her head. In order to ride a horse, Xian Concubine had a simple hair style, and did not have decorations, but only used an ornament to hold down the hair and at the end used a small yellow flower, giving off a very cheerful and cute look. The flower was also chosen very carefully, the name is

called “Ling Ling Xiang”, another name would be “Xing Tou Xiang”, because if you were to wear it on your head, it can get rid of the sweaty smell of the body, used at this type of occasion is very matching, in case Ji Wu Jiu got tired from riding the horse, and want to be intimate.....

One must agree that Xian Concubine is very considerate.

But, she wouldn't have thought that, wearing a yellow outfit besides Ji Wu Jiu, there is a big hornet.

That is why Ye Zhen Zhen was staring at her head, that is because the flower on her head attracted a perverted hornet, circling around her buzzing. Trying to fly towards the flower.

Actually is the hornet was to be replaced by a butterfly, it would be a very nice picture.

Xian Concubine realized there was something buzzing, the moment she turned her face around — oh dear!

That is why following her natural instinct, the elegant fairy on the horse started to scream, also according to natural instinct she was waving her hands around. Ji Wu Jiu got shocked by her actions, while trying to console the shocked Xian Concubine, he was looking at her thinking why she is she making such a big fuss, wanting to know what is happening.

Suddenly, something flashed through, directly towards Xian Concubine, Ji Wu Jiu was too far from her and couldn't stop it, and when he see properly, Xian Concubine was already too shocked to move.

Her hair is already crooked, the little yellow flower is also missing, only the hair ornament is still there, on the hair ornament there was a small arrow, that passed through the hair ornament, and the hornet had a horrible death as he was turned into a skewer with the arrow going through his body.

Xian Concubine can only look at Ji Wu Jiu with tears that are going to fall.

Ye Zhen Zhen passed by with her horse leisurely, smiled “No need to thank me”. In a red outfit, on a white horse, but the horse is of course bigger than Xian Concubine's.

Xian Concubine finally got back her senses” Thank thank thank you... your majesty”

Ji Wu Jiu looked at Ye Zhen Zhen “ you brought Hidden Arrow?”

“Ha.. ha.. this... “ Ye Zhen Zhen regretted helping already. Hidden Arrow is a hidden weapon, besides the guards, other people that appears to be in the same place with the emperor are not allowed to carry around, if not that person would be treated as wanting to treason. Who made the emperor’s life the most important.

Under Ji Wu Jiu’s glare, Ye Zhen Zhen unwillingly throw the hidden arrow on the floor.

Still dare to be angry! Ji Wu Jiu’s lips moved up.

Ye Zhen Zhen changed her horse’s direction and move towards the forest. A few soldiers followed her on horse, they quickly disappeared into the forest far from Ji Wu Jiu’s sight.

Ji Wu Jiu’s gaze returned to Xian Concubine, his face has an impatient expression. Men, normally will be willing to dote on their woman, but it has to depend on the situation, now he wants to ride the horse and hunt, to do some manly things, and not stay her to be intimate with women.

Xian Concubine was very thoughtful “Your majesty, I got shocked earlier, not feeling too well, and want to return to rest first, I don’t think I can accompany you”

Ji Wu Jiu nodded “Alright, you go back first, Feng You De get the imperial doctor to have a good look at Xian Concubine” After that he left her there and went to hunt.

Xian Concubine see him leave, although it can’t really be seen but she seems disappointed.

Bei Yan’s hunting ground does not only include the forest, but a large area with different parts separated by a few different patches of woods. Because the hunting grounds is very big, so the hunters that enters the forest will naturally be

separated, to move on their own so that there would not be any cases where they all attack the same animal.

Furthermore those animals are just some rabbit and deers that are easily bullied, and they are raised by humans, a little stupid, when they see people they don't even know how to run, just staying there and waiting to be hunted.

But nearer to the mountains, there are some wilder animals here, like wolfs or wild dogs. Those that are a bit more courageous will head towards there, thinking that it is better to get a wolf than many rabbits.

Ye Zhen Zhen reached her as well, but not on purpose.

She lost her way.

The horse that she was riding is a very good one, fitting for an empress, and since Ye Zhen Zhen has not ride for a long time, she was riding too happily and lost her guards.

After passing through two grasslands and three forests paths, Ye Zhen Zhen found out that the trees are getting more thicker and does not look like human made. The thick forests cuts out a lot of sun making it dark and quiet. Ye Zhen Zhen shivered, and started to feel cold.

She looks around and did not find any animals around, and on the trees there aren't even a single bird.

The surrounding air seems to be moving, and the gentle horse starts to move about.

Ye Zhen Zhen held on to the reign, trying to calm the horse, so that he doesn't move too much. Looking around she saw something orange.

"A wu—" A low but scary roar can be heard, it seems like even the earth is shaking. Ye Zhen Zhen finally understood why there are no other animals near here. A roar will make all the animals run away!

This is the tiger's territory!

The horse beneath her has started to lose it, and started running, this type of horse can easily make

rider drop to death. Ye Zhen Zhen did not have time to think much and acted

on instinct, taking out her whip and used it to grab on to a branch and got down from the horse.

The running horse alerted the tiger, and he found Ye Zhen Zhen very quickly.

Ye Zhen Zhen “.....” Should have gotten down from the horse a little later, just now she acted too fast without thinking.

To exchange glances with the tiger is really stressful, her hands are full of sweat. Taking a deep breath forcing herself to calm down, and tried to count the weapons she have on her body, bow and arrow, knife, whip, gun... these should help increase her chances?

To be honest although Ye Zhen Zhen was happy with going to hunt, but before this the most ferocious thing that she hunted before is the hornet on Xian Concubine’s hair. That is why now to face the king of the jungle, although she is brave, she got scared as well.

What if I Run?

Can I out run a tiger.....

.....climb tree?

What if while climbing the tiger caught up and bite of her butt....

After thinking for a while, Ye Zhen Zhen decided to be the hunter. She first prepared the gun, and placed it by her feet for standby, then taking out her arrow and aimed—

Although out side the Eastern palace where she trained she was very skillful, but that was a non-moving target, the little eunuch will not move even if they peed their pants. But now it is different, the opponent is a tiger, a very flexible and ability to avoid, and would definitely not stay in a place and await the arrow.

The arrow misses the tiger, actually her skills was not too bad, but the tiger really is lucky.

Another roar came, and he started to run towards Ye Zhen Zhen.

It getting nearer and nearer, the arrow can’t be used anymore. Ye Zhen Zhen threw it away and took the gun. Aiming at the tiger and shoot.

This time the tiger tried to avoid but didn't manage to do so fully, and got his at it's front leg.

However, even after getting shot, the tiger still continued chasing her, not even bothered to lick his wound. Although the gun has a good aim, the fire power is still not strong enough to kill a tiger in one shot.

Ye Zhen Zhen wanted to refill the gun again, but the tiger did not give her enough time and was gonna push her down.

With speed she roll to the side and avoided. But before allowing her to even breath the tiger's big and heavy tail swiped towards her, she didn't know the tiger would be this cunning, although her body managed to avoid the tail her leg couldn't, after getting swiped by the tail her calf sent a shivering pain, her bone should have broken.

The tiger faced Ye ZhenZhen, attacking her soon. As long as he comes over she will definitely die.

Ye Zhen Zhen has a broken leg, she can't hide move much. Touching around her waist, the whip is no longer useful now, she should still have a knife. But... where is it?

The knife is gone, it dropped when she was avoiding the tiger just now.

..... The sky wants me to die..!

The fear of death creeps into her heart, Ye Zhen Zhen turned cold, her heart seems to have stopped.

The tiger finally started his action, using all his power he pounced on Ye Zhen Zhen!

In that moment, Ye Zhen Zhen didn't even have the time to think, closing her eyes, her mind was blank.

Note: Hehe climax ~~~~ when shall i update next.. muahahahahahaha.

Hehehe ~

Chapter 17

Ye Zhen Zhen thought that the tiger would bite off her neck, but who knew that the tiger would just give her a bear hug.

Under the huge body, she nearly vomited blood due to his weight, after waiting for a while, she still didn't find any movement from the tiger. Slowly she opened her eyes, and blinked. What she saw was the white chin of the tiger, by her nose she caught a sniff of what only a wild animal would smell like.. and blood.

The tiger was on top of her, not moving.

Ye Zhen Zhen was not sure what happened. Thinking hard, and trying her best to move her body to get out... she didn't want to be squashed to death, after avoiding being eaten.

Suddenly, the ground had a loud “de””de””de” horse hoof sound, the sound getting closer. Soon, the tiger was lifted from her body.

A few soldiers dragged the tiger aside, Ye Zhen Zhen looked at the tiger, and saw that it remained the position just now, both eyes still wide open, looking still very scary. On his head, in the middle there was an arrow, it was shot through the skull of the tiger, must have been a very powerful arrow. Along with the brain juices, blood was seeping through. The arrow was made from iron. The design of this arrow is bigger than the normal arrow, very powerful stronger than normal arrow by 3 times, but it would require a very strong person to shoot this arrow.

On the arrow's body there are 2 engraved words, not very clear from far, but without checking it, Ye Zhen Zhen already knew what it says on the arrow. There are two types of arrows that only the emperor uses, one is called “Fei Mang” another “Liu Xing”, the first is very powerful but short distanced, the latter is light, can shoot very far, accurate but far less powerful.

The arrow in view now is none other than “Fei Mang”. But to be able to shoot “Fei Mang” with such accuracy, the archer's skill is very high.

After moving the tiger's body, no one dared to get close to Ye Zhen Zhen. Her husband is looking at her, no one would dare to touch her..

Ji Wu Jiu was on top of the horse, his expression was dark, he felt that there was something stuck in his chest, that he couldn't let out, in the end he just scolded her "Foolish!" Even he would not dare to fight a tiger alone, this woman... really don't know what is called danger.

Ye Zhen Zhen was lying on the ground, with a pale face "Your Majesty, my leg broke"

"....." Ji Wu Jiu took a deep breath, hardened his expression and got down from his horse, and checked Ye Zhen Zhen's injury, after confirming that she is only injured at the leg, "Won't die"

With a solemn face, his handsome features got distorted due to his anger, with a dark expression. The whole feel he is giving out is really scary, making people hard to even breath around him.

Ye Zhen Zhen has never seen such a Ji Wu Jiu before, her heart took a shiver.

Ji Wu Jiu ordered someone to get a tree branch, and personally tied it on Ye Zhen Zhen's calf.

After that, holding her arms, he carried her up (princess style). Although this was one of the rare occasions to be intimate with her, he was angry as well, such conflicting emotions.

The Ye Zhen Zhen now can only think of quickly getting out from this place, so she didn't think too much of what he did. Ji Wu Jiu was holding her hands, she got surprised and ask "Eh, your majesty, why is your hands so cold?"

"....." Ji Wu Jiu didn't answer her, he placed Ye Zhen Zhen on the horse, and climbed up himself, and placed her in his arms. Although it was quite taxing to this all by himself, but she is the empress, if possible another man should not touch her.

"Your Majesty, are you very cold?" Seeing that Ji Wu Jiu's face is still not in a good mood, Ye Zhen Zhen asked again. According to her, this question should be a type of caring, to show how much she worries.

“Don’t talk”

“...” Ye Zhen Zhen didn’t know why he was so cold towards her. Murmuring to herself, “it is not something embarrassing also, I am cold too...”

Hearing what she said, Ji Wu Jiu’s first reaction was to get a few clothes from the soldiers to help cover her, but then again she is the empress, it would be unthinkable to put another men’s cloths on her. His own cloths are emperor’s robes, also can’t let her waer..

Sighing, he hugged Ye Zhen Zhen even closer to himself.

This group of people returned to the Xing Palace, because of Ye Zhen Zhen’s injury they can’t move too fast, if not her condition will turn even worst. Also because of her leg injury the whole way she have to sit with both legs facing to one side, but after a while it was too painful for her, Ji Wu Jiu can only hold on to her legs with one hand, so that her legs are more comfortable, another hand was holding the reign controlling the horse. Ye Zhen Zhen’s hands was on his waist and lying on his chest.

The actions of these two people were very intimate but slightly weird as well, the soldiers at the side all act like they didn’t see and slowly kept their distance from them.

When the both of them reached Xing Palace, it was already evening. The sun was setting, with a red sky. Ji Wu Jiu looked down at Ye Zhen Zhen and found that she actually fell asleep.

Even with her position, she also can fall asleep, she really is very skillful.

The sunset rays was lighting her face, adding a more gentle feel to her strong facial features, the autumn wind was slightly blowing her hair, making her itch and her frowning abit, unconsciously shifting in the arms of Ji Wu Jiu.

“.....”

Besides unable to cry or laugh, Ji Wu Jiu’s heart felt something different happening inside.

If someone is able to sleep peacefully in your arms, what does it mean?

The emperor hunting down a tiger got spread throughout the camp very fast, showing his capability. Ever since his return, all the ministers was showing up to congratulate him, and comparing him to the previous emperors, and came to a conclusion: You are in the same group as them.

Though this couldn't really be counted as boot licking, the ministers of this country has been educated to love the country and always will expect something out of the emperor. Also these ministers that are able to be at their position today, would have fought in the court for a few decades, surely they know what and what not to say. Ji Wu Jiu is strong in both literature and martial skills, full of talent, also very mature for his age, definitely a good exemplary emperor. They definitely have to be on his good side.

Always hearing good things about him, he also didn't think too much about it anymore. Ye Xiu Ming, that old fart also headed towards him, and forcing himself to praise the emperor as well. Ji Wu Jiu answered half heartedly. Ye Xiu Ming is his teacher, no matter how much he dislikes him, he still have to give him some face. This was also what made Ji Wu Jiu different: In the court, no matter who also he can scold, only Ye Xiu Ming he can't if not he will be placed with a title of not respecting his teacher, and will give a new gossip topic for the ministers.

That is why he can only scold his granddaughter.

After the words of praise, Ye Xiu Ming, finally asked about Ye Zhen Zhen's condition.

"The empress hurt her calf, the imperial doctors checked, and already joined back the leg, and she is resting now. If teacher is worried, you can go have a look. Her father must be worried too, ask him to go together as well"

"I humble thank your majesty graces"

This was really counted as a grace, in normal circumstances the empress should not be allowed to meet any ministers at court, not even her father.

That is why when Ye Zhen Zhen saw her father and grandfather, she was very happy, and hurriedly let them forgo the greetings and shoo-ed everyone else

out, the three of them sat down to chat.

This year Ye Xiu Ming is already 60 over years old, healthy, lively, and a very experienced background, giving of a very strong and powerful image. Though in comparison to Ye Kang Le, his son who appears to be much more humble and easy to approach.

The both of them asked her about her injury in detail and gave a few advices. Ye Kang Le, seeing that his beloved daughter got hurt, was also feeling down, thinking about what happened scared him as well, lucky the emperor was there in time.

After a little small talk, Ye Xiu Ming suddenly got serious and asked Ye Zhen Zhen “yesterday the emperor during the morning court, mentioned that you gave the idea for the water reservoir?”

Ye Zhen Zhen surprised “ What idea?”

“The one that asked the farmers to be free from tax instead of getting money from the treasury”

“Yes, there is such a thing, what happened?”

Ye Xiu Ming let out a deep breath and said “Zhen Zhen ah.. you got tricked... I got tricked as well..”

Ye Zhen Zhen asked unsure why “I only said a few ideas, and this was not hard to think of, the emperor would thought of it too”

“Of course he would have thought of it, but he purposely wanted it to come out from your mouth”

“Why?”

“The person in charge of this case was not decided till now, because it is a big project that is why both me and Fang Xiu Qing also recommended someone to the emperor. After half a month, we finally got the job to be given to your second brother”

Ye Zhen Zhen finally understood, this was a hole that was already dug by Ji Wu Jiu.

Her second brother Ye Mu Fang, is the second head in charge of the works

department, although still young, his job position is considered high. Ji Wu Jiu would have known that Ye Xiu Ming would recommend his grandson that is why he thought of a plan to trick them, looking like he complied to Ye Xiu Ming, letting him think that he got a good task for his grandson, but actually just a rotten egg.

Why rotten?

It is common knowledge that in order to finish a job properly it would be unavoidable to bribe some state ministers to help ease the jobs. These are rules of the political world. Now with the plan Ye Mu Fang will not have money in hand, and still would need to complete the job properly, it would definitely be harder. Although Ye Family is powerful, but its power is mostly held in the capital or big states, not possible to overlook every single corner of the country. The project of this size would involve a lot of people and without money it would be very hard to do the job smoothly.

This is not the worst part. Besides the works department, another department is involved; The finance department. Everything involving the calculations of tax, money, treasury department are under the control of the finance department, if the finance department does not cooperate, it will make the job even harder to complete. And will Finance department cooperate fully with Ye Mu Fang?

We shall ask the minister of finance, Fang Xiu Qing to answer this question.

Fang Xiu Qing, smiled without saying a word.

Great, the idea if was told by Ji Wu Jiu earlier, Ye Xiu Ming would definitely not let Ye Mu Fang do these tasks, although the person in charge can be chosen as him, but he will have his ways to change it, but this idea came from the empress, Ye Xiu Ming didn't have the chance to fight, when the emperor started to praise the empress for being able to think of such a good plan, and that Ye Xiu Ming has such a clever granddaughter.

Ye Xiu Ming nearly vomited blood in the court.

But no matter what happens, he had to be patient.

Ye Zhen Zhen, her second brother, her grandfather, also fell into the trap Ji Wu Jiu prepared. That idiot actually dug such a big hole to fit so many people.

He really is too hateful!!!

Note: Aww.. just when we thought they will start to be lovey dovey.. sigh.. T_T

Chapter 18

In order to showcase the power and strength of an empire, the Xing Palace was rather large for a hunting ground.

Ye Zhen Zhen's room is directly beside Ji Wu Jiu. Both of their rooms are very big, and are well decorated as well. In front of Ji Wu Jiu's room there were a few armed soldiers guarding, not moving with a straight face, almost like a tree. Below the window a tiger was lying there, the arrow on his head earlier has been removed.

There were people walking pass the door every now and then, everyone's gaze will fall on the tiger, and then after they will pass by. In their hearts thinking who will Ji Wu Jiu give the tiger too.

According to customs, every year during the hunt, the emperor will give away the things that he hunted himself, to the ministers. Even if it was a pigeon it, it was still from the emperor. Last time Ye Xiu Ming and Fang Xiu Qing has both received them before, though both of them will receive similar items so that they appear to have equal power, but this time it is different, there is only one tiger, who will the emperor gift it to?

Besides Ji Wu Jiu, everyone else was thinking about this matter.

At night, Ji Wu Jiu did not return to his own room, but went to Ye Zhen Zhen's place. Seeing that she was being cold towards him, and did not respond will to him, he felt bored and went to Xian Concubine's room.

Xian Concubine was removing her make up when he came in, Xian Concubine saw Ji Wu Jiu from her copper mirror and quickly pushed Qiu Feng away, and greeted the emperor. She was wearing thin clothes, hair untied, with no make up, making her look rather pitiful.

Ji Wu Jiu helped Xian Concubine up, and his gaze got attracted to an accessory on the table. A hair ornament, with a hole in the middle. The one that Ye Zhen Zhen's arrow gone through.

Seeing her hair ornament, Xian Concubine also felt that she was embarrassing

earlier on, and quickly changed the topic “Your majesty, I heard that you caught a tiger today?”

“En”. If it was not for him manage to arrive on time, Ye Zhen Zhen would have been swallowed by the tiger.

“Congratulations your majesty, you are truly brave and heroic”

Ji Wu Jiu held up that hair ornament, and looked at it carefully. Ye Zhen Zhen’s unwillingness face from this morning floated into his mind, if he did not make her get rid of the hidden arrow, most probably she would not have gotten herself into that situation.

Ji Wu Jiu let out a sigh, and threw the hair ornament back to the table.

Ji Wu Jiu announced that he will gift the tiger to Ye Zhen Zhen. Most people felt surprised, thinking about the rumor about Ji Wu Jiu not liking the empress, on how much can that rumor be trusted, and in the same time congratulating Ye Xiu Ming.

Ye Xiu Ming, held his beard and laughed “What happens between the husband and wife, we don’t really have a say”. Although that was what he say, but in his heart he was thinking about Fang Xiu Qing’s daughter, thinking that she isn’t that good after all.

Currently Xian Concubine’s expression is not too good as well, but lucky for her it was dark so it cannot be detected easily.

Tonight’s banquet was held outside, they all held a fire and gathered around to drink some wine and to eat meat. Ye Zhen Zhen was holding on to a roasted lamb leg, and eating with great appetite, that definitely can’t showcase her being the mother of the country. She thought it through, Ji Wu Jiu was originally not someone good, earlier on she fell into his trap, but it was because she was not clever enough, next time she just have to be more careful, that’s all. Furthermore, he did save her, although the reason she nearly died, he also plays a part.

Anyway, not thinking about it would be best.

Ji Wu Jiu turned and saw the earnestly roast lamb eating Ye Zhen Zhen, and shook his head.

After three days, the whole entourage went back to the capital. The imperial doctor brought a chair with wheels for Ye Zhen Zhen, can be sat on, and also can be pushed around, as well as arm rests, very convenient to be used. Ye Zhen Zhen like it very much, and immediately give him some gifts.

Today, Ye Zhen Zhen brought the rest of the court ladies too Ci Ning Palace to greet the Empress dowager, she was sitting on the wheelchair, pushed by Su Yue and the rest of the ladies followed behind her.

Ji Wu Jiu already finished his morning court, and was at Ci Ning Palace as well, because Ye Zhen Zhen's leg is not well yet, she does not need to perform the greetings, and Su Yue pushed her to her position. Chatted with Empress Dowager a bit and wanted to leave.

This type of thing, she has to do daily, it was rather boring.

However, today the empress dowager was treating her with much care, and asked about her injury in detail. Hearing that she will need at least 3 months to recover, she frowned and forced herself to show that her heart aches for Ye Zhen Zhen and said "It is not convenient for you to move around, it is quite pitiful, to injure bones is not something easy to heal, you will need to recuperate properly"

Ye Zhen Zhen really don't what is the empress dowager acting for, and looked at Ji Wu Jiu for a clue, but Ji Wu Jiu just blinked without an expression.

"That is why before the you are healed, you no need to come here everyday"

"Thank you for your grace mother, but this injury is nothing serious, will just need a little bit more effort, I would not dare to lack in the greetings"

"Your fidelity I am well aware of" the empress dowager said and waved her hands "normally you have to handle the things in the inner palace, it must have been very tiring, now you are injured, you should take this chance to recover, and should not allow them to disturb you over the small things. I was thinking, what not you let Xian Concubine take over your job for a while, what do you

think?”

Ah, now we know why..

Ye Zhen Zhen guessed that the empress dowager would have such an act, it must have been hard on her to only say after so many days. She looked at Ji Wu Jiu, and found that he was looking at her as well, with a calm expression.

Ye Zhen Zhen smiled and said “ Your majesty, what do you think?”

“Since the empress is injured, she should rest”

“Since your majesty and mother are so caring towards my injury, then I will gladly accept, and take this chance to be lazy for these few months”

The empress dowager nodded and smiled “it should be so”

“But”, Ye Zhen Zhen looked at Xian Concubine, “the things in the inner palace that needs to be done is very complicated, I am not sure if Xian Concubine will be able to take it?”

Xian Concubine, replied “Although I am not as clever, but I am willing to help your majesty to lessen your burden”

“Since you are not clever enough, I am afraid that you alone would not be enough” Ye Zhen Zhen smiled, and looked at Xian Concubine’s change of expression, then looked at the person next to her “Zhuang Concubine”.

“I am here”

“During the my resting period, you and Xian Concubine will work together” Ye Zhen Zhen said and turned towards the empress dowager “Mother, what do you think?”

You already gave out the order, why bother ask me, the empress dowager thought. “A good idea”

Zhuang Concubine know that Ye Zhen Zhen is siding her, so she decided that she will definitely do her job well and keep track of Xian Concubine, and properly help the empress.

Ye Zhen Zhen also did not have a choice, the empress dowager and Xian Concubine has joined hands, definitely they would want to endanger her, so she

can't sit and wait. As long as Zhuang Concubine is obedient, and does not trouble her further, she can still be considered as a good weapon. Further more the grounded Li Concubine would be another problem later. As soon as she gets out, the first person she will look for revenge would definitely be Ye Zhen Zhen.

As whether Li Concubine will be in grace again, Ye Zhen Zhen thinks she most probably will. She found out that Ji Wu Jiu as an emperor, actually does not care about women, in his heart all he thinks about is the country and how to manipulate people. As long as the woman is pretty enough, and treats him good, he will receive everyone.

Ever since Xian Concubine and Zhuang concubine took over the inner palace matters, Ye Zhen Zhen got more free time and could do things that she likes.

The first thing she did was to research on how to make the gun shoot more than once each time. The accident that happened in the hunting grounds was too engraving, if her gun can shoot more than once, most probably the hero now would be her.

Although her idea is good, it is not something that could be done in a day or two. So everyday she will think for a while, and when she gets tired she will do other things, such as bringing in Matthew to the palace and chat.

Matthew brought her a lot of things from his country. Such as books and drawings, but it was too bad that the books that he brought in were all written in Latin words. Matthew is also considered half unable to read. As it was different from his mother tongue, so when he tried to read it always got stuck, but he still had to explain the meaning to Ye Zhen Zhen. This two person played well together, Ye Zhen Zhen thought that the thinks that came from the books were very interesting, although some may be weird, but some are also very fun. She was most interested in their astrology and mathematics.

As for Matthew, this guy was actually a flirt, once he sees pretty ladies, he will be very keen. In his home country, he can still be considered handsome. Matthew's first impression on Ye Zhen Zhen was already that she was very pretty, but he could not portray his feelings out loud. Everyday he has to endure his thoughts and slowly started to turn perverted.

But before he can become crazy, another person got crazy first.

Help!!!! Can someone tell him why the emperor ordered people to hit his butt!!

“Ouch!, help me your majesty (towards the empress)!”

“Stop” Ye Zhen Zhen shouted.

But Ji Wu Jiu with a black face was looking over, who would dare to stop.

Ye Zhen Zhen thought that Ji Wu Jiu is really weird, she did not make him angry also, just that she was with Matthew in Wu Ying Hall, chatting about a drama, both of them were chatting happily and suddenly this person suddenly came in, looked at them once and without saying another word, he ordered Matthew to be dragged out and flogged.

“Your majesty, if you have something to say, let it out, don’t keep it to yourself, you will feel frustrated” Ye Zhen Zhen said helplessly.

“You are the empress, who ever (men) see you more than once should be killed” Ji Wu Jiu looked at Ye Zhen Zhen, with a pair of cold eyes. He is a man, he can only understand too much about the way Matthew looked at Ye Zhen Zhen, “so, not killing him today, can be considered giving you face already”

“What type of crime are you naming him, without proof! You just don’t like me, why don’t you hit me, why are you implicating the innocent!”

Ji Wu Jiu ignored Ye Zhen Zhen, and seeing that the person hitting finally counted to 40 hits, he left.

Ye Zhen Zhen was speechless, and made a decision to create some trouble back for Ji Wu Jiu.

Note: In this chapter we have a jealous (though he may not realise it yet) Ji Wu Jiu.. kekekeke

Chapter 19

After getting hit, Matthew no longer enters the palace.

Ji Wu Jiu looked for another westerner for Ye Zhen Zhen, this time he is a priest, also known as the western monk. This person is rather elderly, wearing a black robe without a belt, and wearing a rosary on his neck. His hair is very thick, almost like a sheep, and has a full beard, that covers his mouth. Seeing him will give off a feeling of “even if you did any mistake, don’t worry the god will forgive”, that’s what Ji Wu Jiu thought.

Ji Wu Jiu forgive him for that, and introduced him to Ye Zhen Zhen. This person is not good looking if compared to Matthew, you have to focus in order to look through his facial hairs.

“The way he walks looks like a big sack that turned into a demon” This was what Ye Zhen Zhen’s first impression of him was.

That sentence made Ji Wu Jiu spit out his tea again, and since then, every time he saw the priest he will think of the walking sack. Almost like a curse that can’t be stopped.

Mr Beard is called “Mr Dou”, this was how Ye Zhen Zhen calls him too. Ye Zhen Zhen actually likes Mr Dou better than Matthew, because he can read, and knows a lot. Ye Zhen Zhen especially like when they ate together, when she sees him trying his best to put food into his mouth without the food touching his beard.

After observing for a few days, Ji Wu Jiu found that Ye Zhen Zhen was satisfied, and he himself was satisfied about it, and thought that this would be the end of the case.

But, Ye Zhen Zhen thinks otherwise. Although she doesn’t half a small chest, but her forgiveness isn’t too big, so she did not forget that Ji Wu Jiu is a very self centered person and how he punished the innocent Matthew. Thinking that she must get her revenge this round.

Such a coincidence, the moment she feels sleepy someone gave her a pillow.

These few days something happened, that allowed Ye Zhen Zhen to laugh at Ji Wu Jiu.

We must start the story few days back, when Ye Zhen Zhen's female family members are allowed to visit.

Ye Zhen Zhen's grandmother, mother and 2 other sister in laws entered the palace. Her third brother hasn't gotten married.

The old madam no longer cared that she was the empress and immediately hugged her and cried non stop. The other three woman followed and cried together, Ye Zhen Zhen's mother cried the most. They scared Ye Zhen Zhen, she don't know who she should console anymore, finally with the help of the maid servants they brought along, they finally ceased the crying. Then they started to chat.

Woman, when they gather together, they will talk about the usual, whats happening at other families and what not. Then the topic lead to the empress dowager's niece who got her marriage canceled. The lady is called Xu Wei Rong, same age as Ye Zhen Zhen, and was promised to another family's son, who knew that the news of the promise being broken, would be so near the wedding date some more.

"I heard that it is because the man's side got a deadly disease, and seeing that the wedding is near, he cancelled it to save Xu Wei Rong... .." "What type of sickness did he get?" Ye Zhen Zhen asked..

"It isn't disease" her eldest sister in law said. "the man eloped with another girl"

"!!!" Ye Zhen Zhen opened her mouth in shock "really?" But.. if that really happened, the family would have kept it real quiet, how did others find out?"

"It really is so.. there is no wall that can block the wind" Mother answered

Ye Zhen Zhen closed her mouth and shook her head, "that guy really is useless, throwing his family, as well as dragging down an innocent girl with him"

"You should stop pitying others first, think about yourself, you silly girl"
Grandmother tapped Ye Zhen Zhen's forehead.

“Me?”

“She is the empress dowager’s niece, the emperor’s cousin”

“..... The empress dowager won’t get her in the palace right?” Ladies facing this type of matter really is unlucky, definitely there will be people saying things, but if she is accepted to enter the palace, then the story would be different.

Old Madam Ye, with a worried face nodded her head.

Ye Zhen Zhen was abit speechless, trying hard to find the good things about the palace, why is all the woman trying their best to squeeze into here. Thinking that Ji Wu Jiu will have another pretty small wive, Ye Zhen Zhen was even more speechless.

If she can do something about it.....

Matters concerning about taking new consorts for the emperor, the empress actually has a say. If she purposely stop it, even if Ji Wu Jiu were to bring in the girl, he can’t give her too high of a position also. But before this, Ye Zhen Zhen still wanted to know how Ji Wu Jiu wants it to be, and as long as she acts the opposite way, then it would be good enough...

“Your Majesty, I heard about Xu Sisters case, a good lady, meeting with such an unfortunate fate, really is horrible” Today Ji Wu Jiu came to Kun Ning Palace to check on the well being of the disabled person and heard this question coming out from Ye Zhen Zhen.

“She is elder than you by two months” Ji Wu Jiu replied slowly, while cooling down his tea, vapor building up in front of his, making it blurry.

Ye Zhen Zhen unconsciously touched her nose, “that.. few days a go I heard mother talking about her, she is a clever and pretty, talented girl”

“This matter, mother has already mentioned to me”

I knew it! Ye Zhen Zhen eyes were rolling “then, what does your majesty thinks?”

Ji Wu Jiu placed his teacup down “This type of matter, the empress can take charge, no need to ask me”

“We are talking about getting you a consort, of course we have to ask for your

opinion”

Ji Wu Jiu did not answer, and looked at her calmly, with eyes that seems to be able to see everything.

Ye Zhen Zhen is not good with going around the bushes, and felt abit guilty under his gaze, and avoided his eyes.

“She is my playmate when we were younger, quite cute, of course I would hope for her to enter the palace to keep me company. Empress, see what you should do”

Then she can’t let her enter the palace. Ye Zhen Zhen thought.

Xu Wei Rong is Ji Wu Jiu’s cousin, he did not have any brothers or sisters, so he is a bit closer with Xu Wei Rong, but their relationship would only be brothers and sisters. As soon as he heard he needs to take her as his woman, he will have a guilt feeling of incest, and honestly did not want her to enter the palace.

But, the inner thoughts of Ye Zhen Zhen he saw through, that is why he said the opposite. Thinking that, that silly woman don’t even know how to lie, Ji Wu Jiu looks down at her.

The empress dowager tries her best to get Xu Wei Rong to enter the palace, the empress tries her best to stop it. This was the latest gossip in the palace.

Ji Wu Jiu faked the “can’t wait to get a new pretty gal face” while standing aside. Sometimes he will comment on Ye Zhen Zhen’s actions. One time he knocked her head and said “Jealous Wife”.

This news was quickly spread, and the title Jealous wife was placed on to Ye Zhen Zhen. She was thinking whether she once again fell into Ji Wu Jiu’s trap, because if this title got solid, then next time when he wants to demote her from the empress position it would be easier. (Last time one can ask for divorce if wife is easily jealous, as men are allowed to have a lot of concubines.)

That is why Ye Zhen Zhen starts to contemplate.

The moment when Ji Wu Jiu wanted to shamelessly announce that he wanted to give up getting a concubine because he got pestered by the Jealous Wife too

much, a person that he did not include in his place stood up.

Xian Concubine gave her opinion, “Although the inner palace matters should be decided by the empress, but since I am taking care of the matters as well now, I can’t help but to say a word of fairness”

Xian Concubine has her own plans, although Xu Wei Rong entering the palace may endanger her position but since the emperor likes it, then most probably the woman will enter the palace in the end, why not she help him now and still can obtain a title of benevolent.

Ye Zhen Zhen no longer wants to carry the title of Jealous Wife, so she let it be.

Ji Wu Jiu :.....

This time he took the stone and slammed on his own feet, thinking about how to torture Ye Zhen Zhen he forgotten about another clever person. But... Xian Concubine this time, got too clever.

Ye Zhen Zhen was feeling down, why is he still unhappy when she finally agreed? This fella really is hard to make him happy.

She is now in Kun Ning palace, facing a table full of drawings. Drawings of her gun that can shoot more than once. She told this matter to many people, but they did not believe her, not even Ji Wu Jiu.

This is the sad story of a genius, Ye Zhen Zhen thinks.

Ji Wu Jiu was looking at her now, his white face looks abit tired, because of Xian Concubine’s interference, he is not in a good mood. He also don’t know why he wandered to Kun Ning Palace, this woman don’t even know how to make him happy, all she thinks about is how to trouble him.

“Your majesty, are you not busy lately?” Ye Zhen Zhen asked.

Ji Wu Jiu suddenly thought of another thing, “you always give jade toad to other people?” Recently he has been receiving reports from his small wives about receiving toads from the empress, although this animal is supposed to be a prosperity animal, and they can’t really deny it, but after receiving too much of it, they will still feel goosebumps. Wang Zhao Yi, even placed the big jewel encrusted toad at her bedside, and that night that toad even entered Ji Wu Jiu’s

dreams.

Repeated reports finally conditioned him to relate Toad to his bed business, will make Ji Wu Jiu hard to focus during his business, and then his lower body will be less active.

Infront of him, the consorts don't dare to say anything, but at the back, they hint the kitchen that the emperor is abit weak lately...

This type of topic will damage the emperor's reputation, so they also can only help by placing more nutritious food into the emperor's daily meal.

Therefore, Ji Wu Jiu ate a lot of those things without knowing, but sometimes he will wake up in the middle of the night feeling very hot. We need to know, now it is already early winter.

Hearing from Ji Wu Jiu about the toads now, Ye Zhen Zhen answered "Yes"

"Is there any special reason behind?"

Cannot mention "fertility", if not it would be telling the emperor that his future children are toads, also cannot mention about wealth, why would the emperor's woman need to be wealthy?... thinking about it hard, Ye Zhen Zhen said "the meaning is that they are all toad and you are a swan, " 癞蛤蟆想吃天鹅肉 " it means that the toads want to eat swan meat. Although not nice to hear, but it is still words of flattery.

This person, she really dares to say anything. Ji Wu Jiu not getting angry and continued asking "What about you? You are a toad as well?"

"I am your empress, of course I am a swan as well"

Ji Wu Jiu smiled, "What about Xian Concubine? She is a toad as well?" Suddenly thinking about what Xian Concubine did, he frowned.

Ye Zhen Zhen looked up, from her drawings to Ji Wu Jiu's face and replied while smiling "Xian Concubine is the moon's Chang Er fairy"

"You see her so?"

"But then again, story states that when Chang Er escaped from the moon, in the end she turned into a Yue Jing, another name for toad"

So, still a toad!

Ji Wu Jiu got very happy from her nonsense, and felt better. Dinner time is approaching soon, he did not move and had dinner together with Ye Zhen Zhen at Kun Ning Palace.

After dinner, both of them looked at each other.

Ye Zhen Zhen thought that he would be like last time, after dinner he will go, but did this it seems like he does not seem to want to leave. Ye Zhen Zhen could only shout out to Feng You De outside, “Feng You De, bring the name plates over, the emperor haven’t flip them”

“No Need”. Feng You De just only looked up , Ji Wu Jiu stopped him.

Ye Zhen Zhen had a bad feeling, “Your Majesty, you are not gonna take a walk outside?”

Ji Wu Jiu looked at her, with a hint of smile creeping up “We are a pair of swans right? Don’t tell me you want me to go look for a toad?”

“.....”

Chapter 20

Ye Zhen Zhen finally understood what trouble is coming from mouth. Frigidly she look at Ji Wu Jiu, “your majesty, my condition now... “ she said while looking down, stopping her gaze at her leg. She is already a disabled person, please don’t bother me further.

“It is just to rest her tonight, where is your mind floating too?” Ji Wu Jiu looked at her and the smile in his eyes got more bright.

Ye Zhen Zhen lowered her head, what else can she think of, then she realized, Ji Wu Jiu only wants to disturb her.

Inside it was bright under the candle light, showcasing the red face of Ye Zhen Zhen, and seeing her blushing so, Ji Wu Jiu did not continue the teasing. Although this woman is normally very thick face, but that type of things, she still only experienced it once before, and also not to mention it stopped halfway... Ji Wu Jiu found that his thoughts has wandered too far, quickly focused, and ordered Feng You De to bring over his documents to Kun Ning Palace, he wants to read through them here.

Ye Zhen Zhen asked Su Yue to prepare what was necessary and did not bother with Ji Wu Jiu anymore, and continued to ponder with her drawings. Both of them was busy with their own things, and the atmosphere was very quiet.

Not sure how long pass by, Ye Zhen Zhen got really sleepy, but since Ji Wu Jiu did not say he was sleepy, she couldn’t really go sleep first. After that she really couldn’t take it anymore and with sleepy eyes she look at Ji Wu Jiu, to find out that he was looking at her as well.

Because she was too sleepy, her eyes can barely open, so Ye Zhen Zhen couldn’t really tell what Ji Wu Jiu’s expression looked like, and since she does not really bother about him also, “Your majesty, please rest early, you still have to attend the morning court tomorrow”

Ji Wu Jiu, lowered his head, picked up his brush and continue to write, saying “Empress, if you are tired, you can sleep first, don’t need to bother about me”

Ye Zhen Zhen did not even reply, and allowed Su Yue and Su Feng to help her prepare to sleep.

After a while later, Ji Wu Jiu stretched his stiff body, and decided to sleep as well. A few maid servant quickly served him and after he climbed on the bed, they put down the yellow bed net/cover. Both of their even breaths were interlacing with one another, beyond the bed net, there was only a small light wavering around chasing people off to the dreamland.

Slow wind blowing outside, on the sky there was a new moon, with thousands of stars lighting up the sky, like the candles brightening the sky, guarantee to bring good a night of good sleep.

Ji Wu Jiu suddenly opened his eyes, his eyes were darker than the night but there was a glimmer of light from them, with a hint of disbelieve.

On his thigh, there was a hand that quietly creeping over. With lean and small fingers, soft and warm, and it was moving and touching his outer thigh part, and finally stopped at the knee. Ji Wu Jiu's heart beat begin to rise, and he turned to look at Ye Zhen Zhen. Her eyes was closed, and seemed to be in deep sleep, but she seems to be frowning, seems like she was uncomfortable. It wouldn't be that she wants it? Ji Wu Jiu got shocked by his own thoughts, but deep inside it was undeniable that there was a growing anticipation.

Ye Zhen Zhen's fingers started to move, on his thigh, moving a bit, stopped, and moved a bit again.

Ji Wu Jiu starts to feel itchy from her movements, that itch was going upwards his thigh, he couldn't help but to swallow his saliva.

Still itchy.

Ye Zhen Zhen unconsciously, started to scratch.

Ji Wu Jiu can only grab her hand. And a thought quickly pass through his mind, and then holding her hands he placed it on her legs, Ye Zhen Zhen scratched for a while, and finally her frown was gone and she continued to sleep.

It was indeed her legs being itchy, she scratched the wrong person.

Ji Wu Jiu was not sure if he should cry or laugh.

He tried to sleep again, but no matter what he couldn't fall back to sleep.

(Below storyline is for mature audience only, kindly skip this part, if you are not comfortable although it will relate to the next chapters somehow.. “blush”)

The blood in his body starts to heat up, although the hand on his thigh is gone, but the feeling of being touched is still here, can't be forced away either.

If just now, her hands were to move up another inch.

Once this weird thought came about, he couldn't suppress it anymore. Ji Wu Jiu tried to control himself to not think about it, but if her hands were to move up an inch more, it will definitely touch...

Realizing the changes in his own body, Ji Wu Jiu once again got frustrated.

Ever since he got the throne, in the bed business he has never purposely suppress it nor be overly indulge by it, this type of thing to him is like eating, hungry then eat, and one should not eat too full. So normally he rarely gets frustrated over this matter. But now, to be only touched for a bit, he got such a big reaction, he was really surprised himself. But of course, it was because no one took the initiative to touch him before.

Taking a deep breath, Ji Wu Jiu tried to calm himself down, but what he got in exchange was his little brother standing up even taller.

No matter how rational a man is, once all his blood rush downwards, the mental power that controls his body movement will move downwards as well. Although he has a strong will power, Ji Wu Jiu is also just a man.

His gaze suddenly changed, and looked at Ye Zhen Zhen who was beside him.

Someone was still in deep sleep, and wiped her own drool as well.

Ji Wu Jiu sat up, stretched his hands to the back of her neck, and press on her acupuncture spot that allows one to sleep better a few times. Then he took her hands, and placed them between his legs.

Inside, the dimly lit and tiring night, and quiet bed suddenly moved, like a stream of pale yellow waterfall, with boiling heat coursing through, then waves of heavy breathing can be heard.

(It is save to read now? .hahahahaha)

Although the previous night Ji Wu Jiu did not sleep well, but when he woke up he found that he was very refreshed. Looking at him Feng You De thought that the emperor looks better today and in a better mood, not in a hurry nor rush, thinking perhaps the things that he had been eating recently has finally been used properly.

Thinking that the acupuncture spot he pressed yesterday night was still working, cause when Ji Wu Jiu woke up in the morning, it did not wake Ye Zhen Zhen, Su Yue wanted to wake her up, Ji Wu Jiu waved his hands and ordered Su Yue to let her continue to sleep.

Ji Wu Jiu was feeling refreshed, but once he think of what he did yesterday night, he starts to feel restless. By his side, he has never been lack of women, to do it himself was really a first for him, not to mention it was done while holding Ye Zhen Zhen's hand, he still feels something is not right.

But now the fact is in front of him, he was in the mood, and there was no way to release it, furthermore, he did enjoyed it...

So Ji Wu Jiu was in deep thoughts.

His thoughts continued all the way from Kun Ning Palace to Huang Ji Hall, and finally got disturbed by Ye Xiu Ming and Fang Xiu Qing.

Ji Wu Jiu was sitting at his throne, without any expression looking at them bickering .

These two old fellas, is considered the most powerful in court besides him, but now they are both in a heated discussion with words with hidden meaning thrown here and there. The people around them also don't dare to enter their argument, so they looked at Ji Wu Jiu without a sound.

Ji Wu Jiu was looking at them as well

Their argument topic was still about the repairmen of the water reservoir. Ye Mu Fang, already went to Shan Dong, and the moment he reached there, he was faced with a problem, Ye Xiu Ming confirmed that it was Fang Xiu Qing doing some hanky panky, so he reported to the emperor, claiming that Fang Xiu Qing is not thinking about the citizens but for himself only, and strongly advise Ji Wu Jiu

to change the plans on the project.

No matter if it was done by him, Fang Xiu Qing would never admit, so he was fighting back and saying that Ye Xiu Ming was framing him, lying to the emperor, and not following the edict.

Seems like the ability to frame one another is quite strong in the both of them.

Actually, this case was not serious, but Ye Xiu Ming wanted to take this opportunity to warn Fang Xiu Qing to not over do things, and secondly there was a saying that the children who knows how to cry would get candy, that is why he wants to mention it more often in front of Ji Wu Jiu, so even if he were to grant one of his 10 whining it would still be good.

Ji Wu Jiu had enough, and stopped both the old fellas, and ordered an edict to: Give another batch of money to Ye Mu Fang”

Although he dislikes Ye Family, but he does not like personal grudges disturbing the real work. No matter what this project should be completed as soon as possible, Fang Xiu Qing can create obstacles but he has to know when to stop as well, it cannot hinder the project’s speed.

That is why Ji Wu Jiu showed Fang Xiu Qing, to warn him what is the emperor’s bottom line.

After the morning court, Ji Wu Jiu went to the imperial garden for a walk. Passing by Han Guang Palace, looking at that place, he suddenly remembered something. He turned and ask Feng You De, “ I remember previously Zhuang Concubine will make some Gui Hua pastries, that was very suitable for me, why there are none this year?”

“Your majesty, this year Zhuang Concubine made them, but... the empress ate them all.”

“.....”

As an emperor, surely he can’t do something scolding the empress for eating a few pastries, but he still unknowingly headed towards Kun Ning Palace. Seeing that Wang You Cai wanted to take a deep breath to announce his arrival, Ji Wu Jiu waved his hands and made Wang You Cai swallow the breath.

Ji Wu Jiu walked towards the window and heard people talking inside.

In the room, Ye Zhen Zhen was in thoughts, looks like she was trying to remember something. Su Yue does not know what happened yesterday night, but thinking about Ye Zhen Zhen's temper, she got worried and asked "niang niang why are you lost in thoughts?"

"Su Yue, I had a dream yesterday night"

"What dream?"

"I dream that there was 2 walnuts"

"Niang niang you want to eat walnuts? I will ask someone to bring them over"

"No" Ye Zhen Zhen shook her head, and said "I was just holding them in my hands, did not eat them"

"It seems like the veins in your hand are stuck, needs to be exercised. Why not we ask Wang You Cai to look for some antique walnut, and to move them in your hands, it is good for health."

Ye Zhen Zhen looked at her hands weirdly "but.... I think, I really have felt the two walnuts...."

Listening till this part, Ji Wu Jiu got stiff. Although his steps were light, but his movement was fast, Feng You De was almost running to chase up, and looking at the emperor's expression, seems like.. a bit .. stiff? Like he is trying his best to suppress something....

Kun Ning Palace and Gan Qing Palace is not too far from one another, only a corridor away. When Ji Wu Jiu finally arrived at Gan Qing Palace, he couldn't take it anymore and laughed to himself in front of his table, trying still to control his laughter his shoulders shook along with it.

Feng You De was really worried, the emperor's body seems to have recovered, don't tell me the virus got transferred to his brain?.....

Note:

Last time, people used walnuts to massage and were used like the now common acupuncture balls that are made of steel.

Also, this story has a lot more steamy parts coming up later.... so will you guys need a disclaimer everytime?

Chapter 21

Note: Hello, things to do will be catching up with me soon.. there will be less updates as well. Sigh.. the responsibilities of an adult.. T_T.. hahahahaha.... enjoy this chapter and don't read it too fast.. haha.. so that i can slowly catch up with the translating.. There will not be any fixed updates, as i cannot promise at the moment, but ! i will not abandon it... so i think it will be safer for you to subscribe and wait for an email notification.. haha ~ though i would not mind if you want to stalk this page as well. Will try to squeeze in another chapter this week. Thanks to all that have been reading so far !!! – 17/8/2015

Now back to the story~~~~~!

Ever since Xian Concubine and Zhuang Concubine started to take care of the inner palace, they praised and punished accordingly, a very job well done, Xian Concubine really played her role well, most people also praises her capability.

However, the only thing that most people don't know why is that, Ji Wu Jiu has not flipped her name plate for a while now.

“Niang Niang, after that time the emperor spend a night in Kun Ning palace, it is nearly half a month that he did not enter Yao Yue Palace.” Today, Qiu Feng brought up this topic again, full of worry in her tone.

“Could it be, the empress said something to the emperor?” Xian Concubine was in deep thoughts, but she can't think anything through. Not to mention she is doing her work properly, and there should be nothing that could be used against her, and by only depending on the emperor's negative feeling towards the empress, there should be nothing she could say that will easily change his mind.

“Niang Niang, the empress is someone that is hard to guess, and not easy to handle as well”

Xian Concubine continued pondering, thinking that perhaps she did something wrong, that angered Ji Wu Jiu. But what on earth is he so mindful about?...

Then, from outside a maid servant walked in and said “Niang niang, there is

someone from Han Guang palace, Xiao Zhu, kneeling outside, she says she has something to report”

Xian Concubine and Qiu Feng exchange glances, both thinking that there is something wrong. Zhuang Concubine is on the empress’s side, Han Guang Palace and Yao Yue Palace are not in good terms with each other, this is something the entire palace knows, why when something happened at Han Guang Palace, she came to Yao Yue Palace to report?

“Let her in”

“Yes”

From her appearance, Xiao Zhu is a second ranked maid servant, should be doing some tougher work in Han Guang Palace. She was kneeling and shivering on the floor, and said a few words stuttering. Xian Concubine and Qiu Feng’s expression got serious.

“You are sure, you saw it with your own eyes?” This case involves a lot of people, if there were any mistakes even losing one’s head would be considered light” Xian Concubine her tone very serious.

“Replying to niang niang, what I said was true, if I lied, than let me die ,and not reincarnate forever”

Qiu Feng scolded “How dare you, in front of niang niang, what nonsense are you spouting?”

Xiao Zhu got shocked and started to knock her head on the ground, “I am wrong, I am wrong”

“I will only ask you this” Xian Concubine got up, and looked at her ,”this matter why did you not notify Zhuang Concubine?”

“I.. I know that you are the most fair and righteous.. so.. “

“Understood, I know already” Xian Concubine stopped her. Even if Xiao Zhu doesn’t say it, she also knows why, no matter who wants to deal with who, this time it seems that someone wants to use her to sharper her knife, but why not we go with the flow..

Thinking until that point Xian Concubine said “ Qiu Feng, bring her along, we

are going to Han Guang Palace now”

“Yes”

“Xian Concubine sis, suddenly coming over to my Han Guang Palace, is there any thing important?” Zhuang Concubine asked, still with the unflattering tone. She was taking an afternoon nap, Xian Concubine suddenly bringing over people to her place, must not be something good.

“There is indeed something, that I have to come here to ask you properly, to have disturbed your nap, I hope you will understand”

Zhuang Concubine smiled upon hearing her reply “what is the matter that Xian Concubine wants to know?”

Xian Concubine, asked “Sun Gui Ren is staying here in Han Guang Palace right?”

“Sis, you really are asking questions that you already know the answer. Lu Zhu, go ask Sun Gui Ren to come out, do not let Xian Concubine wait too long”

“Hold on”, Xian Concubine called back the maid servant that was just heading out, “sis, may I ask where is her room?”

“Not to hide anything from you, this is a big matter, I need to bring some people to check her room, if it were to offend you, I hope you will understand”

She already say until like that, Zhuang Concubine can’t really object, and followed Xian Concubine and headed towards the side courtyard where Sun Gui Ren lives. In her heart she was thinking that since Xian Concubine dares to openly come to Han Guang Palace to look for trouble, that means this matter really is not small. Realizing this, she gave a glance to Lu Zhu, where she understood and slowed down a few steps, and stopped beside a smart maid servant and whispered “later if anything is amiss, quickly run to Kun Ning Palace to inform the empress, be smart don’t let others find out”

They reached the courtyard, Xian Concubine means to turn the issue bigger, and the moment she entered she ordered for the room to be thoroughly searched, so the eunuchs and maid servants immediately rushed in and started

to search the room, their seriousness in this search matter has made them not know what happened behind.

The maid servant that was ordered by Lu Zhu was standing at the back of some people, but saw Qiu Feng finding a men's clothing set, and not waiting for Lu Zhu to remind her, she immediately rushed out of Han Guang Palace and ran to Kun Ning Palace.

On the other hand, Xian Concubine was looking at the man's clothing in Qiu Feng's hand, frowning she turned towards Sun Gui Ren, "Is there anything else you can say?"

Sun Gui Ren kneeled, with a shocked expression "niang niang, I don't know where that item came from, I am framed!" Seeing that Xian Concubine does not seem to be bothered by what she said, she faced towards Zhuang Concubine, and held her dress ends and cried, "Zhuang Concubine, I am staying in Han Guang Palace, you should know well about how I am, please help me say something!"

Zhuang Concubine can only shake her head, this Sun Gui Ren really is muddled in her head, this thing happened in Han Guang Palace, she as the head of this place also needs to try to not be involved, so she shouldn't say anything at this time.

Sighing Xian Concubine added "Framed or not, we will know after investigating, someone go get the emperor, Qiu Feng, bring a few people and guard Han Guang Palace, maid servants and eunuchs can come in, but cannot go out"

Zhuang Concubine's face changed, "Sis, what does that mean?"

"Sis, do not think too much, truthfully I also hope that this matter is not real. But if Sun Gui Ren really have something with someone, in order to avoid the news from leaking out, and to let the someone know and to run away, why not we guard here, and does that are not involved can also avoid being involved."

"If so, why not we invite the empress here as well.."

"I don't think we should, firstly the inner palace is under our supervision now, it would not be nice to disturb her over this matter, secondly, if Sun Gui Ren

really have something going on with other men, surely it would not be a matter that was recent, if the emperor knows about it, would only be afraid that the empress will be reprimanded by the emperor, it would be better if he doesn't meet her now"

Her words seems to be so thoughtful and kind, like she is helping and thinking for Ye Zhen Zhen, but actually what was her intention, everyone knows inside. Zhuang Concubine knows that Xian Concubine is trying to use this opportunity to show her capabilities to the emperor as well as to add a kick to Ye Zhen Zhen, although she is anxious now, she can't do anything as well, as this thing happened at her palace, she knew she can't be free from getting involved as well.

Inside Kun Ning Palace.

"What did you say?!" Ye Zhen Zhen stood up from her chair out of shock, and the pain coming from her leg got her to shout out further.

Su Yue immediately hold on to her "Niang niang!"

Su Feng looked at the maid servant "You are speaking the truth, of what you seen correct?"

"Its real, I won't see wrongly"

Su Feng frowned, turned and asked "niang niang, would it have been just an eunuch's clothing?"

Ye Zhen Zhen shook her head, "even if it is an eunuch's cloths, to put it inside a Gui Ren's room it is against the rule as well"

Su Yue said "Weird, such a big thing happened, why no one came to Kun NIng Palace to report?"

Ye Zhen Zhen smiled coldly, "Zhuang Concubine can't win against Xian Concubine. She really is in a hurry, she already wants to go against me so quickly?"

"niang niang, you don't have to worry, this matter whether it is real or not, it should implicate Kun NIng Palace"

“Not necessary”

The case happened at Han Guang Palace, Zhuang Concubine confirmed will be involved, and if anything goes wrong, only Xian Concubine be left in charge of the inner palace. Zhuang Concubine is Ye Zhen Zhen's people, and with such an event this empress will lose one of her wings as well as her pride. Furthermore, Ji Wu Jiu loves to look trouble with her, and now that there is such a nice opportunity for him, will he let it go easily? This case involves the emperor wearing a green hat, can be said that it is more serious than the previous cases, as the empress, she would not be able to run away from another round of scolding. Not to mention no one really knows what Xian Concubine is thinking now, as she may appear to be fair and justice but may have hidden some knives in her sleeves. This case has many holes still, Sun Gui Ren most probably is framed by someone, therefore, will Xian Concubine wrongly accuse someone if she is incapable to solve this case?

Thinking twice about it, Ye Zhen Zhen decided that to wait at Kun Ning palace is not the way, therefore she knocked on her chair, “lets move to Han Guang Palace”

Inside Han Guang Palace, Ji Wu Jiu was sitting at the top, and looked upon the matter with a cold attitude.

Sun Gui Ren cried till she has no voice left, kneeling and crying that she was framed, with a hoarse voice, quite painful to the ears truthfully. Beside her kneeling was Xiao Zhu, and earlier on she has repeated what she said at Yao Yue Palace.

Xian Concubine let out a deep breath, and said “Sun Gui Ren, since the witness and evidence is here, it is best you just admit”

“Your majesty, your majesty, I really am framed, you must help me”

Ji Wu Jiu looked at Sun Gui Ren coldly, “You said you are framed, but is there any evidence?”

“I....i....”

“That means you don't have” after saying that, Ji Wu Jiu laid back to the chair,

looked at Xian Concubine and kept quiet. The meaning should be, you decide what to do.

Xian Concubine, receiving the message from Ji Wu Jiu, she felt calmer. Actually, she also knows that there is something wrong, but in front of her was a chance, she should use it properly. After sleeping one night at Kun Ning Palace, he has not been to her Yao Yue Palace, although she said that Ye Zhen Zhen would not be able to persuade the emperor, but in her heart she still does not feel comfortable. So now with this chance she wants to use it to show Ye Zhen Zhen.

Xian Concubine's tone got more serious "Sun Gui Ren, who is the other person?"

"I don't have!!"

"I know that the empress normally is very kind to all of you, but you all are getting too arrogant, and no longer afraid. I am not same with the empress's, not so good tempered, today, if you don't speak the truth there would be worst punishment awaiting you.:

Here it comes! This evil woman will not let the empress go, Zhuang Concubine calmed herself and said "The empress is very busy, surely it would be impossible to know every little detail that happens in the palace, than only it will allow these people to act like this"

"What you said is true, the empress does not have 3 heads and 6 hands, of course she can only look over the things that are happening directly near her"

Zhuang Concubine was speechless. What Xian Concubine meant was very obvious, this case happened under Zhuang Concubine's eyelids, you can't even take care of your ownself, now you still want to help others?

Ji Wu Jiu merely raised his eye brows and took a sip out of the tea cup he just held.

Xian Concubine looked at Ji Wu Jiu, and saw that he does not have any expression, so she tries to ask, "Your majesty, according to you, how should we deal with this case?"

"Now the inner palace is under the care of the both of you, you can decide" Ji Wu Jiu placed down the teacup, and looked at Xian Concubine peacefully, "but

since you have decided that she has committed the wrong doing, than be sure to find out the other person involve as well.”

Xian Concubine nodded, “I understand”. Now this matter would be a bit more troublesome, if Sun Gui Ren was really framed, then from where will she find the other man out? Furthermore, Ji Wu Jiu is very clever, even if it was a fake one, she would need to be very careful about it, and cannot allow for any loophole.

No matter what, it has come to this stage, it is already too late to change her decision. So Xian Concubine said “People, bring Sun Gui Ren to the criminal department to force the truth out of her. As for Zhuang Concubine sis....”

Zhuang Concubine stood up and kneeled, “Your majesty I did not know it happened, please punish me”

“Since you accepted your fault, then you will have no income for half a year and will be grounded for a month”

Ji Wu Jiu just finished his sentence, when a voice can be heard from outside, a sweet voice that also carries a hint of power.

“Wait——”

Chapter 22

Ji Wu Jiu just finished his verdict, when he heard the “wait” beyond the door, all in the hall also turned and look at the door. Ye Zhen Zhen was slowly pushed in by Su Yue. She was wearing a dark red robe, embroidered with colourful small birds, that were very cute, she was wearing a outer clothing that has one gold embroidered phoenix, with a pearl encrusted on the phoenix’s head, looking very peaceful. Her cloth’s was meant to bring a meaning of a hundred birds looking at the phoenix.

Ye Zhen Zhen glanced through everyone that was there and ended with Ji Wu Jiu’s face. He was looking at her as well, but his gaze was on her hands. In her soft and snow white left hand, she was holding two walnuts. The diameter of the walnuts is around one a half inch, the shape is like a peach bun, the skin colour is very red, the pattern and texture of the walnuts are also very smooth, and shiny. This type of walnut is the best there is in terms of antique walnuts, and looking at its surface, it surely has been used for many years, really the cream of the crop.

But, these walnuts is slightly bigger than the normal walnuts, as Ye Zhen Zhen’s hands are considered small, and to hold both and still turning them around, it seems that it is slightly uncoordinated.

Zhuang Concubine and Xian Concubine stood up to greet her, and Xian Concubine had to move to give her space as well, to give her the second best seat in the hall. Ye Zhen Zhen was pushed by Su Yue to Ji Wu Jiu’s side, and stopped. The whole time, Ji Wu Jiu’s eyes has only been following Ye Zhen Zhen’s turning left hand, with smile that is slowly creeping up on his face. Ye Zhen Zhen thought that Ji Wu Jiu only wanted the good things in her hands, so she pretended that she didn’t notice.

After both Zhuang Concubine and Xian Concubine sat down, she finally said “Your majesty, is there any thing that I can’t see here?”

Xian Concubine immediately tried to answer “I ask for forgiveness, your majesty, I made the decision, afraid that I will disturb you so I did not inform

you.”

“I was speaking to the emperor” Ye Zhen Zhen started with showing some power first.

Xian Concubine’s head dropped “I apologize”

Ji Wu Jiu said “we are trying to investigate a case here, both evidence and witness is here, what you think my empress?”

Ye Zhen Zhen ordered someone to bring up the evidence, looking through it, and then turned towards the kneeling maid servant Xiao Zhu, smiled and said “I actually have a question I want to ask the witness”

Xiao Zhu heard Ye Zhen Zhen’s voice tone and knew it wouldn’t be good, so she looked on the floor and didn’t dare to look up.

“I ask you, you said you saw a man entered Sun Gui Ren’s room, was when exactly and from where?”

“Your majesty, I saw him entering yesterday at 9.20, I personally saw him entered from the window.”

At 9.20, the main gate is not locked yet, this man went into Han Guang Palace proudly? Did he think that the guarding eunuch’s are blind?” Ye Zhen Zhen said and her tone got more stronger.

“I think he climbed the wall...”

“This is also another possibility” Ye Zhen Zhen nodded, “I ask you again, did you happen to see that person’s face properly?”

“Replying to your majesty, the sky was dark, without proper lighting, I did not manage to see his face properly, but I remember he was wearing the guard’s clothing”

Ye Zhen Zhen looked at the clothes held by Su Feng, it was a guard’s clothings. “then did you see him leave?”

“I have not seen anyone leave”

“Why did you only notify now?”

“I was afraid I saw wrongly, and wrongly accused Gui Ren, so I was

contemplating”

After some thinking, Ye Zhen Zhen continued “ according to you, he climbed over the wall to enter, and since it didn’t rain yesterday, then there should be some foot prints on the wall. Wang You Cai, bring a few people with you and look for clues, if you find it, then fine.. if you can’t find it.... “ her voice was gradually lowered and she did not complete her sentence.

“I, I also didn’t know how did the man came in, I only saw that he was under the window, I ask your majesty to check properly”

“Of course I would investigate properly, I would not accuse the innocent, but” She stopped and continued “ I would not let go of any ill intention person.” She then asked Su Feng over, and whispered to her. Su Feng nodded and went out.

Arching his brows, Ji Wu Jiu asked “so, will the empress be reinvestigating this case?”

Ye Zhen Zhen took a sip of tea, and answered “to reinvestigate or not, the evidence will talk. Furthermore Xian Concubine is a clever person, the case that she has gave verdict to, definitely would be trustworthy”

Xian Concubine’s complexion got dark, she used her handkerchief and wiped her mouth, cleared her throat just only wanted to say something, when Ye Zhen Zhen added “Your majesty, don’t you think so?”

Therefore Xian Concubine’s words were swallowed back. She turned to Ji Wu Jiu, he seem to be in a good mood, although he tried to hide his facial expression, but his eyes shows that he is happy, to the point where he did not say anything eventhough Ye Zhen Zhen just spite her, and he was only interested in looking at the show now.

Xian Concubine felt her heart turn abit cold.

After a while, Wang You Cai came back and said “Informing your majesty and the empress, I have searched through properly, we did not find any evidence of people climbing the wall”

Ye Zhen Zhen saw Xiao Zhu and Xian Concubine seems to have something to say, so she took the initiative to help them “even if there isn’t, it also can’t prove much, perhaps this person has a very good martial arts, that can step on snow

without leaving traces.”

That skill only existed in legends, although that was what Ye Zhen Zhen said, it was still not really possible, especially in the ears of the expert Ji Wu Jiu. But he also did not say anything and only looked at Ye Zhen Zhen, with a heart to tease her, “so that is all?”

“Of course not, let’s move to the evidence, this is a guard’s clothing, but the person who place this item there forgot about something. This set of cloths is new, there is still the new clothes smell, it should not have been worn by anyone before. If Sun Gui Ren really had something with that guard, the cloths should be worn before, and should appear worn.”

“If Sun Gui Ren made that item for him?” Xian Concubine asked.

“Good question, from the material and sewing techniques of this cloths, it should not be from our palace. It should be distributed by the guards office. Clothes from the guards office are normally made by outside and was given the job by the finance department to the local seamstress.” Ye Zhen Zhen looked at Xian Concubine when she said the word finance department, and looked at Xian Concubine with a hidden meaning.

There was a lump of blood stuck in the throat of Xian Concubine, and even if she wants she can’t get it out. The empress only looked at her, and did not mention that she was suspicious, so she didn’t and couldn’t deny. Looking at Ji Wu Jiu again, he was looking at her too, then immediately Xian Concubine’s eyes got red “Your majesty....”

“If you want to exchange lover’s gaze, please wait till later, I am still doing serious investigating here.” Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly said.

Xian Concubine closed her mouth.

“Therefore this cloth is from the guards office, and was given to the guards. Not something made by Sun Gui Ren, also not taken off from the soldier, also not possible that Sun Gui Ren got someone to get it for her to gift him — this type of present the other has plenty, how would she be gift him these. Then all is left is one possibility” Ye Zhen Zhen stopped and took a sip of tea.

“What is the possibility?” Ji Wu Jiu asked.

“Most probably it was the guard got muddle head and placed his new clothes here at Sun Gui Ren’s room, and ask her to help him keep it first. “ Although this might not be really possible but at this moment this should be the only reason left.

Sun Gui Ren thought that there was hope, but started crying again “I am framed!!”

“You close your mouth” Ye Zhen Zhen frowned, “all you said was that sentence, so bothersome... Xian Concubine, what do you think about my explanation, can it be accepted?”

Xian Concubine replied while nodding “It seems like this could only be the reason, your majesty is wise”

“Wrong” Ye Zhen Zhen laughed, “I am wise, but that explanation was a huge mistake. This cloths is identical with the guards clothings, that is true, but it is not any of the palace’s guards cloths”

Hearing her explanation, even Ji Wu Jiu got shocked, “Why are you so sure?”

“Your majesty have you forgotten? All the guards in the palace have identity numbers, this number is given to the guards to keep track of their identity and this number is sew on to the collar of their clothes. Normally it can’t be seen properly, but if something unfortunate were to happen, it is useful to differentiate their identity then.”

Ji Wu Jiu looked at Ye Zhen Zhen “of course I know the guards have identity numbers, I didn’t know it was sew on the collar”

“Your majesty, you are so busy with the court matters, of course it would be normal for you to be not clear with these matters” Ye Zhen Zhen said and flipped the clothes again, “The collar of this cloth do not have any numbers, surely it was stolen before reaching the guard’s office, at the finance department.”

Finance Department was mentioned again, Xian Concubine’s face is almost green in colour.

“I daresay, Sun Gui Ren perhaps you have offended someone, that person wanted you to die, so they thought of something so evil, that implicated the emperor’s name, such evil people. However this plan has so many faults, Xian

Concubine did not properly investigate and made you took the fault, and did not put the emperor's pride into account, it was a little too foolish. "Ye Zhen Zhen said and smiled at Xian Concubine.

Xian Concubine immediately kneeled " Your majesty, I was too anxious to protect your face, and wanted to quickly settle the case. Although the evidence is not trustworthy, there is still the witness, Xiao Zhu said she it herself?" And she looked at Xiao Zhu, in her heart thinking, as long as Xiao Zhu kept on saying she saw what happened, then even without the evidence, according to Ji Wu Jiu's personality surely he would not end it easily.

"Really, I saw it personally" Xiao Zhu immediately said.

"Really? Su Feng?"

"I am here", Su Feng walked over, in her hands there was a pouch, and was brought forward to Ye Zhen Zhen. " Your majesty, I gotten this from Xiao Zhu's living quarter."

Xiao Zhu upon seeing that item, her face changed, without any strength left in her, she just sat on the floor.

Ye Zhen Zhen took the pouch, opened and search through, besides the quite a sum of money, there was also a good grade jewelry, she looked through the pouch again and looked at Xiao Zhu, "you are just a small maid servant, where did you get so much money and these jewelries?" Surely you didn't steal them did you?"

"No, no , no,.. I didn't.. " Xiao Zhu shook her head and denied.

"Of course I know you didn't, someone asked you to frame Sun Gui Ren, and gift you these items. Sun Gui Ren was leaving in the side court, with very little people by her side, that allowed you to plan this, is that correct?"

Xiao Zhu kept shaking her head "I did not.. I did not... "

"I suspected you from the start, so I let Su Feng searched your room, and these are the clues. Since you aren't able to tell where these things come from, then why don't you let me help you investigate? Just now you have already seen my capability, with this pouch and the jewelries, if I want to know where it came from, it would not be hard. I will give you another chance, if you speak the truth

now I will spare your life, if I were to get the answer myself... hehe....”

Although Ye Zhen Zhen purposely tried to force out a cold laugh, to create a scary effect, but due to her voice problem, her laugh did not appear to have the effect she wanted, but more like a female, making everyone in the hall feel goosebumps on their hands. Ji Wu Jiu thought that there was a worm climbing on his body, and quickly stopped Ye Zhen Zhen “ If you don’t want to speak the truth, then flogged to death immediately. Feng You De.”

“Here”

“I will say, I will say, !! Your majesty please spare me, empress niang niang please spare me!!!” Xiao Zhu cried non stop on the floor.

Ye Zhen Zhen, Ji Wu Jiu, Xian Concubine, the three of them was returning to their own place. Ji Wu Jiu and Ye Zhen Zhen was heading to the same place, and headed towards the east. Xian Concubine was standing at her place and see them leave together, with a sad expression.

“What is that in your hands?” Ji Wu Jiu was looking at her left hand, he couldn’t take it anymore and asked.

“Walnut, this is ‘Man Tian Xing’, Wang You Cai said it is hundred over years, holding it the hands, the feeling is rather good” Ye Zhen Zhen was praising the walnuts, and looking up she saw Ji Wu Jiu looking at the walnuts in earnest, so she looked down again and said “Your majesty if you like it, I will ask him to search some for you”

“No need, I have them myself”

Ye Zhen Zhen was looking down, and did not see the smile creeping on his face, “Your majesty, I have something I don’t understand”

“what?”

“Today, Xian Concubine was investigating the case, as per your level, it is not possible that you couldn’t tell that Sun Gui Ren was innocent, but...”

“But did not do anything?” Ji Wu Jiu continued for her.

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded.

“You were to anxious” Ji Wu Jiu answered

Ye Zhen Zhen was trying to understand his words, Anxious? Anxious?? She was anxious to clear this case properly, if she was not anxious, slowly investigate.. slowly investigate.. in the end, by the time the truth comes out... Sun Gui Ren would have been wrongly accused, and be sent to the criminal bureau and be treated by the punishments. In another words, till that time, the case that was personally gave verdict by Xian Concubine, her personally wearing the green hat for Ji Wu Jiu... then... Xian Concubine’s fault would be bigger than now....

Ye Zhen Zhen got shocked.

Ji Wu Jiu wants to punish Xian Concubine? This Ye Zhen Zhen could have guess a little, because this half a month plus, Ji Wu Jiu did not go to Yao Yue Palace, but she don’t know what Xian Concubine did wrong to Ji Wu Jiu.

But... he didn’t have to hate it that much right? Xian Concubine was someone he dotes on, and also to punish her, he wanted to sacrifice an innocent person as well..

This man, how can he be so cold hearted.

Chapter 23

Disclaimer : Starting part of this chapter may not be too suitable for underage people. Read at your own risk? Hahaha.. This chapter is very fluffy to me!

That night, Ji Wu Jiu, slept at Kun Ning Palace.

Ye Zhen Zhen believed her broken leg would hinder him from doing anything, so she allowed him to do what he wants.

In the middle of the night, Ji Wu Jiu woke up. No one touched him, nor was he getting warm, but he still woke up, with wide eyes looking up and thoughts floating away. Suddenly in his views he saw a floating pair of hands, snow white and soft.

Truthfully, the emperor's bed business is much more open than the normal people, their face are thicker too, not really bothered or afraid that other people might see. But now, he is stealthily holding a woman's hand and doing that, it truly isn't something he should be proud of, it made him appear to unsatisfied in that matter.

However, the thing he is doing now, although not something to be proud of, and kind of not right, he finds it quite exciting, and it was something that he has never experienced before with other women.

That was why he was very happy, and confused.

Ye Zhen Zhen still does not know that happened. When she woke up in the morning she only felt that she had a nice sleep. After having breakfast, Wang You Cai hurried in to report "Your Majesty, Sun Gui Ren committed suicide!"

Because she just had breakfast, all her blood was going to her stomach, so her reaction was very slow. "Which Sun Gui Ren?"

"The Sun Gui Ren from Han Guang Palace, the one who got accused yesterday"

"Died?"

"Not yet, people helped her done already, Zhuang Concubine got someone to

report to you immediately. Do you want to go and take a look?”

“No need, to commit suicide early in the morning, I think she does not really want to die. You go and report this matter to the emperor. Su Yue, pick a few jewelry and gift Sun Gui Ren, and say, that her innocent are known in both the emperor and empress, in the future there would not be anyone daring to gossip about her, and ask her to sincerely care for the emperor, don’t need to think about others, and not allowed to make me and the emperor worried”

Both of them left quickly. Ye Zhen Zhen thought that although what Sun Gui Ren did was quite fake, but she was the victim yesterday, most probably Ji Wu Jiu will give her some face and do something about it. Exactly like how she thought, Wang You Cai returned and said that the emperor promoted Sun Gui Ren two ranks up as a 5th rank Mei Ren, and gave her a title “Zhen”, seems like the cold person who was watching Xian Concubine bully another person was another person.

Seeing that Ji Wu Jiu was being so generous today, Ye Zhen Zhen also granted her more gifts, thinking that he seems to be in a good mood today. She was actually thinking about another matter, and seeing that he is in a good mood, she would talk with him about it as well.

“You want to add western teaching at Guo Zi Jian?” Ji Wu Jiu was listening to Ye Zhen Zhen’s advice, and was surprised. Guo Zi Jian is the school for future politicians, and has only had taught about Chinese literatures, and to suddenly add a unknown western teaching there, even if he as the emperor were to agree, the old ministers and teachers there might not necessary accept.

“Yes, recently I have been going through some western people’s history, although some is very bad, but there are also somethings that are worthy to learn. I as a woman, learning these things may not be useful, why not let our Da Qi men be exposed to these to learn something new. Western teaching does not need to be a compulsory subject, just put it at Guo Zi Jian, and let Mr Dou teach, anyone interested can just join if they want to.

When “As a woman” came out from Ye Zhen Zhen, Ji Wu Jiu heard her tone was very unwilling, and he thought it was funny. He kept quiet for a while, and answered, “This matter needs to be properly planned”

“Do not drag it too long, the faster the better. If you are afraid people cannot accept it, then why not let me be the leader of the western studies, and let Mr Dou be a teacher only. I will carry the hat of the empress, I think they would dare to say anything”

Ji Wu Jiu shook his head, “You are a “woman”, to mix around with men, it would not be good, as for freedom of speech it is not something that can be stopped completely, it is better to go with the flow”

“then, your majesty....”

Ji Wu Jiu looked up, and gazed into her eyes and asked “why don’t you first tell me why are you so anxious?”

Ye Zhen Zhen took a deep breath, and looked back seriously, “Your majesty, in this world, there is a place we don’t understand, but they are observing us. What is scarier is that they have strong arm power, they can build stronger and bigger war ships than us, and they also have gun powder that are equally strong as us, this type of opponent, although not enemy now, we still have to be on our guards. Instead of waiting for them to attack us first, why don’t we first understand them so that we can prepare first”

“How do you know if they will attack us?”

“Their king is supportive of public criminals like stealing, their pirates/criminals, as long as they bring back money, they can be big heroes, and be respected by the citizens, is that not enough? Etiquettes cannot win over crime, towards these type of people, we can only use force against them. The reason why they haven’t attack us yet, is not because our Da Qi has strong arm forces and still can win over them, but because the cost to fight with us all the way from the west would be very costly, not something they can afford right now. Although this is now, but who can know what will happen in the future, so that is why now we must first take actions and to guard”

Ji Wu Jiu was quiet, and did not speak for a while.

“Your Majesty?” Ye Zhen Zhen thought that he was trying to think of ways to reject her idea.

He stood up from his chair and walked towards her, with slow but strong

steps. Ye Zhen Zhen looked at him walking over, and not sure why she looked down and not facing him, and stared at his shoes, and seeing it get closer by the moment.

“You think very far ahead”, pausing for a while Ji Wu Jiu’s voice was heard again on top of her head “I cannot compare”

Ye Zhen Zhen saw the closed up belt of his, black based with 2 golden embroidered dragons, with a huge pearl in the middle,... “your majesty, you overly praised me, I am a slow and straight person, what I see I will say, cannot be compared to your majesty, you must have more thinks to consider”

Most probably after getting praised by her, Ji Wu Jiu’s mood got better “I want to gift you something, what do you want?”

Ye Zhen Zhen did not give him face “no need, I do not lack anything”

“I want to gift you, look up”

Ye Zhen Zhen looked up at him. Today he was wearing a dark red robe, material of the clothes, she can’t tell, but it was soft and fitting, with dark embroideries. His outfit made him look calm and now as strong as the dragon robes, bringing out an air of laziness.

Now, his bend his body, looking at her, with curved lips and smiling eyes.

Looking up at his handsome and calm face, Ye Zhen Zhen continued to look at him, and he was looking at her without saying anything as well. After a while, her shoulder got stiff, and her head is getting heavier. Therefore looking at his handsome face, Ye Zhen Zhen starts to think of many things.. Why is his face so nice to see...

“What are you thinking of?” Ji Wu Jiu suddenly asked.

“You are really good looking”

“....”

As he was never praised straight to his face before, Ji Wu Jiu was stunned for a moment. Ye Zhen Zhen thought that she really got muddle head, to actually say such things. She does not dare to look at Ji Wu Jiu anymore, and looked down, and to allow the peony on her hair face Ji Wu Jiu instead.

Ji Wu Jiu finally came back to senses, it seems like he got flirted with again? As the emperor, he surely can't be flirted with by a woman. Thinking about that, he brought up his hands and held on the Ye Zhen Zhen's chin, and slowly made her look up and looked into her eyes, "I have a good looking face? So this was the present you wanted?" Not waiting for Ye Zhen Zhen to react, he bend down and gave her a light peck on her cheeks.

This was the first time she got kissed by someone, she felt that there was a soft touch on her face, Ye Zhen Zhen blushed and turned away from him.

His lips stretched all the way to his ears, and asked "Was that enough?"

Ye Zhen Zhen did not reply, and wanted to leave, Ji Wu Jiu did not let her go, like a playboy that teases girls, he used some strength to held her chair down. Ye Zhen Zhen had no choice but to hold his arms with her hands, to avoid him initially but he also changed his position, Ye Zhen Zhen was speechless, and since she did not want to be taken lightly by him, she was trying her best to not lose.

When Feng You De brought in tea, he saw the scene of both of them fighting, and scared him, he fell to the ground kneeling, "your majesty...." How can you use strength... "empress niang niang... " why did you raise your hand towards the emperor.

Ji Wu Jiu stopped, took a cup of tea and just before he wanted to take a sip, he saw the unhappy face of Ye Zhen Zhen, so he gave the cup in his hands to her and took another for himself.

To Feng You De, the emperor and the empress seems to be in a good relationship, why is the both of them putting up an act, who is it for?

Taking a sip of tea, Ye Zhen Zhen just wanted to saying goodbye, a maid servant from Ci Ning Palace came in and greeted them.

"Empress, the empress dowager requires you to drop by Ci Ning Palace to discuss about something"

"What is the matter?"

"It is about Miss Xu's title when she enters the palace, in detail"

"Let's go together" Ji Wu Jiu said, and personally pushed Ye Zhen Zhen's chair.

Ye Zhen Zhen was thinking in her heart that this time, Ji Wu Jiu will use her as his gun again, although she thinks she will be able to fire up accordingly, just not sure where the gun will be facing this time round.

While thinking, she took a look at the back, and saw the hands on her wheel chair handle, long fingers that turned white due to using too much strength can be seen.

If you don't want to push don't have to force yourself, Ye Zhen Zhen scorned.

Chapter 24

When Ji Wu Jiu wore plain clothes to visit the markets to see how the citizens are doing, he once saw people at the market haggling prices, like a war, and never ending, it can be compared with the bickering of the ministers at court.

Today, he was lucky to be able to witness the haggling process of inner palace women; The empress dowager and the empress was negotiating about what level title and how should Xu Wei Rong enter the palace.

Ye Zhen Zhen was thinking, no matter what Xu Wei Rong is still related to the empress dowager, she will be closer to empress dowager compared to Xian Concubine, so it will be best to not have a high position for that woman, if not there will be more problems later.

Furthermore, even if the emperor wants to give title to any woman, she can't enter with a high title from the start, Xian Concubine was a different case, she was brought in with that title thanks to Ye Zhen Zhen's marriage to the emperor. Xu Wei Rong's father is just a small minister, definitely did not make any big contributions to the country, and also not to mention was pushed down by Ye Xiu Ming, so the empress dowager cannot use the family status as a reason.

Ye Zhen Zhen was clear that although she was not officially in bad terms with the empress dowager, but they both know they don't like each other, so she didn't really give face to her, so she was trying her best to haggle with her. The empress dowager said that Xu Wei Rong "Gentle and humble", Ye Zhen Zhen replied "all the woman in this palace, which one is not gentle and humble", the empress dowager said "good in literature and arts", Ye Zhen Zhen replied " why not ask her to become a female scholar, and help the emperor at the court, it would be the same, why should a woman with such knowledge be covered by the woman that only knows how to be pretty here", the empress dowager said Xu Wei Rong is "a well known pretty maiden in the capital" Ye Zhen Zhen laughed coldly "if the whole capital knows she is pretty, looks like she has been showing her face very frequently".. Empress dowager :.....

Empress dowager can't continue saying anything.

She is a normally quiet person, meeting Ye Zhen Zhen , this type of straightforward person that does not even takes time to take a breath before replying, and what ever she says is a strong wind that will slap the other persons face, making her unable to withstand anymore.

Therefore, the empress dowager look at Xian Concubine. Xian Concubine was brought here purposely, thinking that it would be better if there were someone backing her, but who knew that Xian Concubine will remain quiet as well.

Of Course Xian Concubine understood what the empress dowager wanted, but these two days, she slowly came to a realization, on to why the emperor was angry with her, most probably because he didn't liked her interfering with Xu Wei Rong's case, if that is the case, she shouldn't say anything now. Also she found out, Ye Zhen Zhen appear to be abit crazy ,and will sometimes speak nonsense but in reality she really is someone clever, she, Fang Liu Yue did things too rashly, and made a mistake, next time definitely no more.

That's why Xian Concubine was sitting down quietly, not looking at anyone, not saying anything.

The empress dowager than turned to look at Ji Wu Jiu, supposedly Xu Wei Rong is brought in by the empress dowager for the emperor, the emperor will only be required to wait for the pretty maiden to be sent to his arms, and previously he was not involved as well, but now if he takes the initiative to give the title to her, the empress would not be able to do anything.

However, the person who said that he wanted his cousin sister to enter the palace, today he is like Xian Concubine, only sitting and not saying anything.

The empress felt weird that the two of them who proposed the idea are now keeping quiet, initially she thought she will win the argument, but now she wants to vomit blood from the words that are coming out from Ye Zhen Zhen. Both of them continued to negotiate, one of them wants to give Xu Wei Rong a second rank title, another one wanted to simply give her a ninth rank Shu Nu, and according to both sides argument, the rank starts to head to the middle, in the end they finally came to an agreement, sixth rank, Cai Ren.

Coming out from Kun Ning Palace, Ji Wu Jiu said, "It didn't know that your haggling skills were so great"

Thinking about how the empress dowager was early, she was actually rather tired, but hearing the praise from him now, she got abit happy, and said rashly, “of course, next time if you divorce me, I will be a merchant, I think I will be able to get a fortune at least”

Ji Wu Jiu stopped walking, and frown “When did I say I want to divorce you?”

Ye Zhen Zhen looked down, thinking in her heart, it would be too late, when I hear you say that.

Seeing Ye Zhen Zhen not saying anything, Ji Wu Jiu opened his mouth and wanted to say “I would not divorce you” but he felt that even if he said that, the both of them would not believe it as well, so he closed his mouth and continued to be silent.

When Ye Zhen Zhen returned to Kun Ning Palace, she was down, thinking that everyday passing by like this was truly pointless, she has to fight back the various smart people in the palace, and also to avoid the traps set by Ji Wu Jiu, and also the scariest was not sure when will he let the knife he is holding drop.

He can let her live, he can also let her die.

Ye Zhen Zhen thought that maybe she needs to attract his attention as well, but thinking back, on how Li Concubine boot licks to him, on how good Xian Concubine treats him, he has never been soft hearted to them, what would it be for Ye Xiu Ming’s granddaughter?

Ye Zhen Zhen starts to get moody, and wants to go out, so she made Su Yue and the rest stay at Kun Ning Palace, alone she went to Tai Ye Lake. Su Yue was worried, so she stood outside Xi Hua Gate, and look at her from afar.

It was early winter, it was dark at the side of Tai Ye Lake, even the sky was gloomy, Ye Zhen Zhen mood was getting worse. She stopped her chair by the side of the lake, and looked at a big bird nest that was on the tree, the leaves have all dropped, so there was nothing covering the bird nest.

Ye Zhen Zhen was holding her gun, and wanted to test it out on the bird nest. The gun has been reloaded by her a massive container with gun powder that can shoot a few times. She held the gun and tried to aim, towards the bird nest and

shot.

Peng!

The gun let out a black smoke, and started to shake, Ye Zhen Zhen felt that there was a pain of something tearing apart between her thumb and pointing finger, not knowing her own reaction the gun flew from her hands. Her natural reaction was to go backwards, however the chair was not stable enough for the sudden action, she lost her balance and fell into the water.

Putong!

Su Yue saw these scenes from afar and got scared, but when the lake made a huge water splash, she finally reacted “Niang Niang!, anyone here? The empress fell into the water!” Nearby a few maid servants and eunuchs ran towards Ye Zhen Zhen. Before they were even near, they saw at the side of the lake there was someone jumping into the water, and in a short while, Ye Zhen Zhen was brought up by that person.

Ye Zhen Zhen was not in any danger, she only drank a few mouthfuls of water, but she was very cold, her hands and legs were in pain. After shaking some water from her hair, she looked up and saw who saved her, then she could not take it anymore she started to cry, “Cousin brother, wu, wu, cousin brother!” In her heart there were many unhappy things, and felt that something was tying up her heart, that made her unable to breathe, so she could only cry, her tears could not be stopped.

Lu Li has never seen her cry like this, and thought she was scared, and slowly patted her back, lowered his voice and consoled her “don’t cry Zhen Zhen, don’t cry, all is well”

Su Yue was leading a group of maid servants and eunuchs, running towards them, “empress!” She looked into the lake and saw that the wheelchair was broken, and even if they brought it up, it could not be used anymore. Su Yue quickly called the people at the back “You guys, carry the empress back to the palace”

Lu Li let go of Ye Zhen Zhen, and a few eunuchs came forward, carrying Ye Zhen Zhen’s arms and legs separately, one of the eunuchs did not use his strength properly and touched her broken leg, and in exchange Ye Zhen Zhen screamed in pain, her crying increased.

Lu Li was unhappy, and pushed away the eunuchs, and carried Ye Zhen Zhen up, and seeing that she was finally quiet in his arms, he frowned and sighed.

Su Yue was a bit worried, "Lieutenant Lu... " he is a man, to hold the empress like this, it would not be proper.

Ye Zhen Zhen stopped her, "I want to return faster" her voice still sounded like she was crying.

Lu Li did not put Ye Zhen Zhen down, and said "let's go". The empress was already hurt, needs to quickly returned to the palace to be taken care of, people should not say much about this most probably.

From Tai Ye Lake to Kun Ning Palace there are two routes, one is from the imperial garden, and another is via the front palace. Lu Li looking at the shivering and wet person in his arms, didn't want to use the longer route, so he bring Ye Zhen Zhen through the doors towards the front palace, and when he pass by Yang Xin Hall, he saw that Ji Wu Jiu was heading towards Yang Xin Hall.

"Greetings to the emperor!" Because he was carrying Ye Zhen Zhen, he couldn't kneel down.

"What happened?" Ji Wu Jiu saw Lu Li carrying a girl from a far, so when he walked near, he saw that the woman was actually Ye Zhen Zhen.

"Replying to the emperor, the empress was unlucky and fell into the water, Lieutenant Lu is sending the empress back to the palace" Su Yue answered.

Ji Wu Jiu looked at the person in the arms of Lu Li quietly. Her clothes was all wet, sticking to her body, and her forehead had wet hair sticking onto it, with a pale face: her whole body turning green from the cold, and was shivering non stop in Lu Li's arms.

Not knowing why also, Ji Wu Jiu felt that this scene was a bit uncomfortable to him. He walked towards them, and took Ye Zhen Zhen into his arms from Lu Li, and looked at Lu Li without an expression.

Lu Li immediately kneeled "I was too anxious to save her, and offended the empress's body, please punish me your majesty!"

Ji Wu Jiu looked down at Ye Zhen Zhen's crying face "Forget it, it is even"

“Thank you your majesty”

Ji Wu Jiu carried Ye Zhen Zhen and walked towards her palace, in between the tall red walls and empty corridors, they brought up colours to the scenery. The cold wind was blowing towards them, when it hit Ye Zhen Zhen’s body she was going to be numb from the cold.

Ye Zhen Zhen was then a bit impatient, and said “ Can you be faster, I am dying of cold here”

Ji Wu Jiu replied “You don’t want your legs anymore?”

Not wanting to say anything, she closed her eyes, today it seems this road is especially long, like it has no ending.

After walking a while, Ji Wu Jiu suddenly said, “why did you cry just now?”

Why do you bother, Ye Zhen Zhen thought.

“I have never seen you cry before, my empress”

Note: i am so tempted to translate the following chapters.. but my work T_T. arggh.. dilemmaaaaa... maybe after lunch hour.. ehehehehehe

Uhm, in case you guys don’t know, i post up the moment i finish translating them, and each chapter takes around 1 hour or so (depending on the length) and seldom edit them.. hahaha... so if there are any spelling mistakes or grammar errors, kindly forgive. I will somehow next time, someday, fix them.. i hope? kekekekee

Chapter 25

‘Replying to your majesty, the empress got a cold, will need to recuperate for a few days, I will go open a remedy for this, what is important is to be mindful of fever. Also the leg injury on the empress leg has still not recovered properly, and entering cold water and getting cold wind, will need to be extra careful next time, in order to avoid any side effects later.’ The doctor said after carefully checking Ye Zhen Zhen.

Ye Zhen Zhen already changed into dry clothes, with 3 layers of blanket on her, like a small mountain. Now only did she felt abit warmer, and colour has returned to her face.

Su Feng and another maid servant was using dry clothes to help her dry her hair. Her hair is long and thick, not easy to dry. Ji Wu Jiu saw the bandage on Ye Zhen Zhen’s hand and asked “The wound on your hand, what is that about?”

“Your majesty, the empress’s hand there is a part where it split, most probably she hit somewhere when she fell into the water”

Ye Zhen Zhen slowly opened her eyes, and explained “it was caused by the gun, it exploded and caused my hand to split”

“You are too over!” Ji Wu Jiu scolded. Explosion is not a small thing, if light one will sustain injuries, if it was stronger one could lose their life, there was once a person that got exploded badly, when he was testing the gun. Today, Ye Zhen Zhen only injured her hand, it can be considered very lucky.

Seeing that he wants to scold her somemore Ye Zhen Zhen quickly covered her head with the blanket, and kept quiet. Ji Wu Jiu was speechless, and pat her head twice, “come out, don’t fake death”

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly thought of something, and showed her head and told Wang You Cai “quickly go and get me back my gun”

Wang You Cai, just wanted to go out when Ji Wu Jiu called him back, “hold it. Feng You De, you go and take, after that keep it at Gan Qing Palace”

Ye Zhen Zhen was unhappy “that belongs to me”

“Even you belongs to me”

“....”

Ji Wu Jiu straighten up, and calmed Ye Zhen Zhen, “alright now, rest first, you are no longer allowed to play with guns, this is my order”

At night, Ye Zhen Zhen really got fever, her whole body was very warm, and she was mumbling. Ji Wu Jiu stretched his hands and touched her forehead, and got up and asked the maid servant to bring over the medicine. Though, Ye Zhen Zhen was in a daze from fever, she still refused to drink the bitter medicine, so when Su Yue fed her a spoon, she pushed it away, in the end she decided to closed her mouth tight, and made the medicine hit her mouth and spilled on the pillow.

Can't help it anymore, Ji Wu Jiu can only hold her in his arms, and held her chin with one of his hands, to force her to open her mouth. Su Yue then feed the medicine into her mouth, and because her jaw was held and she can't spit it out, with a few movements from her throat, she finally swallowed the medicine. Ji Wu Jiu then helped pat her chest to avoid her from choking. After a while, the both of them finally got the whole bowl of medicine down her throat, before Ye Zhen Zhen starts to sweat, the both of them already sweat first.

Ji Wu Jiu ask Su Yue to hold outside, and he placed Ye Zhen Zhen back to the bed, and cover her up with the blankets. Ye Zhen Zhen's fever made both her cheeks red, eyes tightly closed and at the corner of her eyes there were signs of tears forming. Normally this woman is like a little tiger, it really was a rare sight of seeing her being weak.

After lying down, Ye Zhen Zhen started to mumble again, Ji Wu Jiu's ears perks up and tried to listen and hear her saying “Grandfather, don't marry me go to the emperor”

Sighing, Ji Wu Jiu mumbled to himself “you don't want to marry me, I also didn't want to marry you”

Just that, now the rice has been cooked, both of us are a married couple. Even though there are many woman in the inner palace, but only you, will be buried

together with me later.

People say, 10 years of cultivation you will get a friendship, and 100 years of cultivation you will share the same bed” , don’t know how long did the both of us cultivate in order to gain this life’s faith. This faith, however would have been better if it didn’t happen.

The next day, when Ye Zhen Zhen got up, she found up that it had snowed the whole night, the whole place was covered in snow. Her fever has gone, and although the doctor asked her not to go outside, afraid of her getting cold again, but Ye Zhen Zhen does not want to miss the first snow this year, and wants to go out to walk. Su Yue did not manage to persuade her, so she can only wrap her up properly and pushed a warmer into her arms, and after properly checking and making sure it would be alright, only let Wang You Cai pushed her out.

Ye Zhen Zhen said she wants to go see the plum blossoms, so Wang You Cai pushed her to the imperial garden where the plum blossoms are planted, although she did not go far, she has already met a few groups of people. Ye Zhen Zhen was wearing a leather hat, with a fox muffler, with a tiger skin cape, and her whole body, only her eyes was exposed, so she appeared to be like in a parade that got greeted by people here and there.

Actually the plum blossoms that are in bloom are not too many, only a few that were anxious to bloom. Initially Ye Zhen Zhen was abit moody, there are many place to admire the snow scenery, why did everyone go towards the plum blossom garden, was the inner palace filled with people that like plum blossoms? When she saw Ji Wu Jiu, only did she realized, why everyone is gathering here.

Ji Wu Jiu saw Ye Zhen Zhen from a far, the tiger on her was really obvious.

“Greetings to the emperor, I am still injured so I cannot greet you properly, I beg for your pardon” Ye Zhen Zhen said, but since her mouth is covered, her voice appeared to be rather down.

“Are you better now?” Ji Wu Jiu said, and placed a hand onto her forehead to check. This morning when he woke up her forehead was still warm, now it seems the fever has fully subsided, undeniably, this woman’s body is really not ladylike.

His action was rather intimate, Ye Zhen Zhen was not used to it. Also not used to it were the people that were watching their interaction. Xian Concubine, Xi Consort, Wang Zhao Yi, Wen Jie Yu and others, which they all also accidentally met Ji Wu Jiu here, and seeing how good Ji Wu Jiu is treating Ye Zhen Zhen, they are all shocked.

Zhuang Concubine was there too, this woman was very smart, she took the initiative to stand beside Ye Zhen Zhen, and helped her fixed the clothes wrapping her. Ye Zhen Zhen was satisfied and started to glance through the women there. Xian Concubine already has a feel of cold and clear beauty, now she is wearing a silver cape made from fox, and with 2 plum blossoms on her hair, in the snow scenery, not only men even if the eunuch saw they will also feel their hearts beating faster. Thinking about it, most probably Ji Wu Jiu will take the chance to forgive her.

Ji Wu Jiu was in a good mood, he wants to bring his big and smile wives to take a walk at the plum blossom garden. Before they reach the garden, they saw a girl coming from that direction, wearing a red cape, and holding a white porcelain vase, in the vase there was a red plum blossom. The girl was pretty and looks gentle, such exquisite face, if not Li Concubine than who else?

Ye Zhen Zhen then only remembered, Li Concubine's grounding period is over.

Li Concubine walked over with the vase, and everyone thought she would gift it to the emperor, but who knew she would kneel in front of the empress and said "Your majesty, I saw that this plum blossom was blossoming prettily, so I took it and wanted to send it to Kun Ning Palace personally, but didn't know I would meet you here. Although not much this is my sincerity, I hope your majesty would accept it"

"Wang You Cai, why are you not helping Li Concubine up," Ye Zhen Zhen was thinking, this time Li Concubine really acted well, on such a cold day, she still kneeled on the snow, such bravery.

Wang You Cai quickly helped Li Concubine up, and a maid from Kun Ning Palace immediately took the vase from her. Ji Wu Jiu saw Li Concubine and raised his eyebrows "why empress has plum blossom, I don't have?"

Li Concubine looked at him and smiled "Your majesty, if you like I will just go

pluck another one for you”

“No need, I remember in your palace there is also one plum blossom tree”

Ji Wu Jiu was holding Xian Concubine and walked towards the garden, Ye Zhen Zhen purposely slowed down and looked at Li Concubine’s back, thinking who was so clever to give her the idea, was it really the maid servant Fan Chun? Ji Wu Jiu only punished her because she angered the empress in public, too rude, now she came to the empress and appeared to be good, to show Ji Wu Jiu, most probably what anger he has will be gone by now. Furthermore she is such a beautiful lady, she was prettier than the flowers, even if the fairies saw they will like her.

“Niang niang, what are you thinking of?” Zhuang Concubine asked

“ I was thinking this Li Concubine really looks like a plum blossom fairy today”

Zhuang Concubine pouted “No matter how good she is in acting it, she still isn’t a real fairy”

Ye Zhen Zhen knows that this time Li Concubine will make a return for sure, Xian Concubine also will return most probably, also there is the cousin sister of Ji WU Jiu, will be entering the palace in a few days. This time round the inner palace will definitely be lively. One man need to deal with so many woman, it seems like it is not easy to be an emperor, really a test to man’s body.

However, this all has nothing to do with her, she only hope that this women will know how to act, and don’t make any troubles for her.

Chapter 26

Based on appearance, Xu Wei Rong can really carry the name of being exquisite, tall and slender body, oval shaped face, snow white skin like a peeled hard boiled egg, and a pair of shining eyes. Early in the morning when she greeted Ye Zhen Zhen, supposedly her rank as a Cai Ren should be standing, but being considerate that she just received her first night, Ye Zhen Zhen let her sit.

Xu Cai Ren is the niece of the empress dowager, the emperor's cousin sister, that is why even Li Concubine and Xi Consort don't dare to do anything yet. So that is why even though yesterday night the emperor slept at her place yesterday, today there were no sour words passing by, Kun Ning Palace was in peace.

However, even with seeing others were being cautious with her, Xu Cai Ren was not happy inside. Yesterday night, it is true that Ji Wu Jiu slept next to her, but did not touch her at all, and as a woman, it is not nice to go seduce him as well.

Ye Zhen Zhen as usual gift her some items. Ji Wu Jiu has already notified earlier that she cannot give jade toads anymore, so today the gifts were not anything special, Xu Cai Ren only took a look and ask her people to keep it, and stood up to thank the empress. Thinking that because of Ye Zhen Zhen, herself can only be placed as a sixth rank Cai Ren, she doesn't really have that good of a feeling towards Ye Zhen Zhen, but because of her status, she has no choice but to give face.

The rest of the consorts starts to chat, Xi Consort said "I saw, the gifts that niang niang gave, there was a scented wood bead bracelet, it seems that the emperor also has one?"

Wen Jie Yu add on, "it really is, I saw the emperor wearing it few days ago"

Ye Zhen Zhen have too much treasures herself, most of them she can't really remember. But towards Su Yue and Su Feng, she believes that they will not gift away things that Ji Wu Jiu give her personally.

The bracelet is not given by Ji Wu Jiu to her, but a gift from another country,

there are only 2 pieces, Ji Wu Jiu thought that the scent of the bracelet is very nice so he kept one for himself, and the rest of the items was sent to Kun Ning Palace to be decided by the empress. That's how the other bracelet came to Kun Ning Palace.

Hearing about that, Xu Cai Ren immediately wore it after returning to her place. In the evening she went to visit the empress dowager alone, Ji Wu Jiu was there also, the three of them had a little chat. Xu Cai Ren was trying to observe Ji Wu Jiu's wrist, and found out that he really was wearing an identical bracelet.

When they left Ci Ning Palace, Xu Cai Ren did not bother about their difference in status and rushed towards Ji Wu Jiu and held his arms. Since she has always done this before.

"Whats so amusing?" Ji Wu Jiu asked.

"Cousin Brother" Xu Cai Ren held his hands up, and also showed her hands, "take a look"

Ji Wu Jiu heard that she called her cousin brother and not the emperor, was already abit uncomfortable, and then now he saw that the both of them are wearing the same thing, he asks "where did you get it from?"

"The empress gift it"

The empress having that item is not weird, Ji Wu Jiu took his hands back, and didn't say anything.

Xu Cai Ren got closer to him, and smiled prettily, "cousin brother and sister, a matched made pair"

Ji Wu Jiu stopped, and pushed her away gently, "was that sentence said by the empress?"

The rejection of the other party was too obvious, Xu Cai Ren looked down and said "this sentence is not good?"

"Not good, do not say it again anymore" Ji Wu Jiu said, without realizing her disappointment, he took off his bracelet and placed it into her hands, "since you like it so much, I will give this to you too" and left without bothering to see her reactions.

Xu Cai Ren looked at the bracelets in her hands, and gritted her teeth. Her anger was rising. Her, Xu Wei Rong are childhood friends with Ji Wu Jiu, there are the true matched made in heaven pair, the one that should be at his side should be me.. Just because Ye Zhen Zhen's grandfather is powerful in court, that was why cousin brother married her.

How can this matter be accepted so easily by her!

Ye Zhen Zhen don't know what happened to Ji Wu Jiu, he brought a lot of documents with him to Kun Ning Palace to look through.

Although outside it was dark already since it was winter, but inside Kun Ning Palace, with all the candle and lights around, it was very bright. There was a pot of Narcissus flower near the entrance, the white petals are releasing gentle scents that are truly refreshing.

Ye Zhen Zhen was thinking, no wonder everyone wants to be the empress, only with this Kun Ning Palace itself, she will not allow herself to be demoted.

When Ji Wu Jiu came over, Ye Zhen Zhen was playing Hua Rong Dao (a Chinese movement game like Unblock Me). The game she was playing was made to be harder by the local teacher, making it more complicated and hard. Ji Wu Jiu saw her playing it, walked over and helped her win the stage in a few moves, in exchange of Ye Zhen Zhen flipping her eyes.

After a while of work, Ji Wu Jiu gave Ye Zhen Zhen a few documents, "I see that you seem to be very free, and have nothing to do, why not you help me"

Ye Zhen Zhen receive them, but before even reading them, she felt that Ji Wu Jiu has a bad intention. The experience from avoiding traps, definitely raised her awareness. The contents of the documents seems to be normal, all with contents that requires approval from the emperor. But looking at in detail, Ye Zhen Zhen found the trap. One of them was by Fang Xiu Qing, something about changing the main soldier at Da Tong. The initial main soldier was taking the countries money as his own, so without further a due, Ji Wu Jiu sent someone there to take his head off, and to calm the army there. Now the position is empty, so Fang Xiu Qing, wrote in to suggest Li Xu as the new main soldier.

This is the problem, Li Xu is her eldest brother, Ye Xin Fang's in laws, can be counted as under the Ye Family side, but why did Fang Xiu Qing suggested him?

This Li Xu, althought Ye Zhen Zhen never see him before, but heard of him before. According to what she knew, he was a brave but temperamental person. Da Tong is a border army, there will be rebellious citizen there. As the main soldier there, that person would have to handle these situations well. Ji Wu Jiu should not agree to this matter. Furthermore in the army there is no such thing as being individualist, if the head makes a mistake the other soldiers will need to be responsible as well.

Ye Zhen Zhen thinks that the Fang Old fox, was really good in planning, giving such a huge problem to Ye Family, but of course for this matter, we still need to wait for the final decision by Ji Wu Jiu, but.. this idiot to give her this to see, what does he wants?

What can Ji Wu Jiu wants? Now he has thought it through, Ye Zhen Zhen is Ye Xiu Ming's granddaughter, but since that she is now his wife, woman that are married off are water that is poured out, no matter what, this woman belongs to Ji Family now, since it is like that, he doesn't want to trouble her anymore. But then again, since she married him, then she only needs to be by his side, and cannot side her maternal family anymore.

That is why he took that document to test Ye Zhen Zhen. The standard answer should be, Ye Zhen Zhen push back the decision making to Ji Wu Jiu, and implies that no matter what you do, I will support your decision; also even if not the standard answer, if Ye Zhen Zhen agrees to Fang Xiu Qing's suggestion, Ji Wu Jiu can accept it also.

But, Ye Zhen Zhen gave an answer that was not listed in his mind : She raised her brush, and placed a big X on the document and said "Li Xu is brave but not smart, not possible to take on this post. I think Minister Fang's is not so wise after all"

This is Ye Zhen Zhen afterall, Ji Wu Jiu thought, such straight forwardness, now even giving any extra thoughts or to cover anything, not to give him a good time.

Although bone breaking injuries requires 100 days to recover, but Ye Zhen

Zhen has a very good body to begin with, adding the great medicines that are provided, it was only 2 months plus that her legs are full recovered. This fella has chosen a very special way to celebrate her ability to jump around again.

It seems, that evening Ji Wu Jiu was working hard in Yang Xin Hall, and a Kun Ning Palace was seen running into his office, “Your Majesty, the empress has gone crazy!”

Ji Wu Jiu threw his brush, and rushed to Kun Ning Palace. Feng You De was holding a black cape chasing after him, to help him wear on.

Outside Kun Ning Palace, there was already a small gathering, there was masters and servants as well, all of them were looking up, and mouth open unconsciously, looking like a young bird waiting to be fed.

Ji Wu Jiu looked up as well, and saw that on the roof there was a person standing, he immediately shouted “Ye Zhen Zhen, you come down now!”

Ye Zhen Zhen seems to have not heard what he said. She was standing on the roof, left hand on her waist, and right hand holding a gun, and facing the sky she was laughing, “Ha! Ha! Ha! Ha!”

The people below were getting more afraid. Kun Ning Palace was big and vast, making Ye Zhen Zhen look small on it. The roof was not stable, and was high up, even it is someone skilled in martial arts, they are need to be extra cautious, not to mention we are speaking of the empress right now....

Su Yue was worried till the point of crying, in a matter of seconds, Ye Zhen Zhen gone missing in front of her eyes, the whole Kun Ning Palace had so many people, but none of them knew when she went up, and how she went up.

Wang You Cai was leading a few eunuchs and ladder, and was trying to climb up the to the roof.

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly shoot the gun towards the sky.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

The eunuch that just reached the roof got scared by the sound, shivered and dropped down with another eunuchs, and fall on top on the rest that was holding the ladder, making them turn into a ball of people.

The people watching were shocked, and all of them took a step back.

Besides Ji Wu Jiu, standing still, without any fear. His eyes looked straight up towards the person on the roof, his lips lifting.

She actually succeeded.

Enough of playing, Ye Zhen Zhen placed the gun on her waist, and started to think of ways to get down. When she came up, she used a chain claw, and she herself knows a bit of martial arts, it was not that hard to get up here.

But now, to go down, there seems to be a bit of a problem.

Wang You Cai brought the eunuchs to climb the ladder again.

This time around Ji Wu Jiu did not bother about this pride as an emperor and ran to towards the end of the roof, opened his arms and shouted to Ye Zhen Zhen. "Jump down"

Ye Zhen Zhen knows that Ji Wu Jiu is good in martial arts. So she was not worried at all, opened her arms and jumped down, like a bird flying down.

The people watching got shocked again.

Ji Wu Jiu looked up and saw Ye Zhen Zhen that was falling from the sky. This view make her looks pretty almost like a drawing. The time seems to have stopped at that moment, and in the midst of the moment he seems to have heard his own heartbeat.

Putong, Putong,

Ye Zhen Zhen has accurately fell into the arms of Ji Wu Jiu, when she fell into him, he spun the both of them one round, one of his hands removed the gun on her body and stopped.

Ji Wu Jiu then carried her princess style, and was not in a rush to put her down, but to look down and asked "how many shots?"

"Six" She answered clearly.

This time around it was Ji Wu Jiu's turn to laugh

"Ha! Ha! Ha! Ha!"

His laughter was clear and brought in a power, that was charismatic. Although

it was not painful to the ear, but it coming from Ji Wu Jiu the people there was not able to believe it. The spectators there felt a goosebump and sighed, it's the end, it's the end, another got crazy as well....

Hahahahahahahahahahahahahahaahahahahahaha... translator has gone crazy from this chapter as well.

Chapter 27

DISCLAIMER – This chapter contains slightly above 18 contents. Not detailed, but.. still.. yeah ~ don't say i didn't warn. (blush~)

The multiple shot gun's design and drawings has all been sent to the respective department to be produced, those arms makers knows what they have received well, although they don't know where did the drawings come from, but as long as they look through it properly, they will find out that it is has a high potential to be better, the detailed drawings can be understood, not lacking in power, and able to shoot more than one round, it truly is something that was not heard or seen before.

Besides a few details, they only needed to enhance the beauty of this gun, and to guarantee that its outlook will not affect the soldiers fighting spirit while using them.

Ji Wu Jiu has never been this excited, because he knows what does the gun's capability truly means. Arm power has always been a powerful weapon, but since it was very troublesome to be used, that it can only shoot one round each time, that was why at the real war it has many limitations, and cannot be used alone, and normally requires pairing with other types of weapons.

But now, with this new gun, everything would be different.

Ji Wu Jiu can almost imagine, if there are any enemies attacking Da Qi, when they are faced with these new weapon, they have no choice but to be pushed back by its power, thinking about this already made his blood boil with excitement.

Although the occupation of being an emperor normally requires him to suppress his emotions, but at the end of the day, he is still a hot blooded male.

That is why Ji Wu Jiu decided to properly award Ye Zhen Zhen, he was prepared to give what ever she asks for.

Ye Zhen Zhen's request was not high, "give me a general position"

Ji Wu Jiu agreed, and gave her a list of positions to choose from. Ye Zhen Zhen

didn't think it was good to take a position that was too high or that will attract attention, so she decided on a fifth rank general. Although she got the title, but without the General seal she was a bit unhappy.

So Ji Wu Jiu gave her a Tiger Seal to make her happy. The people who normally carries this seal is the emperor's side kicks, and they can go in and out of the army as they wish, without announcing who they are, and never stopped.

In the future, whenever he remembers this event, he will solemnly regret.

With a blink of an eye, it was already the winter solstice, it was one of the most important days of the year, every year this day, the emperor will lead his ministers and perform a grand rite.

In order to prepare for this rite, Ji Wu Jiu has gone through three days of cleansing, (vegetarian). And because the rites has to be performed right before sunrise, so he had to get up really early, and allow people to help him dress up the complicated rites clothings, and head towards the rites area. Now, it was still very dark outside, for someone to be climb up from the warm blankets, really requires lots of courage.

Ye Zhen Zhen once again realizes, to be an emperor is really a tough job.

The way women celebrates this festival is easier; Eat and play. Ye Zhen Zhen first went to Ci Ning Palace to perform the greetings, and then leading the rest of the ladies to Yan Chun Pavilion to watch the operas. She was in the mood, so she started to award people around her, the ladies quickly stood up to thank her, one of them Wang Zhao Yi performed a big greeting of thanks and straight away fainted.

The maid servants helped the fainted Wang Zhao Yi back to her palace, Ye Zhen Zhen ordered the imperial doctors to have a look at her, and after a while a maid servant came to report, "Congratulations your majesty, Wang Zhao Yi has the dragon heir"

The people there that was originally chatting all turned quiet.

On the stage the actor was singing "today to be able to find such a handsome man, next time surely you will be wearing the wedding headdress and await to

be the scholar wife, and have a son, double happiness....”

Ye Zhen Zhen smiled and said “It really is good news, people ~ award!”

Ji Wu Jiu does not have any child till now. He had a little princess but did not reach the age of one. Another 2 consorts once was pregnant, but they never manage to give birth.

That’s why this is a very important news.

But then again, he may not necessary think so as well. If he really wanted children that badly, everyday if he was hardworking in making them, definitely would not be without reward by now.

Ye Zhen Zhen gifts more items to Wang Zhao Yi and personally went to visit her. Although Wang Zhao Yi’s body was weak but she was full of vigor.

In this palace, I am afraid a lot of people would not be able to pass this festival happily, Ye Zhen Zhen thinks in her heart.

As for herself, she didn’t really bothered about it too much, as she didn’t plan to have a baby for Ji Wu Jiu anyway. Next time no matter which consort’s son got selected and next time were to be the emperor, as long as she has not passed away, she will still be the empress dowager, but only one that will be in the same status as the emperor’s birth mother.

If not, she can also snatch other consort’s son to adopt.

But now it is still too early for that, who knows what will happen in the future, Ji Wu Jiu most probably won’t die anytime soon..

That is why after Ye Zhen Zhen return to Kun Ning Palace, her appetite grew and ate a lot of dumplings, not even the slightest bit of moodiness. Su Yue did not feel so tense after seeing her eat, although she is still abit worried, the empress is passing the days without worries, abit too much..

Because she ate too much today, so she slept a little later at night, and was reading a book. Just when was reaching the climax part, from her back suddenly came a hand, and held on to the book that she wanted to flip. Ye Zhen Zhen got shocked, and turned to look, Ji Wu Jiu’s side profile was right next to her, the normally white face, now has a hint of redness on them.

“Your Majesty?” Ye Zhen Zhen was still not back to her senses yet.

“En” Ji Wu Jiu was bending his waist, his other hand also stretched over, almost wrapping Ye Zhen Zhen into his body.

“Your majesty, why did you come here?”

“The banquet ended, I came here to visit” Ji Wu Jiu replied, Ye Zhen Zhen took a whiff of alcohol scent from him, looks like he drank quite a lot today. Turning a few pages of the book, he threw it aside and placed his hands on the table instead, securing Ye Zhen Zhen’s position in between him and the table.

Ye Zhen Zhen wanted to push away his arms, after pushing for a while, his hands did not even move. She turned around and looked at him, and found out his gaze is not as clear as usual, now with a sense of mysterious, and was looking at her smiling but not smiling.

He is indeed drunk. Ye Zhen Zhen wanted to make him leave faster and asked “Why didn’t you go visit Wang Zhao Yi?”

“Why do I have to go?”

“She is pregnant”

“En”

“En, means what?”

Ji Wu Jiu did not answer, and suddenly he bend his head down, and pecked Ye Zhen Zhen’s lips. Ye Zhen Zhen did not have time to react, and only felt that something soft touched her lips, and she can smell a faint alcohol scent.

She was shocked from getting kissed.

Ji Wu Jiu laughed, and carried her up from the chair, and walked towards the bed.

Now Ye Zhen Zhen finally understood what he wants to do, and was struggling in his hold “your your your your ma ma ma jesty... ..”

“en, I am here”. Ji Wu Jiu placed her on the bed, and he himself came on top. He did not really put any pressure on her, and was using his hands to hold his body. He got closer and was kissing her neck, his lips almost touching the skin on

her shoulders.

Ye Zhen Zhen felt stiff, “Your majesty, please wait!”

Ji Wu Jiu’s lips reached her ears, and asked while blowing into her ears “what happened?” Voice husky.

“I... am not feeling well today”

“I will make you feel well” he said and his lips are already nibbling on her ear lightly.

Ye Zhen Zhen was not at the stage where she can understand this type of cheesy words yet, but his action made her whole body felt like there was thousands of centipede crawling on her body, very uncomfortable.

Cannot take it anymore, Ye Zhen Zhen made a lie “ I, I , I , am on my period”

“really? I will need to check it personally then” which there after he started taking off her clothes.

“Your majesty, I don’t want to service you, you have so many women, why don’t you look for them” Ye Zhen Zhen said straightforwardly.

Ji Wu Jiu kissed her cheek “No one is better than you”

We must say, men wears their chivalry on their body, when they remove their clothes they remove it together.

Ye Zhen Zhen was on the verge of crying, Ji Wu Jiu was calm. He simply thought Ye Zhen Zhen was shy, after trying a few times, she will realise the sensation.

The woman’s body infront of him now is very pretty, compared to what he remembered, compared to what he imagined, the real one was way better.

Ye Zhen Zhen understands that she can’t avoid it anymore, since they are a married couple, they have to go through the ritual. She was trying to suppress the negative feelings and closed her eyes, thinking she won’t die from this anyway.

Feeling that her body has something new entering, a feeling of disgust could not be controlled and was bursting out from her body, like a flood covering everything. The feeling was going through her whole body and internal organs,

then she felt her stomach was in pain, and without thinking she pushed the person on her and got down from the bed, and vomited into her pot.

Ji Wu Jiu “.....”

Being stopped by this type of method while he was busy, he even had the feeling to murder people now.

And when the blood finally went back upwards, he finally can think rationally again, and when he saw what Ye Zhen Zhen did, he still wanted to die with her now.

Ye Zhen Zhen was only wearing a light robe, this was because Ji Wu Jiu was in a hurry and did not have time to remove, and her pair of smooth white long legs was exposed, was kneeling in front of the pot, and still vomiting non stop.

Ji Wu Jiu’s expression was at its worst, and his voice also seems to be carrying ice, “you hate me this much? Hate me still you need to vomit?”

What replied him was another round of vomiting sound.

Note: Sigh, I pity Ye Zhen Zhen.... But I pity Ji Wu Jiu also..... Sigh ~ we will have to wait further for more progress for the both of them...

Chapter 28

The emperor is rather hot tempered lately.

Recently, no matter in the matters of court or the inner palace, as long as anyone met Ji Wu Jiu, will also have this type of thoughts. He pulled a very long face, with a unpredictable expression, seems to be suppressing some sort of anger, almost like a volcano that would erupt anytime soon. The people in Gan Qing Palace, even to walk now they have to be super careful, afraid that making any noise will make the emperor unhappy, then it would truly be troublesome.

Therefore the eunuchs and maid servants that enters Gan Qing Palace, are quiet as a feather, like floating on the floor. The atmosphere truly makes people uncomfortable.

When Fang Xiu Qing left Gan Qing Palace, he found out that he was scared too. He took up one of his sleeves and start wiping his forming sweats. The Gan Qing Palace is where the emperor resides, the normal ranked ministers does not have the right to enter but Fang Xiu Qing as one of the high ranked ministers, will sometimes be called upon by the emperor to enter this place, to discuss about matters. Actually when this two fellas get together, most of the time they are discussing on how to go against Ye Xiu Ming, this time it was also the same. But what got Fang Xiu Qing astonished was that these few days the emperor was being very straightforward, with speed he settled a few people from the Ye supporters, those who deserved to be flogged, was flogged, those deserved to be sacked was sacked from their positions, and also took the opportunity to bring the defense ministry to his side. This way the departments under Ye Xiu Ming would only be left with three, now he has the support to finally fight back Ye Xiu Ming.

It is just that Ye Xiu Ming still holds some influence in the court, so when Ji Wu Jiu made his decision, a lot of ministers starts to curse/scold him. And he can't really flog them, the more you flog them, the more happy they get, returning home they will still show their butts to their wife and boast, take a look, the emperor hit me, thinking that to work for the emperor is a really glorified job!

Ji Wu Jiu thought that this group of ministers is not only admonish, but they are truly low, truly truly low!

If it was the usual, he will just be patient with it, since he has been doing so for so many years already, an emperor's hardship is not only these things. But this time, he was not in a good mood. He already has a pit of anger in his stomach that he does not know how to release, such a coincidence there are people that walk towards him asking for it, it was a really good chance.

The minister can't be hit right? Then his dad can be hit right? His son can be hit right? His brother, uncle, cousin, friends.... Also can be hit right?

Although you may be an honest minister, but to be in the world of politics, no one's butt is really clean, it was easy to find faults, and when Ji Wu Jiu chose his victims, he only choose those that are healthy and would not have any after effects from the flogging, and he will also limit it to twenty hits, only enough for them to go home to complain.

Then finally the minister's arrogance was finally diminished by this weird method by the emperor.

Ye Xiu Ming was angered by this method, and closed himself in the room for two days, to ponder, and kept repeating, "that small rascal!" Ye Kang Le heard from the door, and immediately ordered people to guard all sides, this type of words if heard by the emperor can lead to the implication of the whole family. It was lucky that Ye Xiu Ming has not lose his rational from the anger, in his heart, who that small rascal refers to, he himself knows that would be sufficient, there was no need to say it out loud. If anyone wants to find fault, their house has a lot of grandchildren, just picking one of them also can be the small rascal.

Honestly, Fang Xiu Qing admires Ji Wu Jiu a little, he thinks to himself, if he was placed at that spot, with so many ministers scrutinizing him, he might not be able to think of such a good plan that was not only evil but able to keep the situation under control. He has always thought that he will be a good emperor, if not he also will not stand by his side, to fight with Ye Xiu Ming. But just not sure why the normally good tempered emperor seems to be not in control of his temper, and everyone seems to anger him. He really is still young, not mature enough.

Actually, to be fair, the ministers.... are innocent. To be looked down by woman that way on the bed, most probably this type of event would only be understood by eunuchs.

After wiping his sweat, Fang Xiu Qing looked at Feng You De who brought him out, smiled and said “Feng Gong gong, every day you are taking care of the emperor, such dedication makes me feel less worthy.”

Feng You De smiled, “sir, you are too humble, to take care of the emperor is our duty”

Fang Xiu Qing continued “Feng Gong gong, the emperor recently, how is his health?”

“Minister Fang, to be so worried about the emperor, really shows your loyalty” Feng You De smiled and continued “Do not worry, the imperial doctor said that the emperor’s health is very good, he is not in a good mood, because there is something that he is keeping in his heart.”

“Not sure what causes the emperor..”

“This I am not sure, I only know since the winter solstice night, after he came out from Kun Ning palace, he is already like this”

Fang Xiu Qing understood from this one sentence. They all are clever people, there is no need to say things so clearly. He looked left and right and asked, “then my daughter did not cause any problems?”

“Minister Fang, what are you saying, Xian Concubine is the treasure in his majesty’s heart, just recently she helped look over the matters of the inner palace, very wise and did not cause others to worry”

Fang Xiu Qing stopped asking, and bid goodbye to Feng You De.

Seeing that Feng You De finally left, he turned around, and saw an eunuch from Gan Qing Palace, hiding behind the wall and was looking towards him.

Feng You De scolding “Why are you not inside to and await for orders, creeping here to in such a suspicious manner, if his majesty saw you like this what would happen, you don’t want to live anymore?”

Yu Ji walked forward and apologized “Feng Gong gong, I am not on duty

today... the emperor has not been in a good mood recently, what actually happened?"

Feng You De knocked Yu Ji's forehead "you are only to honestly do your duty, things that shouldn't be ask, don't ask"

Yu Ji saw that there were no one here, lowered his voice and said "not that I want to interfere, gong gong, don't tell me you have never thought.. towards that type of matter?"

"What are you actually trying to say?"

"His majesty has not visited any consorts for a few days already"

Feng You De suddenly has a thought, don't tell me the emperor is weak again, and will need some nourishments? But for a young man, to keep being nourished in that area, will it cause any problems...

"Gong gong, you don't understand, Women, are like dishes, if ate too much you will find it bored, maybe it's time to change the taste?"

"Change what taste?"

"Wild taste"

Feng You De suddenly understood what Yu Ji meant, and raised his hands and whacked him, "I will hit you, you shameless beast, how dare you speak of this! Full nonsense! The emperor will definitely chop of your head if he found out!"

Finally Feng You De gave him a kick "get lost"

Yu Ji ran away, and left Feng You De alone in the walk way, with a face that was hard to figure out.

Ji Wu Jiu was seating in a pavilion holding a zither. Ding Ding Dang Dang, music was coming from the zither, very pleasing to the ear, but within that, you can slightly feel some sort of killing intent?

Xu Cai Ren was dancing along with the music. She was wearing a green dress, material very soft, moving along with her body while she danced.

Ji Wu Jiu was not paying attention to her, his eyes were not looking anywhere,

his fingers playing the instrument was increasing in speed, the sound was slowly becoming like a few thousand horses running towards their enemy. Xu Cai Ren's movements started to get messy, and eventually could not follow, a misstep and she fell.

The music suddenly stopped.

Ji Wu Jiu was looking at Ye Zhen Zhen who was standing not too far away, his fingers was pressing on to the zither's string, and the tight string was starting to cause his fingers to ache.

He was not in a good mood, but who knew, Ye Zhen Zhen was not happy too. From her opinion, when doing that type of thing with man, and will feel disgusted is a type of weird disease, and Ji Wu Jiu is the root of the disease. Therefore as long as he appears, it will remind her "You are ill"

How can she be not angry?

Xu Cai Ren was helped up by the servants there. She looked at Ji Wu Jiu, pouting and said "Cousin brother, you played too fast just now"

Ji Wu Jiu got up and went towards her, holding on Xu Cai Ren, "are you okay?". Although talking to her, his gaze was at Ye Zhen Zhen, and when he saw Ye Zhen Zhen face's was not fine, he then held on to Xu Cai Ren's shoulder, and allowed her to lightly lie into his arms.

Xu Cai Ren blushed, and shyly looked up at Ji Wu Jiu.

Ye Zhen Zhen was looking at them, thinking, since she can't bully Ji Wu Jiu, then she can only bully his beloved cousin sister...

Furthermore, this Xu Cai Ren has long required a punishment. Although this person was only a sixth rank Cai Ren, but holding on to her status as the empress dowager's niece, and was childhood friends with Ji Wu Jiu, she was not following the palace rules properly. She and the empress dowager has together come up with a lot of small moves, thinking that I can't see it through?, I am such a genius!

"Cousin brother, let's go" Xu Cai Ren said.

"Meeting me, you don't have to kneel and greet me already? Cousin sister?"

Ye Zhen Zhen said and walked towards them.

Xu Cai Ren stole a look at Ji Wu Jiu, the latter released her and said, “what the empress say was right, we should not forgo the rules”

Xu Cai Ren should not be considered arrogant, she is still not at the position to do so, to be honest for Ji Wu Jiu to look at her only, will also make her very happy. So this time, she was obedient and kneeled down to give the proper greetings to Ye Zhen Zhen, “greetings to the empress”

Ye Zhen Zhen did not allow her to stand up, looked down and smiled “Since you call the emperor as cousin brother, why don’t you call me as cousin in law?”

In a moment Xu Cai Ren’s face turned bad, to call Ji Wu Jiu cousin brother still brings about a tone of flirting, but if she were to call Ye Zhen Zhen as cousin in law, doesn’t it mean that she could only be Ji Wu Jiu’s cousin sister.

“I don’t dare:

“Don’t dare? I see that you are calling cousin brother with ease, why did you dare then?”

Xu Cai Ren kept quiet for a while, and seeing that Ji Wu Jiu did not show any signs of helping her, she can only answer “I admit my mistakes”

“Good that you know, if everyone in the palace are like you, not knowing their place, won’t it be hectic. You and the emperor has a strong bond, I didn’t want to punish you initially, but if I don’t punish you today, if the others all learn from you next time...”

“I accept any punishment”

“Since its like that, go outside Kun Ning Palace and kneel for 4 hours”

After exiting Kun Ning Palace it would be the imperial garden, this is where there are most people passing through in the palace, Xu Cai Ren’s kneel has made her famous, those who knew or didn’t know her, now all know who is she.

During winter, the floor would be very cold, although Xu Cai Ren was wearing a thick layer of clothes, she was still shivering from the cold. She turned pale from the cold, only her eyes seems to contain vigor, looking at Kun Ning Palace, staring into the main hall.

Ye Zhen Zhen was looking from the side, turned and asked Ji Wu Jiu, “are you not worried?”

“Why should I be?”

Both of them looked at each other in silence for a while, and then both of them had a similar flashback, both face turned black, turned around and did not look at each other anymore.

Heng!

Chapter 29

Ever since she got punished to kneel in front of Kun Ning Palace, Xu Cai Ren caught a cold, she rested for a few days to get better. When she saw Ye Zhen Zhen again, she was more polite, not even a little feel of grudge can be felt.

Only disappointing those that was waiting for a show. But again, although Xu Cai Ren's backing was strong, but according to the ranking, no matter what she can't go against Ye Zhen Zhen.

The person who was most frustrated was none other than the empress dowager. From her point of view, Ye Zhen Zhen punishing Xu Cai Ren, was like slapping her personally. The worst part was that Ji Wu Jiu actually didn't stood up and help Xu Cai Ren, she really don't know what he is thinking. The empress dowager was trying to look back her son's actions in detail, thinking back he was really weird recently, really understanding him less and less.

This should be understandable actually, Ji Wu Jiu was granted the position of crown prince at the age of 18, and after that he was sent to live in eastern palace, and because he is the only person that can take on the role of crown prince, with no other candidates, above him, his parents, below him the ministers, even the normal citizens placed high hopes on him. That is why he was working like a dog everyday, and the time spent with his mother can be said to be very less, naturally will be less close compared to normal mother and son.

The empress dowager heart was not stable.

She thought both Xian Concubine and Xu Cai Ren can be brought up, now the most important matter is to bring down Ye Zhen Zhen. Just that both Xu Cai Ren and Xian Concubine did not move according to her wishes, to work together. They are not close to each other.

Xian Concubine does not wish to have any relation with Xu Cai Ren; similarly Xu Cai Ren thinks that Xian Concubine is overly cautious and would not be easy to communicate with her. Actually, ever since she entered the palace, she was observing the rest of the woman in the palace, after much observation, she finally found a good sword.

“Someone like Li Concubine, with high rank, with the emperor’s doting, straightforward character and stupid women, of course would be a good sword” inside Kun Ning Palace, Ye Zhen Zhen, who was holding a box the size of a fist said.

The little box is box with many tricks, Ye Zhen Zhen just got it recently, she likes it very much. Su Yue heard her words, frowned and said “Niang niang, what you mean is, Li Concubine will join hands with Xu Cai Ren?”

“80%, will. Both of them has grudge against me, one with high position, another with hidden thoughts and evil, getting together truly match them, to commit crime together”

“Then, your majesty what should we do? Su Feng said a little anxious.

“What else can we do, to defend when they attack, as long as the emperor does not side them, just two woman, I still can handle” Just afraid that if anything were to happen, Ji Wu Jiu might come and add another leg, not to mention their relationship now is not very good. Thinking about that, Ye Zhen Zhen thought that the case was not so simple.

When the emperor was mentioned, Su Yue frowned more, “niang niang, the emperor has not stepped into Kun Ning Palace for a few days already” Last time, even though he doesn’t sleep over much, but he will still drop by every two days to walk one round, now..

“It’s better if he doesn’t come, i like quiet”

Su Feng suddenly lowered her voice “Niang Niang, I heard from Yu Ji from Gan Qing Palace, the emperor went out from the palace today, and some more went to a very uncommon place, making it very mysterious. Where do you think he went?”

Ye Zhen Zhen stopped moving her fingers, looked at Su Feng “How would we know where the emperor goes? Even if we know, we should not simply tell others. I think that Yu Jiu is not a good person, you better don’t communicate with him anymore”

Su Feng nodded, but still was very curious in her heart. Where on earth did the emperor go?

In our life, it is hard to be predicted, Feng You De was standing in front of Cui Fang Lou, thinking about life. He has already lived for a few decades, and he has never thought that one day he will come to a brothel.

Of course, he was here to accompany the emperor.

Earlier, after much contemplation, he finally shyly approached the emperor with this matter, and never thought that the emperor would agree.

For the emperor, to roam around in this type of place is really not something to be proud of, that was why Ji Wu Jiu did not even bring a single guard, and only brought Feng You De with him. But towards the guards, no matter what, the emperor's safety is the utmost importance, that is why they still quietly followed him. Guards, they are best at being hidden in the crowd, Ji Wu Jiu was deep in his own thoughts, so he didn't realise them following him.

So that is why, now one emperor plus one eunuch was standing in front of Cui Fang Lou.

Ji Wu Jiu does not have many life experiences, this is the first time he went to a brothel. He never needed to come to this type of place to look for girls, just that there are some words that he cannot say to the ladies in his palace, that is why he must come out here to ask.

Stiffing his face, he went in, the moment he reached the main lobby, he was crowded by a group of women, some was holding his arms, some his shoulders, one who was extra brave was even touching his chest. Feng You De quickly pulled these women away, but did not manage to pull all, Ji Wu Jiu has a form of attraction that makes these women keep sticking to him.

It is not that these prostitutes are very thirsty, just that Ji Wu Jiu was truly attractive, and his charisma was really attracting them as well. Not to mention for him to pay for them, even if they are required to pay for him, they would be more than willing.

So many women's scent all mixed together was a bit too much for his nose. Ji Wu Jiu from his shocked stage finally came back and was able to quickly get rid of the women sticking to him.

The ladies were then all at the side whining.

The madam then quickly approached him “This gentlemen, looks like this ladies did not enter your eyes, I am not sure what type of lady are you looking for?”

Feng You De replied “get the best one here will do”

“Such a coincidence, today our Cui Fang Lou’s best lady was looking for a soul mate, would you like to take a look?”

Ji Wu Jiu, although has never entered a brothel before, also know what the best lady meant, so he nodded, and let the madam bring them to the back garden, and wait. There was already full of people, all waiting for the best lady to appear.

Actually this Liu Yue lady, was originally a musician here, very talented, many rich people were using money on her. So the madam force her to take customers as well, so she got angry and said that her first man must be someone she likes. The madam thinking that in the future this lady will also be under her anyway, so she allow her to do as she wishes.

That is why today there is such a scene.

Ji Wu Jiu just only sat down, then the Liu Yue lady came out, and saw him immediately. Politely saying a few words, her gaze stopped at Ji Wu Jiu’s sitting area . Everyone got soft from the gaze of the pretty lady, except for Ji Wu Jiu, who was still calm. After that, he was some how called into the ladies room.

Rationally, Liu Yue lady was really pretty, but in Ji Wu Jiu’s life, what he did not lack was pretty woman. Once he entered the room, he placed a stack of money, “I want to ask you a few question”

Liu Yue saw the money, her face got dark, “Sir, I am not money minded, I initially thought that you would be different from those man, who knew.. “

“I ask you, how only would a woman give her all to a man?”

This type of question asking towards a prostitute, the person would definitely take it as a hint, Liu Yue poured a cup of wine for Ji Wu Jiu, and said “to be honest, although I got to be sold here, I really never got intimate with men before”

This sentence was very obvious : I am still a virgin.

If for most normal men, when they hear this they would be very happy, but when Ji Wu Jiu heard it, he was very unhappy, and was looking at Liu Yue with disdain.

Liu Yue “....”

Ji Wu Jiu found out that what happened was slightly different from what he thought it would be, he wants to correct it.

Then, the madam leading a girl came in with a few dishes and was serving Ji Wu Jiu happily. In this area of business she has survived for so many years, her ability to judge people is very good, this gentlemen is definitely someone with a good background, rich if not noble.

Ji Wu Jiu called out to the madam “go get me someone full of experience”

Liu Yue’s facial expression got very bad.

The guard that was hiding on the roof heard him, and think in his heart. The emperor’s taste is really strong.

An experienced lady was quickly brought in, this lady is called Hong Yun, appearance seems to be elder then Liu Yue by a few years, wearing a peach colored dress, with a thick make up, when she walked in her waist was moving left and right. The moment she came in, she wanted to approach Ji Wu Jiu, but he quickly responded and did not allow her to come close, and quickly sat down, pushing her on to another chair as well. “Sit properly, answer me this question, and this money would all be yours”

Hong Yun took a look at the money on the table, and was happy till she almost can’t close her mouth, “tell me, I would answer you without hesitation”

“How do I make a women give me her all”

Stunned for a moment, she laughed “ai yo, what are you saying, which woman would not give everything to you?”

Was his identity been busted? Ji Wu Jiu gaze got serious.

“Sir, you are so handsome, I really can’t think of any woman that would not fall for you”

“.....” so this was the case.

Ji Wu Jiu sat down on a chair, looked down and said “there is a woman, she... doesn’t seem to be willing to be touched by me.

“As a lady, most probably she is just shy?”

“She is already married” Embarrassed to admit that she is his wife”

Inside Hong Yun’s heart, she thought, really can’t tell that he has such a good vibe around him, but actually he is an adulterous that is courting other people’s wife. Her face not showing a sign of what she thinks, smiled and said “If like that, most probably her heart already has someone”

”Shut Up!” Ji Wu Jiu suddenly hit the table and shouted. The cup on the table vibrated accordingly and made ding ding dang dang noise.

Hong Yun got scared by his sudden outburst. She used a handkerchief to close her mouth, to smile apologetically, but she just couldn’t do it. Currently the other person is having a very dark face, his gaze like a sharp sword, making people shiver from within. She also thinks that he might actually kill her, and it seemed like an easy task for him.

No, not only angry, Ji Wu Jiu’s shoulder was shaking slightly, He does not want to believe, he wants to ignore it, he purposely avoided it, and suddenly now someone to so straightforwardly say it out loud, like a wall that he tried to build so hard now having a large crack, making him unsure of what to do now. Such dissapointment, such anger, shock, as well as... not sure of what to do....

Note: Hehehehehehe ~ let him first feel the pain !!!!! kakakaka

Chapter 30

Although Li Concubine is a little weak in the brain, but she is not entirely foolish, furthermore she has Fan Chun by her side to advice her, so she is rather cautious towards Xu Cai Ren.

Especially when this Xu Cai Ren, is someone under the empress dowager.

Xu Cai Ren did not hide her intentions, “towards you I have no ill intentions.. it is just that I want to revenge”

Li Concubine remembered the day she got punished to kneel on the cold winter day, so she believed her a little and asked “people who can help you are a plenty, why did you look for me?”

“I know that you also want to revenge”

Xu Cai Ren’s words hit the mark, Li Concubine although have not displayed any forms of dissatisfaction, but in her heart towards Ye Zhen Zhen, that hatred has not diminished at all, just that considering how Ji Wu Jiu has just only treat her better recently, and that Ye Zhen Zhen is too cunning and fierce, so she is still contemplating and did not dare to act rashly. Now, to be reminded by Xu Cai Ren, the fire in her heart started to rise again.

“Do you have any good plans?” Li Concubine asked

“Now, there is a chance to execute this plan, just that.... I want to borrow something from you”

“What is it?”

Xu Cai Ren took a look around, walked to Li Concubine’s ear and lowered her voice, and said something.

Li Concubine’s face changed, and looked at her suspiciously, “how did you know that item is with me?”

“Sis, don’t worry, I found out accidentally as well”

“If so, what do you want to do?”

Xu Cai Ren then started to explain the plan to Li Concubine, and Li Concubine

only nodded along.

Today the sky was calm, but brought along wind blowing around, it was a good weather. Ye Zhen Zhen brought a few people with her and was flying kite at Ying Hua Hall. This place was initially meant for Buddhist prayers, but not sure why, the empress dowager does not come here anymore, so this place was rather abandoned, only left a few maid servants and eunuchs tidying up the place and lighting incense. Ye Zhen Zhen was playing with the kite outside, and the people inside Ying Hua Hall that heard the noises came out to join the fun as well, looking up in the sky they saw a huge flying lion. The lion was made in detail, flying around with arrogance, making people think that it was a mystical animal made by the gods flying down to earth to play.

Ji Wu Jiu was standing not too far from them, with a wall in between them, was looking at the sky too.

Ye Zhen Zhen then kept the lion, and fly another kite, shaped of a bird man. This type of bird man was called angel in the west, with gold hair, white and plump, and on the back there is a pair of white wings, it was very pretty and cute. The bird man was naked, only with his crossed legs he was covering the important part. Although not wearing any clothing the figure was just a child, so everyone did not think too much about it, all open their eyes wide to see.

Now the body of the kite is crooked, so the balance was lost, and after a few rounds of trying also it did not fly up, Ye Zhen Zhen changed its knot a few times, and finally got it up in the sky, but the string broke.

The kite floated in the air for a while, and fell after, landed on the top of Ying Hua Hall's main gate.

Ye Zhen Zhen turned and look at the kite, and counted the height of the gate, and decided not to take it personally. Her legs has finally healed, she can't take the risk anymore. Then she look at the servants around her, seems like one is worse than another.

Ji Wu Jiu saw, and decided to help, but would not think that before he can move towards there, he heard Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly called towards a direction "Lieutenant Lu, come over here"

Lu Li jogged over “greetings to your majesty”

Ye Zhen Zhen smiled and waved her hands, “Go help me get the kite down”

“Yes”, the moment he said that, he has already jumped up, and people there only saw something a blur and then when they refocus, he was already standing on top of the wall.

Lu Li took the kite and jumped down, passing back the kite to Ye Zhen Zhen, Su Yue was thinking to take it, but Ye Zhen Zhen was a step faster and took the kite back, smiling like a flower “many thanks”

“I do not dare”

Ye Zhen Zhen holding the kite and looked at Lu Li, and asked “How did the injury on your neck appear?”

“Replying to your majesty, I was sparring with my colleagues, and got a little injured”

Ye Zhen Zhen frowned “Lieutenant Lu trains the martial arts to protect the emperor, such loyalty should be awarded. Wang You Cai, go to Kun Ning Palace and take the Hua Yu paste to award Lieutenant Lu”

“Thank you for your majesty” Lu Li kneeled again, she was looking down, on her face was a gentle smile. This smile, no one saw, besides someone not too far away from them.

Ji Wu Jiu was gritting his teeth, his gaze scary.

Then, a eunuch from Gan Qing Palace ran over “Your majesty, your majesty”

Feng You De made a gesture to the eunuch to ask him to be cautious, so the eunuch closed his mouth and ran over, and said “Your majesty, not good”

“what happened?” Feng You De ask

“Wang Zhao Yi had a miscarriage”

Wang Zhao Yi stays at Yu Hua Place, considered to be in the more quiet and hidden place of the inner palace. Ye Zhen Zhen heard Wang Zhao Yi miscarriage, and immediately rushed over. But out of the ordinary there are already many

people gathered here, and seems to be waiting for her to arrive only.

Ye Zhen Zhen had a bad feeling, Because even the empress dowager is here.

The empress dowager was worried, she was afraid Ji Wu Jiu will side Ye Zhen Zhen. Furthermore, this was a serious matter, she coming over to settle the matter, is not a weird occurrence at all.

Ye Zhen Zhen's leg just only pass through the door, she already heard the empress dowager shouted "you evil woman, still don't kneel immediately?"

"Mother, you sure are in a hurry, my other leg is still outside the door" Ye Zhen Zhen smiled. She walked in and greeted everyone there, and stood still "not sure, who made you angry mother?"

"You still dare to ask? I ask you, why did you harm Wang Zhao Yi? Everyday I pray in hopes that the emperor will get a son or two, but for years the flower only budded but never bore fruit. It was not easy for Wang Zhao Yi to finally get pregnant, but you got jealous and anxious, and dared to harm her life!"

Ye Zhen Zhen understood what happened from what she said. Her job as the empress is surely eventful, everyday someone wants her to take blame for something. She walked one round and her gaze pass through Ji Wu Jiu, seeing that he is not saying anything, but seems to be in a bad mood. Looks like he quite care for this child. She thought.

Ye Zhen Zhen laughed coldly "These words, I do not dare take the blame, Mother, everyday you are praying, but it doesn't seem that Guan Yin Goddess wants to bless the emperor, the could only be either one of these reasons, either the goddess is not effective, or your heart was not sincere, this has nothing to do with me, you say that I harmed Wang Zhao Yi, do you have any evidence?"

"Of course there is evidence, me and the emperor will not blame the innocent, doctor!"

"Here", a young doctor walked forward "replying to the emperor, empress dowager, empress, Wang Zhao Yi loss a lot of blood, and got scared, that is why the baby could not be safes. The injury is at the shoulder and got hit by a gun, the bullet got into the skin, will need to operate to get it out"

Ye Zhen Zhen closed her eyes.

“You heard?” Empress dowager was angry and hit the table. “In the entire inner palace, only you play with gun power, if not you who else could it be?!”

Actually not only Ye Zhen Zhen has gun, those higher rank guards will also have. Lu Li has one, and also a few of the men under him also have. If following this condition, there are at least two suspicious guard, one is Captain Xiao who was in charge of the security here, and another would be Lu Li, who is allowed to go anywhere in the inner palace.

Ji Wu Jiu looked at Ye Zhen Zhen expecting her to come out with this point.

But she did not, she only bite her lips and asked, “were there any witness?”

Witness was also available. Wang Zhao Yi’s maid servant came and told what happened. Today, when Wang Zhao Yi was returning from greeting Xian Concubine at 15.20, and when she just reached Yu Hua Place’s door step her shoulder got shot, she screamed and fainted on the spot. What happened after, everyone knows.

“Are you sure it was 15.20?” Ye Zhen Zhen asked

“Replying to your majesty, even if not accurate it should not be too far”

“Such coincidence, at 15.20 I was playing kite, where will I have the time to come to Yu Hua Place”

Li Concubine said, “This type of thing, of course the empress would not do personally”

“If so” Ye Zhen Zhen turned and look at the kneeling maid on the floor “anyone of you saw clearly who the eunuch was?”

“Replying to your majesty, we all got shocked, and when we are back to our senses we also only cared about our lady, and did not see”

Looks like it would be hard for Ye Zhen Zhen to be cleared of the accusation.

But actually only for everyone here, except for herself and Ji Wu Jiu, who knew of something else: Although she has gun, but she does not have the bullets. Ever since she quietly completed the design for the multiple shot gun, Ji Wu Jiu although happy, but still ordered her to stop playing with such dangerous weapons. If she really wants to play, she can play with the gun but the gun

powder and bullets, she don't even have to be bothered about using them. He also purposely ordered a few people to make sure she does not obtain the bullets no matter what.

So actually she does not have the ability to be the culprit. But this evidence is too special, and only Ji Wu Jiu can testify. If Ji Wu Jiu is not willing to say, then everything else does not matter.

From Ji Wu Jiu's reaction ever since she entered the room, most probably he will pretend to not know. Ye Zhen Zhen holding to a slight chance looked at him and ask, "Your majesty, do you have anything you want to say?"

"This sentence I also want to ask you, you don't have anything else you want to say?"

Looks like he really wants to be an observer only. Ye Zhen Zhen scoffed and said "I currently do not have anything to say"

"that means you admit the crime?" the empress dowager was abit anxious.

"Something that I have not done, I would not admit forever. But because the criminal is well prepared, and want to frame me, and I cant find the loop hole in such short notice, and I ask for a few days, I will thoroughly investigate this case"

"If so, I will give you 3 days, after 3 days I want an explanation for the death of the emperor's child"

"5 days"

"5 day then"

Ye Zhen Zhen returned to Kun Ning Palace in deep thoughts, thinking about the case all along, and who would most probably be the criminal. Ji Wu Jiu goes the same direction as her, so the both of them were walking together, but did not converse a single word. Ye Zhen Zhen wanted to bid farewell with him in front of Kun Ning Palace, but didn't know he will follow her into Kun Ning Palace, and ordered everyone else out.

"Congratulations to the emperor, looking at me fighting alone is it very fun?" Ye Zhen Zhen said.

Ji Wu Jiu though did not answer what was asked, looking straight into her eyes

he asked “you like your cousin brother, correct or not?”

Note: I personally feel that the whole time, he was actually not worried about his child, but more to how Ye Zhen Zhen will react and if she will say out her cousin’s name for the gun instead. He is still angry/jealous from the kite scene.

Chapter 31

Ye Zhen Zhen was shocked for a moment.

Ji Wu Jiu then repeated what he said again, this time with a more confirmation tone, “you like your cousin brother, my empress” the last words that came out of him was pushed out.

Ye Zhen Zhen eyes grew big and replied angrily “what nonsense are you spouting!”

“Both of you grow up together, studied and trained together, he taught you your martial arts, you even know what number is sewed on his collar, it shows how close the both of you are, you don’t believe anyone, but you believe him, when your life was endangered when you met the tiger, also you didn’t cry, but you easily cried in front of him, you are worried about him, seeing that he got injured, you gift him expensive herbal medicine, you cover for him, even if you have to take on the accusation also would not question his trustworthiness. Correct or not?” Slowly he cornered her to a corner of the room, his tall build was towering over her. In his voice there was a suppressed anger tone, making his voice lowered, the effect towards Ye Zhen Zhen was as though there was a hammer waiting to hit her heart. Because they are in close proximity, their foreheads are almost touching, looking straight into her eyes, coldly, and when he spoke his breath falls upon Ye Zhen Zhen’s face, it was supposed to be warm but it reminded her of a poisonous snake.

Ye Zhen Zhen’s body started to shiver, not sure if it was because she was angered or because she was scared.

He continued “your father even wanted to marry you off to him, but too bad you ended up marrying me, very sad for you right?” While he said that his lips actually curved up into a small, despite a cold smile.

Ye Zhen Zhen finally found her courage and returned his gaze, lowered her voice and said “you are seriously spouting nonsense!”

“Cousin brother and cousin sister, a match made in heaven, is the true nonsense. What I have said was only the truth.” He held her chin up, and was

brushing against her snow white skin, “if not, you are willing to proof it to me, that I was only talking nonsense, you and him does not have that sort of feelings, and your heart is filled with only me? Your husband.” He took her hands and placed it on his waist, one hand holding her face, and moves his head lower, as though as he was going to kiss her.

Ye Zhen Zhen was pushing down her feelings, closed her eyes tightly and started to frown.

Ji Wu Jiu though, did not kiss her, with a scoff he let her go, and took a few steps. Taking a good look at her with eyes as cold as the winter waters.

Ye Zhen Zhen was clenching her fists, looked down and did not say anything.

“Ye Zhen Zhen, when you are alive you belong to me, after you die you will still be my ghost”

No matter what, and no matter who is in your heart, this fact will never be changed. The more you like him, the more you will suffer, because you will never get him, and he will never get you.

What I can't get, other people don't even have to bother to think about it!

Ye Zhen Zhen locked herself up in the room for one whole day, not having appetite to eat. Su Yue thought that she was worried about the case, consoled her a little. And seeing that she was not saying anything, and was in a more depressed mood than previously, she could only leave her alone, and discuss what to do with Su Feng and Wang You Cai.

Nothing came out from their discussion, because the most important witness was the emperor, and neither one of them has the courage or power to speak with the emperor directly. Su Yue asked Feng You De earlier, about the emperor's attitude, but he did not answer, because.... He himself don't know what the emperor means.

Actually Ji Wu Jiu wasn't going to let her take the fault, he just wanted to keep her on her toes for a few days, and when she cannot find any solution, he will save her.

Only at the very last moment, will she understand who is the one that can she truly depend on.

Ye Zhen Zhen's depression lasted for one day, and slowly she came back to senses. The most important thing now is to remove the accusation, if not to take on the crime of harming imperial consort and to murder the emperor's child, she would not be too far away from getting demoted.

Wang Zhao Yi already woke up, just that she was very weak, and could not even get out of the bed. Ye Zhen Zhen went to visit her, and ask her some things. Wang Zhao Yi answered while crying, and held on to Ye Zhen Zhen's sleeve and said "Your majesty, you must help me, look for the real criminal!"

Ye Zhen Zhen was abit shock, "Why did you think that it was not done by me?"

"You are normally good hearted, surely you would not do something as evil as this"

"..... Speak the truth"

"If you really wanted to harm me, you would be more cautious than this, and try to not leave any clues behind, why would you so openly use the gun?"

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded. Such a big loophole, even Wang Zhao Yi knows, then the other people would definitely know as well, just that even if they know, they have to pretend they don't know.

They want to push me to the end of the road. Ye Zhen Zhen ponders.

Just that, I purposely want to live properly, and live better and longer than everyone. Ye Zhen Zhen scoffed.

She called Wang Zhao Yi's personal maid to the gate, and ask another maid servant to act out the scene. Then after thinking for a while, she said "Wang Zhao Yi was shot on the back of her shoulders, and since the bullet's direction from up to down, means that the person must have shot her from the back on a higher position" She stood at the gate, and look at the opposite direction, it was a tall wall.

Lying on top of the wall to shoot, would be a matching position.

Beyond the wall is a quiet walkway, Ye Zhen Zhen brought a few person over to

the location roughly to where Yu Hua Place is located, and examined the wall. Besides the foot prints following the walk way, there are a few foot prints was facing towards the wall, at a certain place.

And also foot prints on the wall where the foot prints on the ground ends.

Ye Zhen Zhen asked Wang You Cai to bring over the ladder, and she went up personally, and examined in detail. There were 2 roof tiles that were chipped, Ye Zhen Zhen touched it a little, and there was still broken dusts there, it means the tiles were chipped not too long ago, it seems like it was caused by something hard and sharp.

Then she suddenly thought of the flying claw.

It meant that the criminal used the claw to climb up the wall, to harm Wang Zhao Yi.

This walkway is very quiet, and not many people pass by, but normally there should be guards near this area as well. And if anyone were to turn and look here, surely they would have spot the criminal.

Ye Zhen Zhen ordered people to get her the eunuch that was on guard duty that day, and ask him if anyone suspicious passed by. The eunuch denied, so Ye Zhen Zhen did not ask and let him go.

“Niang niang,, if that person was lying, then what should be do?” Su Feng asked.

Ye Zhen Zhen smiled “not if, but confirmed. He is hiding the criminal” Someone has definitely pass through, and he said no one. Even if the person climb the wall from the other side, it was hard not to be found out. And from the foot prints left on the wall, the criminal’s martial arts is not very good.

That is why, if to say the eunuch on duty did not see anything, that would be impossible.

“Niang niang, so what should we do now?” Wang You Cai understood and quickly asked.

“Few of you, quietly find out, who is this person close with, and who did he communicated with recently, the more detail the better. Especially those that

has connections with weapons, and also those that knows what is gun powder or bullets, that type of person”

“Niang niang you are saying.....”

“Correct, the gun that I have lost, Feng You De may not have found it, I am afraid it has fallen into the hands of someone else.” The bullets that Ye Zhen Zhen used in that gun is different from the ones in a normal gun, it was smaller, and the bullet that was removed from Wang Zhao Yi’s body was the same type of bullets that she used to test her multiple shot gun. Although there was a slight accident with the gun that day, but the body of the gun was not destroyed, with a little fixing it would be possible to use it again. Not to mention there was some gun powder and bullets left in the gun.

It should be, someone found the gun, and kept it for himself after fixing it, and used it this time, not only can get rid of the child in Wang Zhao Yi, but also to frame Ye Zhen Zhen.

Wang You Cai was astonished, what happened now is so similar to the evil thing that he has done previously. Not saying anything anymore, he thinks that the empress is very wise.

So this time Wang You Cai was even more concerned about the case then Su Yue and Su Feng.

Although Ye Zhen Zhen’s connections and relationship with the inner palace people is not really good, but the people under her was very good with the palace’s maids and eunuchs. Not for anything else, but because the empress was rich. Ye Zhen Zhen purposely gave them a sum of money to buy the hearts of others. Do not say that money is not dependable, in many cases, money is the only thing you can depend on. Su Feng , Su Yue and Wang You Cai the three of them, originally under the empress, and have never shown power, this type of people, if they don’t have the hearts of the people, what type of people will?

That was why under their search, Ye Zhen Zhen quickly got the answer.

In Li Concubine’s palace there is an eunuch called Chen Ke, like weapons, and has also once bought a weapon guidebook from outside, which has detailed drawings of all sorts of weapons. The more important part was that this person and that guard eunuch has a good relationship.

It was Li Concubine!

This woman just passed a few comfortable days, she started to again.

Because she was afraid it will alarm Li Concubine, Ye Zhen Zhen did not go to Lu Hua Palace to catch Chen Ke, but to wait at a path where he will definitely pass through, knocked him out and placed in a sack and brought him to Kun Ning Palace.

Chen Ke was already feeling guilty inside, when he was released from the sack, he was scared until he was speaking incoherent words.

Ye Zhen Zhen did not waste time with him “admit to the crime, I will spare your life, do not admit, die”

“i..i.. do not understand what your majesty is talking about” Chen Ke does not dare to admit, after he admit, confirmed he will not live — To harm an imperial consort, this type of crime it was enough for him to die a thousand times.

“Seems like you do not believe me? I will only say this one time, if you admit I can get you out of the palace earlier, and help you go far from here, change your name and all. Li Concubine has some power in the palace, but her hands can’t stretch beyond that. She can’t.. I Can”

Chen Ke remained quiet.

“You think that you will live if you don’t admit? Even if I don’t kill you, as long as I show any signs of suspicion, Li Concubine would most probably not let you live?”

Chen Ke’s expression seems to be in pain, inside this palace, he was not looking to be someone, but only wanted to peacefully live, but it really was so hard. Earlier on Li Concubine used his life to threaten him, and made him do that, now he is threaten by the empress. This servant’s life are really hard to live.

Seeing that Chen Ke is contemplating, Ye Zhen Zhen ask Wang You Cai to bring in a bucket, inside it was a fired up coal stack. Wang You Cai placed the bucket in front of Chen Ke, Ye Zhen Zhen smiled “I have eaten too much pork legs, I have always wanted to try the taste of human’s hands, why not you give me the chance?”

The moment she completed her sentence, Wang You Cai catch on to his hands and was moving towards the coal, Chen Ke shocked started to shout and struggle, but was caught by two strong eunuchs at the back, unable to move.

Compared to oral threaten, nothing is more successful than the torture right now, Chen Ke was looking at his hands almost touching the coal, and feeling the heat from the coal, he finally shouted “ I will tell, I will tell, I will say everything”

We cannot deny, there are less truly hard boned people.

That multiple shot gun was really found by Chen Ke. That person loves guns like wives, but in Da Qi, towards the ownership of a gun was very strict, he could not own one, when he coincidently found one, even though he knew it belonged to the empress, but because he loved it too much, and wanted to play a bit with it only for a few days and will return after. But who knew, he got found out by Li Concubine, and she thought that since this item was lost by the empress, then there was no need to return it, and who knew if it could be used in the future, so she ordered Chen Ke to fix it. Chen Ke was happy initially and fixed the gun.

After that Wang Zhao Yi got pregnant, Li Concubine was very jealous, and wanted to frame the empress, so she used this one stone killing two birds plan, and hurt Wang Zhao Yi to frame the empress.

After listening to his recall, Ye Zhen Zhen ask “Where is the gun? I think the evidence would have been destroyed?”

Chen Ke replied “Li Concubine did ask me to destroy the evidence, but I couldn’t do it, and kept it secretly, right now at where I live”

Ye Zhen Zhen thinks that this person was really brave, but this way it was way easier to deal with the case.

Today, Ye Zhen Zhen gathered everyone at Kun Ning Palace and infront of everyone she interrogated Li Concubine.

Ever since Li Concubine found out Chen Ke went missing yesterday, she realise something was wrong. But then again, thinking that the evidence was destroyed, as long as she insist that she was framed, most probably the empress can’t do anything to her. Therefore she stood up to the empress without a change of

expression.

But what she did not know was that Ye Zhen Zhen ordered people to get the evidence and Chen Ke admitted in front of everyone, that the item was found by him and used to harm Wang Zhao Yi, as well as show the evidence that Li Concubine wanted him to destroy.

Also this gun was found in Lu Hua Palace.

Li Concubine's face darken, although was denying, no one believed her anymore.

The evidence was very solid, Ye Zhen Zhen's enemy also can't help her say anything, and can only see how the empress punish her. The whole time Ji Wu Jiu was acting mute, and in the end only said, "Li Concubine is demoted to be Su Jie Yu, the rest the empress may settle"

Ye Zhen Zhen ordered people to bring Su Jie Yu outside Kun Ning Palace and to be flogged 40 times. The person that was going to act out the punishment has already communicated with Ye Zhen Zhen, to use all their might to hit her, as long as in the end she is still alive.

After 40 hits, Su Jie Yu was already very pale, with weak breaths. To be hit in front of so many servants, is much more embarrassing than getting demoted.

"Su Jie Yu harmed imperial consort and bloodline, she was not supposed to be forgiven. Just that the empress dowager and the emperor is kind, today I have punished her with 40 hits. In the future if anyone dares to do anything that should not be done, I will definitely not forgive!"

Although there were many people there, not a sound can be heard.

Ji Wu Jiu was standing next to Ye Zhen Zhen, looking at her. Her charismatic expression, really looks like a little tiger. Her eyes were shiny, under the thick eyelashes, looks like a glittering black pearl, making people subconsciously fall for her.

Ye Zhen Zhen did not realise Ji Wu Jiu's gaze, full of power she said "Today I will end it here, next time if anyone wants to do anything againsts the rules, I will definitely let them die beautifully!"

Ye Zhen Zhen let everyone off after her warning. Today to show her power a bit, surely there will be calmer days for some time.

After everyone left, Ji Wu Jiu was still standing there looking at Ye Zhen Zhen. She then asked “Your majesty, do you have anything that you want to say to me?”

—Sorry. Ji Wu Jiu opened his mouth, but that word was stuck in his throat, and could not be pushed out no matter what.

Chapter 32

Ye Family's madams, visited the empress again.

Ye Zhen Zhen was observing her grandmother, her mother as well as her sister in laws, they all seem to have a good complexion. Actually she was most worried for her grandfather, Ji Wu Jiu recently has turned the court upside down, and made Ye Family suffered a bit, this type of thing, it was hard for her not to find out also.

Ye Xiu Ming was someone stubborn and willful, to be bullied by Ji Wu Jiu, definitely he would be angry.

That is why Ye Zhen Zhen discreetly asked about her grandfather's condition, and finding out that he is still very actively angry, she was supposed to be worried, also feels less worried now. If he is still active that means he is still healthy.

Ye Xiu Ming was not only affected by Ji Wu Jiu, but by Fang Xiu Qing as well. Fang Xiu Qing is a man, so old madam also do not know how he should scold him, so she decided to attack his wife instead, holding on to Ye Zhen Zhen and reminisce the days where that woman once targeted her father, Ye Kang Le, and he under the oppression of the old madam did not marry her. A case of breaking a couple was spoken in such a proud tone, Ye Zhen Zhen did not know what to say. Even her mother was embarrassed, but seeing old madam was very happy, she did not stop her as well.

Although not sure what really happened, Ye Zhen Zhen thinks that Fang Xiu Qing and her grandfather's bad feelings did not grow on that surely.

Of course not, Ye Xiu Ming and Fang Xiu Qing's relationship now, actually started because of work. When Fang Xiu Qing just entered the court, Ye Xiu Ming actually think that he has a good future, and the both of them were on good terms as well. It was just that the both of them have very different political views, so they slowly fall apart. Ye Family has deep roots, so the way Ye Xiu Ming deals with matters are not so forefront and straightforward, because he has to consider many sides, and this Fang Xiu Qing, thinking that he is carrying the

burden of the welfare of the world, was much more fierce in his decisions. So the both of them started to have very different opinions and did not confer to one another, slowly they have turn to what they are today.

This type of contradiction is very hard to resolve, except to kill off one of the parties.

And when Ji Wu Jiu adds himself into this case, then it got even messier. Actually Ji Wu Jiu did not only use Fang Xiu Qing to control Ye Xiu Ming, but is actually wary of Fang Xiu Qing as well, if not to chase away a minister and to raise a minister himself, for fun?

Thinking about the relationship between the three of them makes Ye Zhen Zhen headache. The three most clever people in the country are busy fighting against each other, every sentence or glance also seems to have a hidden meaning, even thinking about it sounds scary.

Ye Zhen Zhen consoled old madam a few words and changed the topic to another direction. Madam Lu, then spoke about her brother, which was Lu Li's Father, he recently was required to go to Dun Huang to settle the rebellions there, talking about the conditions of the warfare there, where the opponents are not good in war, but good in escaping, so there was not much that has been done now. Lu Li's father is someone who has much experience in the warfare, so he was personally chosen by Ji Wu Jiu to handle this matter at Dun Huang. Upon hearing this Ye Zhen Zhen came to realize, why Ji Wu Jiu only demoted Su Jie Yu even though she made such a big mistake, it seems that her father is left to take care of the borders, so he can't punish the daughter too harshly. She initially thought he didn't want to harm pretty girls.

Also thinking back on how Ji Wu Jiu's attitude towards Wang Zhao Yi's miscarriage, in her heart she concludes that, that person really lost his heart while being the emperor.

That is why at this moment, the heartless emperor at Cui Fang Lou sneezed.

"Sir, did you catch a cold?" Hong Yun asked him. If it was another man, she would have already sat in his arms and used her handkerchief to help him wipe his nose, but the man in front of her now, seems to hate being touched by

people. Hong Yun normally likes wealthy and big spender type of men, but towards Ji Wu Jiu there is some sort of force around him that scares her, and makes her afraid of getting close to him.

“No worries” Ji Wu Jiu took out his handkerchief and wipes. A simple movement, was turned into a beautiful scene by him. The white handkerchief in his hand was made with high quality silk, this type of silk has very low production rate and was very expensive. Can be considered as only available to the royalty, normal citizen no matter how rich they are they would not be able to buy it.

Hong Yun was looking at him while holding on to her chin, till he place his handkerchief back into his sleeves, she said “sir, not to hide anything from you, I have stayed for many years in this Cui Fang Lou, meeting uncountable men, but none of them are as honorable as you” People, as long as they have money, they will try to live better. But some people no matter how they try they still can’t be compared to those that are naturally honorable.

As an emperor, Ji Wu Jiu is normally immune to such praises, so he did not reply to her praise but said “let’s talk about the important matter”

Hong Yun laughed “Sir, please speak, I will listen”

“I want to get her”

Hong Yun thinks, man are truly bad, what they can’t get will always be the best. If to his appearance and wealth, what type of pretty lady can’t he get, why must he want the married woman. Also not sure which unfortunate lady got picked by him, I will help you lady, don’t have to thank me.

Therefore Hong Yun smiled “to ask me this question, you got the right person. Woman, they like men who are very cold, the more you ignore them, the more they will notice you. You scold her, shout at her, disgrace her, she will listen to you instead”

Ji Wu Jiu was a man that slept with many pretty ladies, although he is not clear with everything between the feelings of a man and woman, but still... in his mind he imagines, if he were to scold Ye Zhen Zhen, shout at Ye Zhen Zhen... the consequences would be terrible!

Ji Wu Jiu stood up, and took another stack of money from his sleeves and

slammed it on the table, with a fake smile he said “what a good answer, these money, use it properly while you are still alive. If this way is not useful, the next time I would come and get your head.” He left after leaving those words.

Hong Yun was shocked till she almost fainted over, how can he threaten someone like that! Easily taking other people’s live, that was too much. But why did she think that he could really do it....

“Sir, please stop”

No matter what, when your life is threatened, other things can be ignored. Hong Yun said “ this matter we need to talk it through, I dare to ask, that person.. e.. madam.. what type of person is she?”

What type of person is Ye Zhen Zhen? Ji Wu Jiu was abit lost, he feels that no matter what words he used to describe her would also not be sufficient, the words really can’t be placed on her, they seem to lose it’s meaning once they are paired with her.

Ye Zhen Zhen..... is... Ye Zhen Zhen.

Ji Wu Jiu sighed and said “You only need to know, she is someone that is very hard to please”

Hong Yun thought that what he said was completely useless, if a married woman was so easily settled by you, then only that would not be normal. She smiled “no matter how hard it is to please her, it is not impossible. There is a saying even the female martyr is afraid of annoying man” When she mentioned the word female martyr, she glanced at Ji Wu Jiu, and seeing that he does not seem embarrass by this word, but was seriously nodding and said “That makes sense”

Hong Yun finally gave up trying to bring him back to the good ways, and said “that is why, sir as long as you always appear in front of her, be good to her, make her happy, as time goes by even the stones will be melted”

“How to be good?”

“Gift her items, what she likes, giver her, needs to share the same interests with her. Also, you must be gentle, not to say anything but you came here twice, but I have never seen you smile before, I wanted to ask if you know how to

smile”

“As long as I smile it would be enough?”

“Correct, as the saying one do not hit a smiling person, if you always smile to her, than she would not really reject you so harshly”

Ji Wu Jiu nodded, “thanks” He place the money in Hong Yun’s hand, turned and let.

Hong Yun was happily holding on to the money and looked towards his back and added “Remember, you must not give up! If you were not successful, it must be you did not insist long enough, definitely not my problem!” The last word was the most important point.

Ji Wu Jiu nodded, and jumped down from the second floor, and landed on the floor with stable. Hong Yun was shocked, and so were the rest of the people there, except for Feng You De.

Feng You De was waiting alone in a corner, and kept staring at the woman that wanted to touch him.

Ji Wu Jiu ignored everyone’s gaze and towards Feng You De “Go”

Feng You De was very sad, the emperor came out so fast, it looks like he really can’t...

Ji Wu Jiu was quiet the whole way, and suddenly his lips curved up and he smiled.

Feng You De was in deep thoughts, thinking whether he needs to employ a Taoist to do some exorcism, it seems Gan Qing Palace has some dirty things...

So the both of them were quiet the whole way.

When Ji Wu Jiu returned to the inner palace, he seriously started practicing his smile. With his lips curved up, and glimmering eyes, he looked at the eunuch who was standing at the door of Gan Qing palace.

The eunuch immediately kneeled down shivering “Your majesty have mercy!!”

Ji Wu Jiu “....”

Chapter 33

After Su Jie Yu got hit 40 times, she was not able to get down from her bed a good few days. During the days she was recuperating, from the whole inner palace only Xu Cai Ren came over to visit sometimes, and it was also with hidden bad intentions, it can be seen how “good” her relationship with the rest are.

She was sad, and can't help but blame Xu Cai Ren, the person who planned the idea for her. Thinking that she will need to punish her next time she sees her, but who knew that person will come by to visit her.

But before Su Jie Yu can open her mouth to scold her, she took the initiative to kneel in front of her bed, and slapped herself.

Su Jie Yu was shocked, the anger that was built in here got diminished to half, “what are you doing!”

“Little sis was useless, I have sis you suffer!” Xu Cai Ren said with tears streaming down.

Su Jie Yu scoffed and kept quiet.

“I am still new in the inner palace, I didn't know the empress is so cunning. Today, my intention to come is not to get your forgiveness, just hope that you don't keep the anger in your heart, if you are not feeling good, now you can hit me a few times, to release your anger”

Su Jie Yu this person, has a similarity with Ji Wu Jiu, like people to lower themselves in front of them. The lower the person goes, the more satisfied they get, and their ears will also get softer. She was infected ever since she entered the palace, she is like that towards Ji Wu Jiu, and the moment she turns around, the people under her will do the same.

Honestly speaking, there is something called karma, today so many women lower themselves towards Ji Wu Jiu, next time there would definitely be a woman that would be able to make Ji Wu Jiu lower himself to her. This was life.

Not to mention, the Xu Cai Ren in front of her now although was thickening her face to say pleasant things, so after placating Su Jie Yu the both of them then

continued with a session of cursing and gossiping about Ye Zhen Zhen, almost to the point where they can stand shoulder to shoulder to fight against her.

After coming out from Lu Hua Palace, Xu Cai Ren slowly walked back, she saw in front there was a group of guards passing by, and the leader was someone strong, with good leadership feel.

“That is Lieutenant Lu?” Xu Cai Ren asked

“Yes he is” The maid servant by her side answered.

Xu Cai Ren has heard about Lu Li before, he is one of the popular bachelors in the capital, good family, good attitude, with a bright future. Previously when her parents were deciding her marriage partners, he was one of the choice, but.....

“I heard he is cousins with the empress, most probably their relationship should be very good” Xu Cai Ren stared at Lu Li’s back figure, and murmured.

No matter if their relationship is good or bad, using the fact that they are cousins, and both of them always meeting in the palace (albeit not intentionally), to place a fault on to Ye Zhen Zhen should not be a hard thing to do. Cousin brother is easily suspicious, rather believe things that did not happen then to miss out, not to mention this type of indecent things.

Xu Cai Ren gritted her teeth, her gaze turning into murderous intent.

Ye Zhen Zhen, I will definitely bring you down!

Considering that the empress has just recently showed her power, so recently the people in the inner palace was very quiet on the surface and people do not dare to scheme anything.

But of course, that was only the surface. But actually the people are quite in a mess?

As everyone know, the everytime the emperor smiles, most of them time he wants to bully someone. But these two days his mouth is always carrying a slight smile, and it looks very scary, it meant.. someone will be really unfortunate!

Just that, why the emperor until now is not taking any action....

Ji Wu Jiu did not comment on this weird atmosphere, but he also realised that smiling might not work. Because when he smiled at Ye Zhen Zhen, what he got in return was a frowning Ye Zhen Zhen and “who are you planning to trouble now?”

Furthermore, it was quite tiring for his face.

So Ji Wu Jiu was not in a good mood. Other than that, there was something else that made him feel even worse.

As an emperor, to have multiple wives is very normal, at night to occasionally visit different women is also very normal. But... no matter which woman he was with, he will subconsciously imagine that the woman is Ye Zhen Zhen. This....

This type of thing, is really embarrassing, and should not be known, but at the end Xian Concubine found out. That night when the both of them were active on the bed, and during the most important part Ji Wu Jiu closed his eyes, and with a very satisfied face said “Zhen Zhen!”

“.....”

“.....”

Xian Concubine felt that she was poured by a bucket of ice water, from head to toe. She looked at Ji Wu Jiu with disbelief, and eyes filled with sadness, and disappointment.

When Ji Wu Jiu realised what he has done, immediately pulled a long face, and didn't even console Xian Concubine, tidied up hurriedly and returned to Gan Qing Palace, not staying the night.

Xian Concubine was laying on the bed, tearing up. She can accept that she has to share him, but she can't accept herself to be used as someone else's replacement.

Everyone says the emperor dislikes the empress, but the truth seems to be so. Evidently the emperor's heart cannot be known.

Xian Concubine held onto the blankets and murmured “then, you shouldn't blame me for being cold hearted”

The next night, Ji Wu Jiu was loitering in Kun Ning Palace.

When it was time, Ye Zhen Zhen was hinting him but he does not leave. The both of them did sleep on the same bed before, but that time Ye Zhen Zhen's leg was injured so Ji Wu Jiu couldn't do anything to her but.. this time it is different...

Now, Ji Wu Jiu was sitting on the table, only wearing his inner clothes. Under the warm lightings, it made his facial expression very gentle, and got rid of the coldness he carries during the day.

"Come over" He called Ye Zhen Zhen, his voice carrying a hint of pamper-ness.

Ye Zhen Zhen replied honestly "Your majesty, you know that I have a weird sickness, I cant service you" She will vomit if she tries..

"Come here, I won't touch you" Ji Wu Jiu promised

Ye Zhen Zhen was thinking, if you touch me I will vomit for you to see. So with less worries she got onto the bed. Because all the people serving them was sent away by Ji Wu Jiu, he personally removed her outer clothes, and folded them. This made Ye Zhen Zhen abit shocked.

Then, he lay with her on the bed and held her in his arms, hugging her tightly.

Ye Zhen Zhen felt her whole body stiffen.

Ji Wu Jiu whispered in her ears "sleep, I said that I won't touch you" For now..

Ye Zhen Zhen was very worried, but after being stiff for a while, sleepiness took over, so slowly she drifted off to sleep.

With her in his arms, Ji Wu Jiu can't fall asleep. He thought that he really deserved what he did, there were so many women he doesn't find them, but must crazily go for this woman. Now, to have her in his arms, but can see cannot eat, This is definitely a type of sickness!

Seeing that the person is in his arms already, it placated his feelings a little, but.. not enough.. way not enough. He felt that in his heart although not painful but seems to feel very empty, the closer he got to her, to more empty he felt. She was so near, yet so far from him.

He moved his arms a little, and in exchange he heard a sigh indicating uncomfortable-ness.

Ji Wu Jiu looked down, and kissed her black hair, mouth contemplating, but

slowly it went down to her neck. He took a deep breath, and he was filled with her scent, light and not very obvious but was capable of grabbing his soul.

Therefore, a little brother on his body that was asleep, suddenly woke up and raised his head.....

The next day after the morning court, Ji Wu Jiu found out that Ye Zhen Zhen was not there when he went to Kun Ning Palace, the maid servants said that she went to Tai Ye Lake to ice skate.

For a man to chase a woman, the most important part is only one: One must frequently promote their existence. Ji Wu Jiu was very clear about this point, that is why he changed his clothes and headed towards Tai Ye Lake.

Many people has gathered here already. Ji Wu Jiu found Ye Zhen Zhen has this ability, wherever she goes the people will follow. No matter how quiet or dying that place might be, she can also turn it into a happening place.

The frozen Tai Ye Lake, has formed a thick layer of ice on the surface, and people can go on without worries. Ye Zhen Zhen asked for a pair of skate shoes to be made, under the shoes was a piece of wood with curved up endings, looking like a small boat. The wood was polished well, and on the ice it was very easy to move.

Wearing this shoes, she was happily moving about on the ice.

But no matter how good, for a person to skate for the first time, there will be times where she lost her balance and moving back and forth. Ye Zhen Zhen nearly fell a few times, but somehow manage to stand back. Wang You Cai leading a few other eunuchs was standing on the ice, originally to help protect Ye Zhen Zhen, but they themselves were falling here and there.

Slowly being able to control her body, Ye Zhen Zhen left Wang You Cai and the rest, and was rushing forward, from far it was like a red cloud passing through very fast, or a bird carrying a flower flying through.

Ji Wu Jiu took interest into the skating and also walked on to the ice, slowly walking towards the middle. Today he was wearing a white robe, his black hair down, calmed face, with an elegant demeanor walking on the ice, almost like a

fairy.

“Your majesty, move away, move away quickly!” Ye Zhen Zhen was shouted while skating with speed. She found out the shoes are not listening to her and couldn’t be stopped! Seeing Ji Wu Jiu appearing in her sight, she wanted to avoid him but couldn’t, so she can only ask him to move away. Thinking, for Ji Wu Jiu it would be easy for him to avoid.

But Ji Wu Jiu seems to be too shocked, and stood still at his spot.

A a a — peng!

Ye Zhen Zhen with a very heroic posture fell onto Ji Wu Jiu, under the force the both of them fell, Ye Zhen Zhen straightened her waist, to find out she was riding on Ji Wu Jiu’s body.

E.....

And he seems to be enjoying it?

Ji Wu Jiu’s was laying straight on the ground, and was looking at her. Her back was facing the sun, and this winter sun was especially warm, and made a surrounding ray on her body, the ray pass through her shoulders and fell onto his eyes. So his eyes were rather painful now, and could not see properly, but the situation in right now, appears to be something red on something white, like a sunset on the cloud, making him thought that they are in a heavenly scenery.

“Your majesty, are you alright?” Ye Zhen Zhen saw that Ji Wu Jiu was in deep thoughts, afraid that he might have hurt his brain. She used her hands to lightly tap his face.

“You....” Ji Wu Jiu opened his mouth, though did not continue.

At the same time, Ye Zhen Zhen realize that she performed a misconduct again, she wanted to climb up from his body, but would not have thought that the moment she moved, he suddenly moved and holding her they roll around and ended with her being under him.

Now the both of them are even closer to one another, his hot breath was on her face, she turned her head away feeling uncomfortable.

“What’s with me?” Ye Zhen Zhen asked.

Ji Wu Jiu opened his hands, in his palm there was a hair ornament. It was dropped by Ye Zhen Zhen when they were rolling. He placed the hair ornament back on to her hair, and helped her tidied up her messy hair. Then suddenly he looked down, and before she can react, his lips were at her forehead, gentle and polite, and did not move even after some time.

You would definitely not be able to leave my palms.

Chapter 34

To make a complain report requires skill.

You can't say what you want, but you have to truly consider what the other person is more sensitive to, for an example.....

“Your majesty, I heard that the empress before she married was very close to lieutenant Lu and are cousins?”

In Ci Ning Palace, Xu Cai Ren was massaging the empress dowager with her hands. The empress dowager eyes were closed but when she heard what Xu Cai Ren said, she opened her eyes.

Xu Cai Ren frequently visits Ci Ning Palace, first to act as a filial niece towards her aunt, as well to gain favor from the empress dowager, and not to forget she can see Ji Wu Jiu more often. Before she entered the palace, she was thinking that they would be a loving couple but it did not happen as she wanted, he seldom visits her.

Ji Wu Jiu was looking down and his hands slowly moving the cup in his hands, and replied liked it was no big deal “her family really has a lot of brothers and sisters. But since she entered the palace, then she is part of the royal family, there is no need to discuss those. You have nothing better to do already, why bother asking about those things?”

Xu Cai Ren didn't know one sentence from her can cause Ji Wu Jiu to reprimand her, so she lowered her head “I am wrong”. Her hands unknowingly increased strength.

The empress dowager pulled her hand down, held it and slowly patted her hands, turned and looked at Ji Wu Jiu “blood are thicker than water, how can we break away from family so easily” then she look at Xu Cai Ren “was the person you mentioned Lu Li? He and the empress are truly cousins”

XU Cai Ren suddenly nodded “it seems like the empress and Lieutenant Lu really has a good relationship”

Ji Wu Jiu's expression turned sour, he placed the cup in his hand down on the

table, the tea in the cup could not take the action and spilled out, and some got into his hands and the table.

Xu Cai Ren stunned. And looked at the empress dowager with a scared look.

The empress dowager is not afraid of Ji Wu Jiu, who ask her to be his birth mother. She consoled Xu Cai Ren again, and towards Ji Wu Jiu she said “what are you angry about!... Wei Rong, was there something you want to say?”

Xu Cai Ren was contemplating and carefully took a peek at Ji Wu Jiu.

“Do not be afraid, just speak out, I will back you”

Ji Wu Jiu although still with a dark face, did not stop her however.

Xu Cai Ren then continued “actually... it is nothing big. Just that two nights ago, I don’t feel well, so I wanted to go to Ying Hua Hall to pray abit. But the moment I entered, I heard there was a happy conversation going on inside the hall. I got very curious, so I eavesdropped for a bit, and because I was too far, I could not tell what they were talking about, but I can tell that the voice belonged to the empress, and she called the man cousin brother, that is why I ask that question earlier”

The empress dowager’s face turned serious, “child, there is somethings that you have simply say... are you sure you saw it yourself?”

Xu Cai Ren nodded, “I did see it personally, if you do not believe me, then I will swear” she said and starts to raise her hands to swear.

The empress dowager quickly stopped her “alright alright, I believe you, but this involves the royal family’s pride, you definitely can’t tell other people” then she asked Ji Wu Jiu “emperor, what do you say?”

Ji Wu Jiu stared at Xu Cai Ren for a while, making Xu Cai Ren shivered and afraid to return his stare. Hearing that the empress dowager was speaking to him, Ji Wu Jiu stood up, and answered “I would not dare to bother you, I will definitely investigate this case properly, mother please rest well, I will leave first”

Seeing that Ji Wu Jiu has left, Xu Cai Ren started to massage the empress dowager again. Her face is no longer calm like just now, she frowned and reprimanded Xu Cai Ren “when you want to act, why didn’t you inform me first,

if today I did not support you, a small little Cai Ren, will never be allowed to discuss about the empress in front of the emperor”

“I am wrong! Because I was afraid of implicating you that is why....”

“What implicate, I am his birth mother, what can he do to me!”

“Yes, the emperor is a filial son, he would not do anything to you for the empress”

That sentence was pleasing, the empress dowager nodded and smiled. After a while, she got worried again “it's just that, although you said those words earlier, I do not think that the emperor will believe so easily”

“Do not worry, as long as we let the emperor see it for himself, even if he doesn't believe he will have to believe”

Facts show that the empress dowager still understands her son very well. Ji Wu Jiu rationally will not really believe what Xu Cai Ren said. Both women that does not like Ye Zhen Zhen was putting up a show in front of him, it was very obvious that they wanted to do. He is not stupid, actually he is way more clever than normal people.

But although his rationality does not believe, it does not mean his feelings also does not believe. Although he can ignore, telling himself that was just gossip, but Xu Cai Ren's words still went straight into his mind.

In a quiet night, in a quiet hall, only one man and one woman, happy conversations... in his mind he kept replaying the scenes like it was real. Not only that, he even dubbed the scene, the woman in his mind was using a charming voice calling “cousin brother” so sweetly and lovingly.

After doing his work for a while, what he himself is thinking also he is not sure off already, then he threw his brush, and the brush rolled around on the documents, causing a streak of red lines.

“Feng You De, go to Kun Ning Palace and get me someone, I have something to ask”

Ever since the person he placed at Kun Ning Palace was gotten rid of by Ye Zhen

Zhen, he placed another one there again, but because Ye Zhen Zhen was very cautious, his people was not able to get close to her.

“Replying to your majesty, the empress, these few days every night will leave the palace at 7.20pm , and return at 9.50pm in the night”

“Do you know where she went?”

“I do not know”

“Alright, all can leave”

After getting everyone to leave, Ji Wu Jiu was in a daze at his sit. 7.20pm to 9.50pm, it was the time that he will not be in Kun Ning Palace. Recently he has been sleeping at Kun Ning Palace every night, originally he wanted to read his documents at Kun Ning Palace, but it was inconvenient to transfer these documents here and there, and also that Ye Zhen Zhen does not like it, so he will do his work in Yang Xin Hall and after in the night he will go back to Kun Ning Palace. That time, Ye Zhen Zhen would be in deep slumber already, her body was very warm when he held her in his arms, he will get warm very fast too, both of them will sleep like that, the feeling was very secured and nice.

Originally he thought their relationship was improving, but didn't know what Ye Zhen Zhen was doing everynight when he was not around.

What did he do wrong? Ji Wu Jiu unconsciously grabbed on to the chair's handle with much force. The truth is in front of him, if he wants to investigate, he definitely would be able to do so. But he was not sure if he really wanted to investigate.

After all.... What if it was real?

What can he do to her?

Thinking about it, Ji Wu Jiu's gaze suddenly changed, and the strength of his hands increased, “pa” the item in his hands got broken into two.

At the same time, somewhere in the inner palace, Lieutenant Lu was looking at an embroidered pouch in his hands, and asked the eunuch in front of him “you were saying, the empress ordered me to go to Ying Hua Hall at 7.50pm to meet,

and to discuss about something?”

The eunuch answered “Exactly”

Lu Li placed the pouch into his sleeves and replied “thank you, I will definitely meet her on time”

The eunuch went off. Lu Li took out the pouch and pondered. This was definitely Ye Zhen Zhen’s personally made pouch, but her behavior he was clear, normally she was very careless, for her to drop this somewhere was not weird, and to let someone find it to be used in an evil way... Furthermore Ye Zhen Zhen is not someone rash or stupid, to meet a man at night at a quiet place, something like this she would definitely not do. Even if she really needed to see him, she would also do it properly, she will either send Wang You Cai or Su Yue that level of people to convey the message, why would she send an eunuch that he didn’t know, something was not right.

Therefore, there must be some scheme behind this.

But since it involves Zhen Zhen, then no matter what he will have to go, and if someone really wanted to use the matters of male and female to accuse zhen zhen, then it is best to get rid of the person quicker.

After dinner, Ye Zhen Zhen rested a while, then took a book and left the palace, and only brought along Su Yue with her.

The winter night was very cold, both of them were tightly wrapped, Su Yue holding the lantern, and another hand holding Ye Zhen Zhen, and tried to convince her “Your majesty, tonight it is so cold, why not we don’t go tonight?”

“No, I have to be committed”

These few days where did Ye Zhen Zhen go?

Answer : Ying Hua Hall

To do what?

Answer: Practice martial arts.

God knows from where Wang You Cai manage to get a martial arts book “Ying

Yang Jing". The book was quite thick and the pages have turned yellow, with some holes that seems to have been eaten by insects, it looks like an old book, making people think that it had aided in the previous jianghu matters.. all in all this book was giving out a feel of ultimate martial arts book.

On the book it was written, to practice this skill, you must find a quiet and uninterrupted location, the best was deep in the forest, or waterfall area, places that Ye Zhen Zhen can't go. So she can only find a quieter place in the inner palace, and concluded at Ying Hua Hall.

That is why these few days, every night she will come to Ying Hua hall to practice. "Ying Yang Jing" is a type of inner kung fu, so she would only be required to meditate and all is good.

No one stays at Ying Hua Hall at night, only an eunuch guards this place, but on such cold days, that guarding eunuch has earlier hide himself somewhere to keep warm.

Lu Li got close to Ying Hua Hall's garden, and found out that there was light coming out from there. In the garden there was a huge tree, but is naked of leaves. He saw Su Yue beyond the tree who was standing outside the hall. She was very cold, shivering and rubbing her ears.

He walk towards her "Miss Su Yue"

Su Yue saw who he was from the light and surprised "Lieutenant Lu? Why would you be here?"

"I happen to pass by" Lu L said and took out the pouch and gave it to her "Keep this properly, do not let the empress lose her things"

Su Yue took it and check it, even more surprise "this is really what we dropped a few days ago, why is it in your hands?"

Lu Li just wanted to answer, but heard Ye Zhen Zhen asking from inside "Su Yue, who is outside?"

Su Yue saw that Lu Li shook his head, so she answered "niang niang there is no one"

"if no one, then there must be a ghost speaking?" The door open from inside

and when she saw Lu Li, she smiled “cousin brother, it’s you”

“It’s me, Zhen Zhen” Lu Li smiled, “but, I cannot stay here for long, you have to take care of yourself” Then he lift his arms up, and nearly wanted to touch her head like how he used to, but luckily he stopped in time, and did not move.

“Cousin brother, wait for a while” seeing that he wants to leave, Ye Zhen Zhen quickly say, she pass the martial arts book to Lu Li “have look and tell me how is this “Ying Yang Jing””

Lu Li flipped the book, and returned it back to her “it is just some basic inner skill, it is good for you to practice them too”

“This is an ultimate martial arts book”

“Is it, then most probably I did not see properly, Congratulation cousin sister obtaining ultimate martial skill”

Then, from far a male voice can be heard “It looks like I did not come at the right time”

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly felt something was not right, this timing, this place, this scene, her relationship with her cousin brother..... it was too easy for people to misunderstand. Furthermore, Ji Wu Jiu has already suspected that she and Lu Li has some sort of romance going on.

Ji Wu Jiu walked out from behind a tree, not sure if it was due to anger or from the cold, his face was pale, and he seems to give of a very cold feeling. But due to the weak lighting, Ye Zhen Zhen could not see his expression properly, and only thought that his eyes is as cold as ice, and sharp as arrow, and directed at her, making her feel scared.

“Your majesty...” This time she is gone for, Ye Zhen Zhen really needs to explain properly.

However before she can speak, suddenly outside there were many lights. Two groups of eunuchs was holding lanterns to make a road, closing in the empress dowager was holding a maid servants hand and walking towards the, with a serious face.

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly understood. This was very obvious a trap, they have

properly planned this, to frame her of adultering and to make sure she is cornered truly.

Note: Cliff hanger ~ till..... (normally i don't post on weekends)....
hehehehehehehehe... enjoy~~

Chapter 35

“Mother, why are you here?” Ji Wu Jiu ‘s face got even more serious after seeing his mother here. Although he was not happy to see the scene, but he really didn’t want his mother to find out.

“Why can’t I come, although I did not bother about the matters of the inner court since a long time ago, but I will also not allow anyone to disturb the peace of the inner palace, so I would definitely be strict this time and not allow any obscene things to happen here, that will make us royal family lose our face and bloodline” The empress dowager walked closer, and looked at the people there, and did not stop talking, and sarcastically said “I didn’t know it would be so happening at Ying Hua Hall, empress, even if you want to meet up with Lieutenant Lu, you should have avoided the Buddha”

Her words were very unpleasing to the ears, even if they meet up they don’t need to avoid the Buddha, it seems like they were definitely doing something bad.

Ye Zhen Zhen felt her body turned cold, she was never in such a defensive state. Clenching her fists, to force herself to calm down, cleared her voice and said “mother, you think too much, I was practicing my martial arts here, it was a coincident to meet Lieutenant Lu here. Everyone knows that he is skilled in martial arts, so I just asked him some advice. I think the Buddha would not be angry over this type of matter.”

The empress dowager scoffed “coincident? Lieutenant Lu is not on duty today, how was it coincident?”

Ye Zhen Zhen also scoffed “mother you really know everything, even when Lieutenant Lu is on duty, also you know so well” In another words, this scheme was acted out by you.

In terms of speaking, the empress dowager truly can’t fight over Ye Zhen Zhen, she turned and look at Ji Wu Jiu, “you empress and her childhood friend meeting up here, you have nothing to say?”

Ji Wu Jiu was looking at Ye Zhen Zhen all the while. Although hearing the

empress dowager's word made him unhappy, but at this moment, he just really want to know what really happened. Taking a deep breath he said "Empress, I will give you a chance to explain yourself"

"You really came here to listen to me explain?" Ye Zhen Zhen looked at him coldly, and added "if so, why did you not hear what I explained just now?" It was obvious you are in the same gang as the empress dowager, why are you still acting.

Ji Wu Jiu's face darkens. The empress dowager shouted "how dare you, speak to the emperor like that! Really not bounded by rules eh! People, catch that adulterous couple!"

The people then wanted to move over to Ye Zhen Zhen, and she with wide eyes, took one step forward and shout "who dares!"

Her powerful voice really scared the people there, and making them contemplate. She is still the empress, if they were rude to her now, next time if she return, to kill them would be too easy.

Ye Zhen Zhen looked at the empress dowager and said "mother, you are thinking for the inner palace, I can understand, but to catch someone without evidence or witness, I am afraid that would be not following the rules" If you can, bring out the evidence!

The empress dowager knew she would say that, gestured and said "check his body"

Of course the him, refers to Lu Li, one cannot simply check the empress's body. Believing the saying that if they are really in any sort of romantic relationship, they would exchange token of love. Therefore if on Lu Li's body now, can find any sort of item that belongs to Ye Zhen Zhen then today's case would be settled.

Su Yue was so nervous that she almost can't feel her heart beating anymore. She saw a few eunuch rushing to Lu Li and was searching thoroughly on Lu Li's body, she held on to the pouch tighter. Lucky, real lucky, he gave her the pouch when he reach, if not the crime will never be washed of. This empress dowager, her plan is really evil!

The eunuchs has completed their search, and expected there was nothing.

Even if they can't find it, it was found, the empress dowager thought, this time really can't let Ye Zhen Zhen go. So she said "then let's ask Lieutenant Lu to explain, why are you here at night, and was happily conversing with the empress?"

Actually, just now after greeting the empress dowager, Lu Li has been quiet all this while, now he finally opened his mouth "replying to your majesty, emperor, I received an order from the emperor to come here, as for why, I do not know"

Hearing these words, the empress dowager stunned for a while and turned to Ji Wu Jiu.

Ji Wu Jiu was also stunned "I have never ordered you anything, nor said anything close to this"

"I do not dare to speak any lies. Today there was an eunuch holding an item to tell me about this matter, although I was not sure, but I do not dare to oblige, so I acted according to that person's saying and came here, only to find the empress being here. I see that your majesty was not arriving, so I took courage to ask the empress, and she was holding to a martial arts book and asked me a few questions about it, then your majesty and the empress dowager arrived"

His words were spoken so bluntly, even Ye Zhen Zhen started to believe it.

But to use an item to give the order was a bit weird. The emperor does not lack any paper or ink, to write a note or what, or to ask his close eunuchs to pass the message, but for an item and order to be passed like that...

After hearing Ji Wu Jiu asked "oh?, what did that eunuch give you?"

Lu Li opened his hands, and on it there was a white, with 1 inch diameter, round shaped item. Feng You De walked forward and took the item, and gave to Ji Wu Jiu.

That was a white jade, with a dragon engraving dress ornament, white and warm, definitely of high quality and hard to find. That was not the main point, the main point is this item does belong to Ji Wu Jiu. Jade that was made for the emperor, to be worn at specific occasions or seasons based on colour. This jade was white colour, it was worn by him during the autumn season, and since it has entered winter already, he has ordered it to be kept already, so he did not know

why it would reach Lu Li.

Ji Wu Jiu' face flashed through a suspicion.

Not only him, the people around them looking at the jade was also starting to think what happened. The empress was thinking, maybe my son is on the same side as me? But to use this method is too easy to be found out; Ye Zhen Zhen thinks, so it was Ji Wu Jiu doing this, but to place her into this trap, it was really to cruel.

Only Lu Li, who was still in calm composure, showing his innocent.

Ji Wu Jiu held the jade and said "must be someone falsifying my order, you may rise"

"thank you your majesty"

"Do you know that eunuch, do you remember how he looks like?"

"Replying to your majesty, I do not know him, but I remember him"

"If so, then I will need to investigate properly, who is the fella that has so much courage, that dared to falsify my order."

In the empress dowager's heart she can't accept this ending, but ever since Lu Li took out that jade ,she already know the case was close. No matter if the order was real or not, he already has the reason to appear here, this was already enough. Furthermore, just now when the eunuch searched his body, they already nearly took off all his clothes, also they didn't manage to find anything.

That person, really was too cunning.

Since it was just a misunderstanding, then I am not worried anymore. Empress to practice your martial arts here everyday, it is still better to be more careful" The empress said slyly.

"thanks for worrying, mother. As a honest person, surely the Buddha will look over me, and nothing would happen for sure" Ye Zhen Zhen also learned how to scold people humbly.

So the empress dowager who came with her head held high, left with her dropping head.

After the empress dowager left, Ji Wu Jiu who was standing away from her, turned back and called her, “still not leaving?”

Ye Zhen Zhen then started to walk, when passing by him, he wanted to hold her hands, but got brushed off by her quickly. Ye Zhen Zhen said in a low voice “Despicable”, her tone was full of disgust and hate.

Ji Wu Jiu didn’t know why but his heart felt a prick, very uncomfortable. When he returned to his senses, he realized she has misunderstood him, so he quickly rushed to her.

“I ... I really didn’t know about the jade”

Did not answer him.

“How would I help other man to meet up with my wife?”

Still did not answer.

Su Yue was worried , looking from the side, the emperor was already like this, niang niang shouldn’t you give him some face.. furthermore, the jade was obviously not provided by the emperor.

How would Ye Zhen Zhen not know about that. Although she does not believe Ji Wu Jiu’s character, but believes in his intelligence, even if he wants to trap her, he would not give the jade, it was such a loop hole. Even so, she was still very angry, although the trap was not planned by him, but he still came to catch them! Furthermore it seems like he really wanted her and cousin brother to have something.

Lu Li was standing in front of Ying Hua Hall, looking at the back of the 3 of them. Ji Wu Jiu wants to hold Ye Zhen Zhen’s hands, and was pushed away by her a few times, and in the end he held onto her hand tightly not letting go, so the both of them continued to bicker and was lost in sight in the darkness.

Lu Li looked down and laughed. Besides himself, most probably no one else will know how the jade got into his hands.... He stole it.

Yes stole. Lu Li was skilled in martial arts, his flying skills were exceptionally good. Also not to mention he knows the palace in the back of his hands. To steal something that was heavily guarded was also an easy job for him. Also he has

counted the timing properly, when Ji Wu Jiu was working in Yang Xin Hall, was the best time, as there will be less guards at Gan Qing Palace, and without Ji Wu Jiu, this leader, it was way easier.

Lu Li was an honest person, and have never stolen anything before, but this time it was different, he had to steal, for Ye Zhen Zhen. This type of blaming the empress of committing adultery , if it can happen once, it can happen twice, why not first put on a show, to demonstrate their evil heart to the emperor, and to get rid of the emperor's worries towards her, next time even if there will be people were to report about this type of things again, the emperor would also not believe them easily anymore.

Also, he has already realized Ji Wu Jiu's presence earlier. He knew that the emperor is easily suspect others, and if he were to act too proper in front of Ye Zhen Zhen, he will notice, and will only make Ji Wu Jiu suspect that he is hiding something, so being natural was the best. Also Ji Wu Jiu knew Lu Li's martial skills, so he did not dare go too near, most probably he did not hear what they said.

Luckily this time nothing happened, zhen zhen you have to be more careful. Lu Li was thinking alone.

Real author's note : I want to explain a little of Ye Zhen Zhen's attitude matters.

I think a lot of friends put too much hope on to Zhen Zhen. She is only a smarter girl compared to the rest. Also this girl grew up in a very good environment, rich, and the whole family dotes on her, and did not really put too much expectations on her strictly, just like a flower grown in a greenhouse. So it made her attitude a bit more pampered, and act as she likes, and sometimes what she says are not processed by the brain. You see the things that she plays with, none of them are normally played by ladies from rich families, but she likes them, and her family also does not reprimand her as well.

This type of people to be thrown into the inner palace warfare, would require some training, not possible for her to win everyone at the beginning. So she is considered to be only in a defensive mode in the palace, keep getting framed for this and that, also she was lucky that she is rather smart and a little lucky, so she

managed to escape each round. But of course it could not be like that forever, because people needs to grow, being targeted a few times, slowly she will be better. Understanding that you guys like to see the empress being the most powerful one and obeyed by everyone in the palace, but one must understand that the storyline needs to be based by the character. The empress is not a perfect person, she has many weaknesses. I have always thought that a person with weakness is a true complete person. Although you guys might not care about the character's behavior or attitude, whether it was complete or not, but as an author I have always hope that I can face the challenges of an author. I hope everyone understands.

Translators note: I purposely translated the author's thoughts, because it seems very fitting to do so. ^.^

Now seriously happy weekend, next update will be on Tuesday afternoon +8GMT.

Happy weekend, and long holiday for Malaysians ~~ hip hip hurray!!!!
(Merdeka!!)

Chapter 36

Disclaimer : May contain some scenes not suitable for children.. though not detail. Read at your own risk

Thus with his thick face, Ji Wu Jiu followed Ye Zhen Zhen back to Kun Ning Palace.

He is not good at comfort woman, most of the time when he really needs to, he would just use candied words, now towards the angry Ye Zhen Zhen, he really don't know what he should do. To explain, he has done it already, and normally he is the less talkative type, so he does not feel like repeating the same words.

The atmosphere was really awkward.

Ye Zhen Zhen was very tired and have climbed on to her bed and slept. Ji Wu Jiu was by her side, in deep thoughts.

Today, that case, there should be something more to it. Firstly, why would the empress dowager able to accurately appear on time to Ying Hua Hall? Second, who was the one who used his jade to falsify his orders and got Lu Li to appear there?

The first was easier to clear, in this scheme surely the empress dowager is involved. Then was it her that asked someone to steal the jade to pass the fake order? It doesn't seem possible.... As long as Lu Li take out the jade, then he can explain the misunderstanding immediately, it doesn't seem like it was used to trap someone.

Also, not to mention when the empress dowager ask people to search Lu Li, it was almost as if, she is guaranteed to get something..

Gathering all this thoughts, Ji Wu Jiu came up with something : Most probably the empress dowager did order someone to falsify the order, just that not the emperor's order but the empress's, and use something that belonged to Ye Zhen Zhen. But what he couldn't have thought is that Lu Li found out the plan, and changed Ye Zhen Zhen's item with his jade, and change the whole situation around.

Here we should acknowledge Ji Wu Jiu's rational and logic thinking powers, if he is not an emperor, he would definitely be suitable to take on a job as a police detective, or something. He should be someone as well.

Therefore, the jade could have been stolen by Lu Li, or someone from Gan Qing Palace could have stolen it and passed it to Lu Li. No matter which was it, the people at Gan Qing Palace should be properly re-trained.

The moment he thought of how Lu Li took the jade, and told such a big lie, Ji Wu Jiu's first reaction was actually not angry, but felt lucky. The anger in his heart also dissipated quite a lot, and decided to act stupid this time round, and not punish Lu Li. Then after, when he thought of how the empress dowager wants to use the method of placing a green hat on to her own son to scheme her daughter in law, he got angered and slammed the table.

Although he initially decided to be a filial son, but it doesn't mean he will allow himself to be controlled by the empress dowager.

The person beyond the mosquito net seems to be disturbed by his action, and made some noise indicating that she is uncomfortable.

Ji Wu Jiu then quietly removed his outer clothes and climbed on to the bed as well, squirming into the blanket, and held Ye Zhen Zhen tightly in his arms.

As though as ease was achieve suddenly, he took a deep breath. Placing his chin lightly on her collar bone, he quietly whispered to her ears "did you know, I was really afraid that it was real"

What replied him was only the other person's even breathing.

"Luckily it was not" He added

The next day, afternoon, Ye Zhen Zhen heard that near the plum blossom garden, a eunuch hanged himself to death, the empress dowager asked the Lieutenant Lu to check whether it was the same eunuch that falsified the order.

"So was it or not?" Ye Zhen Zhen asked Su Yue. She did not go to the scene, but Wang You Cai did went and see what happened and met with Lu Li.

"Yes, and no" Wang You Cai answered.

“O?” Ye Zhen Zhen placed her cup down and asked, a bit curious “how so?”

Wang You Cai lowered his voice and said “it is like this niang niang, Lieutenant Lu ask me to ask you, is there anyone you want to finish off”

Ye Zhen Zhen rolled her eyes, and smiled “cousin brother, is really detailed”

The empress dowager wants to kill off that person to keep her from being involved, so that eunuch that was hanged would most probably be the person who falsified the orders, and since the only witness is Lu Li, if he said it was him, then it would be him, if he said it is not, then he will not be.

If he denies, then another person would be caught to be investigated...

Lu Li has passed a few years in the palace, so he sees things better and clearer compared to Ye Zhen Zhen. The fights in the inner palace, their schemes and plans, is not any less than those at court. And the women that can exist in the inner palace, they definitely would not be clean from any schemes or plans, nor are they innocent or naïve. As for the servants that would be missing or lost due to their plans, those would be uncountable, not enough pity to be given as well. Lu Li does not want to be involved in these, but for Ye Zhen Zhen he is willing to do it this time.

Through this case, Ye Zhen Zhen also received some wake up call. If it was not for cousin brother’s intelligence, she would really be framed now. Realising that she was truly not careful previously. Once at home, she can do what ever she likes, and no one would dare to do anything to her, but now to be in this place, she can no longer do as she likes. She knew that the inner palace was a place full of traps, schemes and danger, but that was only on the surface, not detailed enough. Previously the other cases she managed to turn the situation around herself, has made her a bit careless, and proud. Last night, has finally woke her up to the real cruel happenings that can happen in the inner palace, and made her realize if she make any small mistakes will lead to big repercussions, and could also involve her family.

These type of thoughts make her feel that she really dislikes the life in the inner palace.

But dislike is dislike, she will still need to face the reality. She cannot die, and cannot be disposed of. She has to be extra careful, plan carefully, and live

properly, and stay at her position. In her heart, she was thinking if she will ever be able to leave this place during her live. But then, this wish is really too farfetched, and not possible.

To be honest, sometimes she really wants to gather all the women that creates trouble, tie them up and feed them to the pigs.

“Niang niang? Niang niang?” Wang You Cai called Ye Zhen Zhen, as she appears to be in a daze.

Returning to her senses, Ye Zhen Zhen said “go and tell Lieutenant Lu, thanks for the thoughts, but those people I want to finish off, I can deal with them myself, make sure he doesn’t do anything”

Lu Li is only the head of the guards, if he were to be involved with the inner palace, most people will use him as an excuse to create more problems, she does not want anything to trouble him.

This case, she wants to revenge herself. Although she can’t do anything to the empress dowager now, but to give warning to the little shrimps under her is still possible.

At night, Ji Wu Jiu arrived earlier than normal. He stopped the announcement of his arrival, and walked straight in, and seeing Ye Zhen Zhen in a daze in front of the lights, he asked “what are you thinking about?”

Ye Zhen Zhen saw him, and greeted “your majesty”, with an expressionless face.

Ji Wu Jiu knows that in her heart, she is still unhappy about yesterday, and he does not know what he should do to console her, he himself is also abit angry, angry that she is still angry at him.

Ji Wu Jiu sat down, and took the “Yin Yang Jing” book and look through, the inner kung fu that the book is talking about is very normal, most probably this book was bought from a bookstore outside. This type of book would only cost a few liangs, so say that it is some sort of ultimate skill, the woman should have been duped.

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly asked “Your majesty, can you tell me, about the case yesterday besides the empress dowager, who else is involved?”

Ji Wu Jiu sold out Xu Cai Ren without second thought, “There is still Xu Cai Ren, both her and the empress dowager was acting in front of me, that is why I mistook their rumors” At the same time removing himself from the case.

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded, and decided to properly punish this Xu Cai Ren this time.

Actually, even if Ye Zhen Zhen don't touch Xu Cai Ren, Ji Wu Jiu has decided to punish her as well. Previously towards Xu Cai Ren, he still had some brother and sisters relationship, although did not touch her body, but wanted to slowly progress her position, to allow her a peaceful live in this palace. But this time, she really went overboard, to frame the empress, to let the emperor wear the green hat, and to lead the empress dowager to scheme for such a plan... she really thought she was the only one that knows how to scheme, the rest are all stupid?!

Ye Zhen Zhen saw that Ji Wu Jiu's face was slowly showing a sign of anger, and did not know what he is thinking about. To interact with him now is rather boring, so she decided not to bother about him, and went to bed to sleep.

Who knew, Ji Wu Jiu very quickly went over, and tightly held her in his arms, his legs were also on her body.

Ye Zhen Zhen was not used to it, and tried to push him away, but he held her extra tight, and at the end spoke to her ears, “stop messing around, sleep”

Ye Zhen Zhen was left speechless, but since she can't avoid it, she slowly and simply accepted it, yawned, and very quickly fell asleep. Because he held her too tight, she did not sleep properly, it was almost like sometimes there was a string that was tied around her tightly. Midnight, she woke up from the heat, but not fully awoken. In between being awake and sleep, she felt that on her legs there was something hard, that was making her uncomfortable, and subconsciously her hands went to move that thing, but no matter what, that thing did not move away, so she decided to pull that thing hard.

Her ears suddenly came a shout of pain from Ji Wu Jiu.

Ye Zhen Zhen initially thought she was dreaming, and took some time to wake up. She sat up, rubbed her eyes, and saw Ji Wu Jiu was laying side ways, with his body curled up. Both his hands was holding his crotch area, and seems to be in

deep pain.

“What happened to you?” Ye Zhen Zhen asked,

“.....” Ji Wu Jiu was in deep contemplation, it was not hard to explain with words.

Ye Zhen Zhen thinks that something is truly wrong, so she called out “Call the imperial doctor!”

The doctor in charge rushed over despite the cold wind, and was fully awoken by the time he reached Kun Ning Palace. When he saw where Ji Wu Jiu was hurt, he got shocked, looking down, his eyes kept rolling, in his heart he was very curious, and the emperor and the empress, what on earth did they do....

The doctor tried his best to not show his curiosity, straightened his face and was helping Ji Wu Jiu check his injuries. He gave his prescriptions, and then only called in Ye Zhen Zhen, and looking at the both of them, “Your majesties, I hope both of you will rest for a few days, bedroom activities should be stopped these few days, and also next time... please be more gentle”

Ye Zhen Zhen has already found out earlier that she was the one to be blamed, and hearing the doctor’s wear, she nodded her head seriously.

Ji Wu Jiu suspects that Ye Zhen Zhen did not understood what the doctor said.

After the doctor left, Ji Wu Jiu’s pain has lessen greatly, his body has a layer of sweat now, due to the pain earlier, there was still droplets of sweat on his forehead. Worried and sorry, Ye Zhen Zhen kneeled on the bed and helped him wipe of his sweats.

Seeing Ye Zhen Zhen doing that, his heart felt like it was flooded with warm water, warm and very comfortable.

“Still painful?” Ye Zhen Zhen asked carefully.

“Pain” Ji Wu Jiu purposely answered in a pained voice, his facial expression showing an equally pained expression.

Ye Zhen Zhen got even more sorry, “I am sorry.. I really didn’t do it on purpose”

Ji Wu Jiu looked at her, with his eyes half closed. His eyes were very bright, with

a slight shine of gentleness, but she did not see them, still engrossed in using her handkerchief to wipe of his sweat on his forehead.

Suddenly he held her hands.

“Whats wrong?” Ye Zhen Zhen wanted to free her hands, but did not manage.

Ji Wu Jiu used some strength and pulled, Ye Zhen Zhen did not manage to react, so she fell into his arms. He held her tightly into his chest, and holding her down, not allowing her to move.

“Zhen Zhen, don’t be angry anymore” Ji Wu Jiu’s voice was heard above her head, most probably due to the pain earlier, his voice carries a tone of huskiness.

Ye Zhen Zhen was leaning on his chest, did not answer, but only nodded her head lightly. Her chin knocked onto his chest twice, weakly, but caused his heart to heat up.

This pain was worth it, Ji Wu Jiu thought.

Although.. it was really painful.....

Chapter 37

Early in the morning, Feng You De was leading an imperial doctor with a full white beard to Gan Qing Palace.

This doctor's surname is Tie, the head of the imperial doctors, and also the strongest in skills. Earlier on, he heard that the emperor wanted to meet him, he roughly guessed that it would most probably be about the night two days ago... about that night where the emperor and empress, when they played abit over board, he has already heard about it from Doctor Tie.

But far from his expectations, the emperor did not ask him to check his body, but gave him a book.. "Yin Yang Jing"?

This book was taken from Ye Zhen Zhen by Ji Wu Jiu. Originally he saw that the book was very normal, but after a while he found out there was something extra about this book, just that no matter how he flips the book, it seems the skills that the acupuncture points that this book involves are not really used to train internal kung fu, so that is why today he found a professional to look through it.

Doctor Tie, flip through the book, closed it and returned the book back to Feng You De.

"So?" Ji Wu Jiu asked

"Replying to your majesty, this book truly can help to cultivate a little of internal kung fu but it would not be effective. The main purpose is...." He tried to properly rephrase his words, "used to balance yin yang"

Balancing Yin Yang? Ji Wu Jiu looked at Doctor Tie skeptically: Don't tell me it is about what I am thinking about?

Doctor Tie nodded: Exactly what you are thinking about!

He took the book from Feng You De again, opened it and showed Ji Wu Jiu "this book is called Yin Yang Jing", actually this was a combination of 2 books, the front part was "Yang Jing", to be practiced by males; the back part is "Yin Jing", practiced by females. After cultivation, in due time, it helps to bring the Yin and Yang together"

In other words, it was something that helps the bedroom activities!

Ji Wu Jiu murmured to himself “no wonder now a days she is very manly in her behavior, she went and studied the “Yang Jing” part”

Doctor Tie didn’t really understand “sorry, but what you mean is....?”

“nothing, Feng You De, award”

After the doctor left, Ji Wu Jiu took the book and split it into 2, “Yang Jing” he kept for himself, “Ying Jing” he plans to return it back to Ye Zhen Zhen. Although the book has not been returned to her, he can’t help but be anxious about the harmonization of the Yin and Yang.

Then he went to Yang Xin Hall, but didn’t realize after looking through a few documents, Ye Zhen Zhen personally came to Yang Xin Hall to look for him.

Ji Wu Jiu was very surprised, one needs to know Ye Zhen Zhen seldom take the initiative to visit Yang Xin Hall.

“Is there a reason you came to look for me?”

“Nope”

“Then you miss me ?”

“I came here to watch something”

Ji Wu Jiu didn’t understand. He took something from his table and passed it to her “why not take a look at this first, should be more interesting”

Ye Zhen Zhen took it and glanced through, there were 3 documents, two of them came from 600 miles express mail, and another is 800 miles express mail, they came from Gan Su, Da Tong, Liao Dong, the contents were about a similar thing. Beyond the borders there were armies approaching them, and to timing was actually quite similar as well.

These three places is located at the northern borders of Da Qi, the south, middle and north, the distant between them is a thousand miles, if there are army movements there at all three places at the same time, then it is worth to be contemplated.

The opponents of these 3 places are the southern Tu Lu Fan, northern

Mongolian Da Da Bu, as well as the eastern Nu Zhen tribe, all the head of their regions, armies are strong too.

Ye Zhen Zhen looked at the documents carefully, and worriedly said “this groups of barbarians would not attack us Da Qi at the same time right?”

Ji Wu Jiu nodded, this woman indeed understand the root of the problem, this was what he was most worried about. He asks “If there were to attack at the same time?”

“If yes then we would need to defend all three sides, and not to mention these three places are very far, not able to help one another. At that time when our armies are separated to different locations, we would be in a disadvantage. Also not to mention we need to leave a portion of them in the capital to protect it, because if any of the three locations has been won over, the other 2 sides would definitely not be able to help, and also not enough time, so the capital can only protect itself” But if really so, then the armies that are separated into 3 different locations would be even more dangerous. Ye Zhen Zhen frowned.

“You said it very well, come here” Ji Wu Jiu gestured “Sit over here”

Ye Zhen Zhen know that he wants to show her something, so she sat next to him, the dragon chair is very wide, two person sitting side by side, does not make it crowded also.

Ji Wu Jiu opened up a map infront of them, there was markings made on three places on the map. Looking at the map he said “what I am curious is, if it is real, then why will they join hands to attack Da Qi”

To go to war, the risk is very high. These barbarians have a harsh life, during winter if they ate too many lambs, then during spring they would have to spend it in hunger. So every two to three days they will go into Da Qi and steal things, and sometimes they will get something good. But war would be different, it would require countless amount of people’s live to change, unless the wages is huge, if not it was not worth it to try.

Ye Zhen Zhen’s finger gestured on to the map, and said “don’t tell me they want to take over our land? Their appetite is really big”

“It should not be that simple” Ji Wu Jiu ponders for a while and asks “how do

you think we should place our armies?”

“I do not know these stuffs”

“No worries, just tell me your opinion”

“Tu Lu Fan compared to the other two is abit weaker, and is the furthest from our country, after they extend to Ha Mi, did they only have interactions with Da Qi. There is General Lu and General Su guarding there, and keeping them away from the borders should not be a hard thing. As for the other 2 places it would not be easy, I think we should place an army in the middle of Xuan Fu and Da Tong, as a second layer of defense. It is near to the capital as well, so there should not be any mistakes. Also, Da Da Bu’s armies is also scary, so there should be elite forces to guard there. As for Liao Dong....” Ye Zhen Zhen was contemplating a bit.

“Continue”

“I do not really know about Nu Zhen tribe, but with the rough terrain there, they shouldn’t be able to attack us there.” After Ye Zhen Zhen finished, she saw Ji Wu Ji was looking at her, so she asked “how did my explanation go?” A face asking for praises.

“Not Bad”, Ji Wu Jiu nodded, “but I think you missed out something, at war, we should not depend too much on the geographical reason, in the end the factor that determines wining or losing, is people”

Ye Zhen Zhen was not happy with his reply a little.

One of Ji Wu Jiu’s hand held on to her shoulders, pointed at the map and said “Tu Lu Fan, seldom wages wars with us, this time most probably they were threatened by someone, or used by someone, this two should be investigated further, Da Da Bu’s internal management is having conflict now, their leader and prime minister is not in good terms, a few ministers are also wavering, and wanted to treason, we can use this point; Nu Zhen tribe, their army and horses are strong, all of them are loyal and full of ambitions, they are the most dangerous group out of the three of them. That is why “ he concluded “Tu Lu Fan and Da Da Bu, is not worrisome, they are just chess pieces in this game, only Nu Zhen tribe is the one we should be vary about, we will need to properly fight with Nu Zhen, and let them realize the true power of Da Qi, so that next time

they will consider it properly”

Ye Zhen Zhen was abit astounded with all these information

“What’s wrong” Ji Wu Jiu can’t help but brushed her chin a little. This movement was very light.

“You are very good” Ye Zhen Zhen’s clear eyes were clearly indicating her sincerity. Although this person is bad, but he has some real capabilities.

To be praised by Ye Zhen Zhen so straightforwardly, Ji Wu Jiu’s heartbeat sped up. He looked at her and said “if so, why not award me with something?”

“What award do you want?”

“Kiss me” He pushed his face over.

Ye Zhen Zhen was not used to how that person can change from a capable emperor, to a gangster in just a few seconds, frowning she pushed his face away.

Then, suddenly there were noises of people speaking outside, in the conversation include crying noises from a woman.

“Who is making fuss outside?” Ji Wu Jiu shouted

Ye Zhen Zhen though, in her heart she said, its here!

Feng You De, spoke through the door, “Your majesty, Xu Cai Ren wants to meet you”

“No” Ji Wu Jiu, still have not decided how he wants to punish her.

Therefore, outside Feng You De’s advice can be heard “Xu Cai Ren, you also heard it yourself, please return”

“I won’t, I want to meet the emperor! Your majesty, cousin brother! Your cousin sister is bullied by the empress!” She actually managed to lose the eunuchs, opened the door and went in.

Ji Wu Jiu was shocked by the entrance of something, e no.. someone.

This person’s hair seems to have dropped all, more or less, and was only left with a few strands, appearing to look like a few grass that was dying soon on a vast land, it was better to have none; not only so, her eyebrows was also gone, in a glance the pair of eyes was like it was placed on an empty face, with two black

holes, with water coming out from it, her skin was pale, most probably because of the hair loss.

“Your majesty!” Xu Cai Ren was struggling to rush to Ji Wu Jiu’s side, and was held down by the eunuchs that rushed over. Feng You De took a look at Ji Wu Jiu, the latter nodded his head, so he left with others.

Xu Cai Ren was sitting on the floor, crying non stop.

Ye Zhen Zhen was sitting properly on the dragon chair next to Ji Wu Jiu, looking at Xu Cai Ren, and asked smiling “cousin sister, did you take wrong medicine? Why did you suddenly turn bald? Although it is rather interesting”

“It was you, you evil woman!” Xu Cai Ren glared at Ye Zhen Zhen, so angry that she wants to eat her raw, but Ji Wu Jiu was still here, she came here to ask for his help, that is why she is trying her best to control herself from going over to Ye Zhen Zhen to bash her up, she turned to Ji Wu Jiu, face full of tears. If it was when she still have hair, she most probably would still be able to bring up some pity, but now... it was rather....

Xu Cai Ren crying hard “Your majesty, your majesty, the empress gave me poison, that caused me all my hair to drop, your majesty please help me!”

Ji Wu Jiu turned and look at Ye Zhen Zhen, “you did it?”

“So what if I did it, if she can plan to trap me, I can’t give her a little poison?” Ye Zhen Zhen broadly admitted what she did and also added oil to the fire, “not to mention, she also used you, this also is considered to help you revenge” In her heart, she knows Ji Wu Jiu hates it when people try to outsmart him, this time he would not help Xu Cai Ren.

Indeed, Ji Wu Jiu nodded “Makes sense”

Xu Cai Ren did not believe Ji Wu Jiu would actually act like that, “your majesty, your majesty! You have to help me, the empress she...”

Ye Zhen Zhen stopped her with a smirk “I, advice you to stop the pestering, justice or not, it is not decided by you. Why didn’t you think, if I can make you lose your hair, I can also make you lose your head! I have already soften myself, and kept you alive, you did not repent but came here to make so much noise. You should keep your tail and be a human properly, when your hair grow back, it

would be fine again”

Ji Wu Jiu wanted to laugh from her weird speech, stopping himself from laughing, he cleared his throat and called Feng You De in, “ Xu Cai Ren’s hair has all dropped, not pleasing to the eyes, from today onwards she will be demoted to 8th Rank Xuan Shi, no wages for half a year, and grounded for 3 months”

Xu Cai Ren was dragged out while crying.

Ye Zhen Zhen felt that she finally managed to get her revenge. She leaned on the dragon chair, relaxed her body, and closed her eyes, her nerves were in a lazy mode.

The more he look at her, the more he likes her. One of his hands was placed on the chair, the other held on to her should, looking at her side profile, the more he looks at her, the more he wants to kiss her.

No rush, now it is not the right time.

“Your majesty, what are you thinking about?” Ye Zhen Zhen asked.

—— I am thinking, one of these days, I will definitely hold you down on this dragon chair, and properly love you. (wink wink... hahahahaha)

Chapter 38

Disclaimer : Slight adult contents in the middle of the chapter, each chapter as funny as usual.. hahaha

Ever since Ye Zhen Zhen knew about Ji Wu Jiu's talent in handling wars, her impression about him turned slightly better, and will occasionally loiter around in Yang Xin Hall, to discuss some questions with him. Her job as an empress was not really busy, most of the things was settled by Su Yue, Su Feng and Wang You Cai, and some times she will trouble Zhuang Concubine, and the things that truly require her are very little.

So, from time to time she will come and disturb Ji Wu Jiu.

Though, Ji Wu Jiu does not consider this as a disturbance, and to be honest, he thinks the way Ye Zhen Zhen thinks is very miraculous, can think of what others normally won't think of, and most of them makes him surprise, in a good way.

For an example, this time;

When planning the strategy to go against Tu Lu Fan, besides using the general to fight them on the surface, Ji Wu Jiu also wanted to set traps for them to fall into.

"Tu Lu Fan will most probably attack Dun Huang, this place is located on the west of Da Qi, so as long as we guard the route from Ha Mi to Dun Huang, then we can trap them there" Ji Wu Jiu explained.

"Then what about Da Da? They will attack Xuan Fu or Da Tong?" Ye Zhen Zhen asked.

"Da Tong"

"Why are you so sure?"

"Have you forgotten? The main general in Da Tong is Li Xu, this person is very good in attacking, but not good in defending, very brave but not smart" Ji Wu Jiu said, stopped a while and continued "such a great loophole"

This person is too cunning, Ye Zhen Zhen thinks. Suddenly an idea came to her

mind, she said “actually if we know where they will pass by for sure, we don’t necessarily use army to defend against them. We can bury some bomb on their route, and bomb them”

Ji Wu Jiu nodded, upon hearing her words “this is a good idea”

“Furthermore, the best would be if this bomb does not require people to light up manually, as long as they step on it, then they should be blasted apart” Ye Zhen Zhen added.

The more he thinks about it, the more Ji Wu Jiu thinks that this idea is workable, and immediately called the arm power makers to discuss about the possibility, Ye Zhen Zhen was listening by the side, and occasionally add her ideas.

At the same time, Zhang Feng also brought along a good news, the multiple shot gun has been tested and it was very successful, a few days later he will submit in an official request to mass produce this gun, once the emperor approves.

Ye Zhen Zhen’s eyes shimmered when she heard about this, and looked at Ji Wu Jiu earnestly.

Ji Wu Jiu’s got soft hearted by the way she looked at him, so he asked for another gun for her, but of course only the gun, no bullets.

Recently, towards Ji Wu Jiu, the empress dowager seems to understand him less. Her son, since last time has never dote on any woman fully, but now, he has slept in Kun Ning Palace every night for almost a month now. Not sure what that little demon did what to the emperor, making him almost not recognizing his own mother.

Therefore the empress dowager decided to advice Ji Wu Jiu and reminded him to rain fairly.

Results was, Ji Wu Jiu, not giving her any face replied her “mother, you worry too much, the empress is my wife, the relationship between us is very good, mother you should be happy for us instead”

Using this type of words to shut the empress dowager's mouth is still quite useful, because in status, only Ye Zhen Zhen is the most suitable to be with Ji Wu Jiu, and only her have the advantage to keep the emperor to herself, she is the main wife after all.

Of course, Ji Wu Jiu understands what is to rain fairly, before knowing Ye Zhen Zhen, he has always been like that, but now there is a little problem, no matter which woman he goes with will also end up with him thinking that the person under him is Ye Zhen Zhen, this makes him think that he himself has some sort of illness too.

But, to so frantically only wanting that one woman's body, most probably it really is some type of illness.

However, no matter what, towards this type of issue, Ji Wu Jiu decided to follow his heart, what he wishes to do, he will do. And the thing that he wants to do the most now, is to make Ye Zhen Zhen his. Although the progress is not too smooth now, but at least she does not reject his touches anymore, sometimes when he gets a little more intimate, she will also accept. Also, at night when he sleeps with Ye Zhen Zhen in his arms, it was a good feeling too, his sleeping quality was very good too. After she falls asleep he can still be more intimate, to satisfy his needs dryly... If worst comes to worst, when his little brother can't take it anymore, he will..... uhm... you know...

Though this type of night life looks like someone is truly ill, but Ji Wu Jiu is happy. He thinks that he and Ye Zhen Zhen are living the life of an old couple, waking up together, sitting together, eating together, although the conversations between them are not many, but they seem to know what the other is thinking about and are very compatible.

The above was all along only Ji Wu Jiu's one sided thinking.

Ye Zhen Zhen did not realize what he does to her. Recently she was studying about the Nu Zhen Tribe most of the time reading books. Ji Wu Jiu asks her why she is studying about them, she answers "knowing your enemy, will never lose against them"

Ji Wu Jiu thought it was funny "you will not be required to be in the front line, to know about the enemy would not be under your job as well"

Ye Zhen Zhen answered “it is still best to understand more, who knows if one day it might be useful”

Ji Wu Jiu thought that what she said made sense, so he also went over to study together. The both of them were next to each other studying the same book, and would occasionally lift up their heads to speak a sentence or two, to discuss a bit. Both of them, one red dress, another yellow robe, when they are squeezed next to one another, it looked like a plate of tomato fried egg.

Su Feng will come in quietly to help them change or refill their tea, and steal a look at the both of them. The male is handsome, the female is full of vibrant, like a pair of god and goddess from the heaven, and on earth it would not be possible to find another pair. The candle lights shining upon their face and body, under this warm light, it was almost like a very nice drawing.

This was truly a pair of match made in heaven, Su Feng thinks in her heart.

The empress dowager did not manage to get Ji Wu Jiu to visit other women, so she decided to take another route, to start with the people beside him. She first called upon Feng You De.

Actually, Feng You De towards the emperor doting only on the Empress, has his own thoughts as well. If the emperor found out that he is not able to... in that matter, instead of letting all the woman know, it would be better if only the empress alone knew.

Feng You De was contemplating, not sure if he should inform this matter to the empress dowager. The emperor is very prideful, and the empress is very young and thin skinned, so she wouldn't tell anyone as well, if the both of them were to drag this matter, then the emperor's illness would not be able to be cured, this time around, why not we let the empress dowager make the decision.

Therefore Feng You De only said this to the empress dowager “The dragon seed is weak”

The empress dowager was shocked, this was not a small issue, one must understand that until today, the emperor still do not have a single child, at such a young age, he is already.... Surely there must be a way to cure !!

But only to rely on Feng You De's saying, the empress dowager does not really believe fully, so she asked the imperial doctors, to find out about the emperor's health.

"Replying to your majesty, the emperor is very healthy, empress dowager, you do not have to worry" Doctor Tie replied.

The empress dowager purposely tried to shake him "you still think I don't know? If you guys dared to lie in front of me and delay in curing the emperor, I will definitely not forgive you all!"

Looks like the emperor's little brother being pulled was made known to the empress dowager, Doctor Tie thinks for a while, and replied "replying to your majesty, the emperor really injured the dragon root, but as long as he recuperate for a while, he will definitely recover properly"

Hurt his dragon root!

The empress dowager eye's flipped and fainted.

Doctor Tie, checked the empress dowager, and she also slowly got up. Doctor Tie knows that she is like this because she is truly worried about the emperor, so he patiently explained Ji Wu Jiu's situation to her in detail, and the empress dowager only thought that he was lying to console her, and felt even worse after listening to him.

So the empress dowager decided to not mention about raining fairly to Ji Wu Jiu at this moment, in order to rain fairly, one must first have rain.

News cannot be hidden, soon almost everyone in the inner palace, started to gossip with the little facts they know, and concluded.. The emperor... he can't....

This news in within three days has been quietly distributed throughout the whole palace, Kun Ning Palace's servants also know about it, Su Yue tried to ask Ye Zhen Zhen about it, and what she got as an answer was Ye Zhen Zhen's cluelessness.

Su Yue was speechless, and asked bluntly "niang niang, the emperor, can or can not?"

"I don't know"

“Nlang Nlang!, You need to know, you must know!”

“Ok, I will go ask him later”

“.....”

Su Yue thought Ye Zhen Zhen was just joking. She was thinking, if the empress don't know whether he can perform or not, that means the emperor did not touch her, and the emperor to stay here every night but did not touch her, it concludes to this... the rumors are true.

Today, afternoon, Ji Wu Jiu once again went to Kun Ning Palace to eat, after eating he asked for tea. Su Feng's tea brewing skills are the best in the inner palace. Ji Wu Jiu found out, no matter from which point, Ye Zhen Zhen seems to be enjoying life better than him the emperor.

Ye Zhen Zhen ordered everyone to go out and said “Your majesty, they all said that you cannot perform”

“Pu—” the tea that Ji Wu Jiu just sipped was spat out. He took out his handkerchief and wiped his mouth, and looked at Ye Zhen Zhen without any expression.

Ye Zhen Zhen looked at him calmly, and waits for his answer.

Ji Wu Jiu is not sure if he should be angry or happy, he stood up and headed towards Ye Zhen Zhen, said “you close your eyes”

Ye Zhen Zhen closed her eyes. She felt Ji Wu Jiu took her hands, and placed it on something, then that thing turned bigger and harder....

“Truth against rumors, you come and feel it yourself, whether I can or cannot” Ji Wu Jiu's voice carries a hint of smile, and also seems to be suppressing something as well.

Although Ye Zhen Zhen has not much experience on this matter, but she also knows what it was, she quickly withdraw her hands, and opened her eyes, and the feeling of dislike can be seen on her face.

Her reaction really hurt Ji Wu Jiu's feelings, in his heart a feeling of anger was slowly growing, as well as an unstoppably desire.

He thinks he will not be able to suppress it any longer.

If we were to say that if there is anyone who do now know about the emperor not being able to perform, then that person would be Su Jie Yu. These days she is recuperating with closed doors, even Xu Cai Ren did not come to visit, and only heard later than Xu Cai Ren was demoted as Xuan Shi, and was also grounded.

So when Su Jie Yu finally recovered, she went to visit Xu Xuan Shi, these two people when they meet they shared their stories and in the end, ended up crying together. Su Jie Yu then accidentally touched Xu Xuan Shi's bald head, with the baby hair growing, the more she touched it the more addicted she got into touching them.

Xu Xuan Shi's hair has already grown a thin layer, from far, it looked like a furry melon, So even if there was no order from Ji Wu Jiu to be grounded, she would not get out of the room as well.

After visiting Xu Xuan Shi, Su Jie Yu started to think of how to get back the emperor's heart. She finally understood, there was no point in revenge, the most important thing now is still to grab a hold of the emperor

After that she did something stupid, something so stupid that Ye Zhen Zhen regrets so much that she did not kill her earlier.

Note: Jeng Jeng Jeng, what could that stupid thing be? Muahahaha ~

Chapter 39

December 12th, another snow fall. The whole palace seems be covered by a pair of swan's wings, white and peaceful. The weather after the snow is extra refreshing, all the servants were attracted out to take walks and to stretch their bodies.

At the eastern side of the palace, there is a small garden called Luo Chun Yuan, according to the stories, it seems an emperor has built this garden for a concubine that he liked last time. This place is rather secluded, also simple and small, there are some plants here but not as interesting as the imperial garden's, so there are very little people that head over here. But there is a small pavilion here called Fu Wang Pavilion, very well built. This pavilion is built on top of a man made hill, quite spacious inside, and also is considered the tallest place in the inner palace, when one stands in this pavilion, you would be able to see the entire inner palace. Looking at the people walking around in the palace, Ji Wu Jiu will have this feeling of being able grasp everything under his control, almost like he is the one that can decide all their fates.

Why do people love power so much? Because with power, you will gain control, to be able to control the life and death of many people, will help them gain security and accomplishment. Men, from the very moment they were a monkey, they have already been separated according to status, to obtain power. This fact has been driven into their blood and bones, after thousands and thousands of years, it is still so.

That is why, to fight for power or control is born within any males. It is just that some people are restricted by certain conditions, and will reduce their capability to fight for power. Ji Wu Jiu is standing on the highest peak of the Da Qi empire, to objectively discuss about his conditions, it is formed by finance, army, science, population, and others, if to say that he is also at the highest position of power in the whole mankind, it is not wrong to say so as well. To stand on the place he is at now, he has already been forced to be involved in any sorts of power struggle, to scheme and plan against others, full of experience, and also smarter than the rest, even Ye Xiu Ming and Fang Xiu Qing, this two

current ministers are also being controlled by him, he really is a very capable little rascal.

This also caused a very severe outcome: He is used to scheming and trapping people to keep them under his control. However, in this world not everything can be controlled by him, and also not everything or matter can be schemed upon.

A very long time later, Ji Wu Jiu will frequently think back, if he had understood those principles, then there would not be so many obstacles that happened.

Knowing that Ji Wu Jiu will occasionally go to Fu Wang Pavilion to look at the people under him, is not many, Su Jie Yu who has been with him for many years, would be one of them. That is why, not too long after Ji Wu Jiu stood at Fu Wang Pavilion, Su Jie Yu came up. She was personally carrying a tray, with 2 big cups with cover on top; Fan Chun was following her at the back, after reaching, she placed two fox seat covers on to the stone chairs there.

Su Jie Yu put down her tray, massaged her arms, smiled and said gently “Your majesty, it is very cold here, drink a cup of hot tea to warm yourself up”

Ji Wu Jiu sat next to the stone table, Su Jie Yu opened up one of the cups, inside there was another cup of tea being warmed up with hot water, so much water, it must have been hard for her to carry it up. She dried up the smaller tea cup, and with both her hands she placed it in front of Ji Wu Jiu.

When it comes to being gentle and caring, Xian Concubine carries it best with her mouth, while Su Jie Yu carries it best with her hands. It has been years, how many faults has she made, how many people has she angered, till Ye Zhen Zhen entered the palace did she only face many challenges, that is because she always has the capability to soften Ji Wu Jiu’s heart.

With this cold weather, what is needed is none other than a cup of hot tea to warm up.

Ji Wu Jiu took the tea, and take a look at the tea, the colour was reddish, smells very nice, it was Shi Qi Red tea. This type of red tea has a nickname “Qun Fang Zui”, it is a type of famous tea, every year the best tea will be sent into the

palace for the imperial family. This type of red tea is not the best, but Ji Wu Jiu really likes the colour and smell, that is why this time Su Jie Yu really provided what he liked, seeing that after smelling it Ji Wu Jiu took a sip, she finally calmed down.

Then, someone else climbed up as well.

Ye Zhen Zhen was dressed up like a fur seller by Su Yue again. She was holding a heater in her hands, on her head she was wearing a fox hat, and when she saw Ji Wu Jiu and Su Jie Yu in the pavilion, she immediately turned around and tried to leave.

Ji Wu Jiu called her “Empress, why not come and sit together?”

Ye Zhen Zhen didn’t want to bother about them initially, but afraid that Su Jie Yu will scheme something, so she sat down at the side.

Perhaps the flogging that she received was still in her mind, when Su Jie Yu saw Ye Zhen Zhen, she appeared to be not at ease.

“I did not know that the empress would be coming over, so I have only prepared 2 cups of tea, I hope you forgive me”

“She brought her own” Ji Wu Jiu saw Wang You Cai holding a big cup. He knew what was held inside that cup, it was her Da Hong Pao. (another type of red tea, Chinese tea... has tooooo many types)

The most authentic Da Hong Pao, is from Wu Yi Mountain, and the trees are very tall, monkeys are trained to pick this tea, and requires many steps to produce, and this creates high grade Da Hong Pao tea. This type of tea, every year it only produces not more than 1kg, and all are to be submitted to the palace for Ji Wu Jiu, and can be said that it is the emperor within the teas. Few days ago, Ji Wu Jiu gave some to Ye Zhen Zhen, Su feng used milk to cook the tea, and strained the tea leaves, and added some milk, warmed it up and gave to Ye Zhen Zhen to drink.

Ye Zhen Zhen liked this type of milk tea the most, Ji Wu Jiu does not like the smell of milk, so after trying one time, he does not drink it anymore. But, he likes to see Ye Zhen Zhen drinking them. When she drinks the milk tea, some will be left on her lips, then subconsciously she will use her tongue and lick one round,

and every time she does it, Ji Wu Jiu will feel his throat tighten.

Therefore, he took all his beloved Da Hong Pao tea and gave it all to Ye Zhen Zhen.

Su Feng gave Ye Zhen Zhen a small cup of milk tea, and after drinking it, as usual Ye Zhen Zhen will lick her lips, and did not realize Ji Wu Jiu was looking at her. Suddenly, she heard Su Jie Yu screamed “Your majesty, be careful!”

Seeing carefully, someone actually came up from the back of the pavilion, holding a sword aiming at Ji Wu Jiu. Su Jie Yu was seating next to Ji Wu Jiu, when Ye Zhen Zhen heard her scream, Su Jie Yu already rush over to block the back of Ji Wu Jiu.

Ye Zhen Zhen’s reaction was very fast, with a twist of her wrist, her cup fly out, and it flew towards the assassin, the assassin then use his sword to block, and missing his opportunity, Ji Wu Jiu has already stood up and was fighting against him. Ye Zhen Zhen saw that the assassin was wearing guard’s cloths and felt that something is not right.

Although the assassin is now going against Ji Wu Jiu that has no weapon on hand, it was still very hard to win over Ji Wu Jiu, and very soon was at the losing end. Ye Zhen Zhen wants to capture him alive, so she also joined in the fight. With the both of them together, the opponent has no way of wining, and was hit by Ji Wu Jiu, and when he was almost going to fall of the pavilion, this man made hill is very tall, and people falling down from here, will definitely die. Ye Zhen Zhen without thinking, rushed over to catch him. Ji Wu Jiu’s heart almost leapt out from its place, caught her wrist and pulled her back, perhaps he was shocked so the strength he used was very strong, both of the people was pulled back. The assassin fell onto the floor, holding his injured part, coughing non stop, Feng You De and Wang You Cai, rushed over and removed his weapon, and held him down.

“You are crazy!” Ji Wu Jiu reprimanded Ye Zhen Zhen angrily.

Ye Zhen Zhen saw that the assassin’s jaw moved a little, and shouted “Do not let him suicide!”

Ji Wu Jiu with quick moved walked over, one leg stepping on the assassin’s shoulder, raising his feet a little, aiming at his lower jaw and kick it a little, and what could be heard next was a Ka Ca sound and the assassin’s jaw has been

dislocated.

Feng You De search his mouth, and took out a small black packaging, on it there was 2 teeth marks. What is inside is most probably poison. He wanted to bite through the packaging, but did not make it in time.

Ye Zhen Zhen finally let out a breath.

The guards below immediately rushed over and took the assassin away. Ye Zhen Zhen asked, while following from behind them “Do you guys know him?”

“Replying to your majesty, he is a third rank guard, Kang Cheng Lu”

Then Ye Zhen Zhen ordered them “Guard him properly, make sure he does not have the opportunity to commit suicide!”

Su Jie Yu finally came back from being scared, and climbed into the arms of Ji Wu Jiu to cry.

Ji Wu Jiu did not push her away. With one hand he held onto Su Jie Yu, and looked at Ye Zhen Zhen, “why are you afraid that he will suicide?”

“I am scared of not having any evidence” Ye Zhen Zhen replied.

“Why are you scared of not having any evidence?” Ji Wu Jiu asked again.

Ye Zhen Zhen thought that Ji Wu Jiu is very bothersome, so she did not reply him and asked to leave. After returning to Kun Ning Palace, she is still worried. If assassins appeared in the palace, then Lu Li will not be able to run off from the responsibility of not doing his work properly, there could also be people that will say that the assassin is working with Lu Li, and if it continues so, then most probably Lu Family and Ye Family will be involved as well.

Ye Xiu Ming is a minister that has served three dynasties and teacher to two emperors, he can be said to be not afraid of any crime accusations, however there is one accusation that even him can't take, that would be treason. Not to mention his status with the imperial family is very sensitive, if he were to be blamed to treason, some people would actually believe. That time, Ji Wu Jiu would not need to do anything, the whole nation's saliva would be able to drown Ye Xiu Ming.

Actually what Ye Zhen Zhen is afraid of is, Ji Wu Jiu purposely change the facts

from white to black. He is the emperor, and wary of the Ye family for a long time now, if this time he used it as an opportunity to get rid of the entire Ye Family, it would not be a hard thing to do.

Ye Zhen Zhen got more afraid as she thinks about it, the room is actually warm, but she still felt cold throughout.

Cannot be like this, must be able to find the true criminal before Ji Wu Jiu do anything!

Thinking till this part, Ye Zhen Zhen found out a loop hole: Why does the assassin want to kill Ji Wu Jiu?

To kill the emperor so openly like this, either there is a deep hatred towards the emperor, or he wants to treason. When Ji Wu Jiu was coronated, he has pardoned the country once, and when he got married, he did it again, he did not do any cruel things, even if he has to kill someone, those who are killed are big criminals and deserves to die, so to kill someone that was innocent, this possibility is very low.

To say treason, that it would be very weird. To commit treason, there is two ways, one is the citizens calling for a revolution, another would fighting over the throne. Now the days are peaceful, the citizens are living well, who would even bother to go start a revolution. As for the throne, if one wants to fight for it, the first part you must be a person that is qualified to take over the throne. The empire must be passed on to someone that has the bloodline, Ji Wu Jiu not to mention brothers, even a sister also he doesn't have, and those at the side are too far, no one is eyeing at the throne as well. Wanting to kill the emperor? Ok, fine, then who would be the emperor after killing him? Do you think you can become if you wish to be? Who would be willing to accept you simply?

Ye Zhen Zhen found out that she fell into a black hole again. Not to mention to find out the real mastermind, for her now to find out the motive of killing the emperor also she is not sure...

Wait... kill ... kill?... IfThe main motive is not to kill people?

A door seems to have opened infront of Ye Zhen Zhen.

She thought of how Su Jie Yu trying to block the attack of the assassin and how

smooth her actions were. Su Jie Yu, a weak woman, that never practiced the martial arts before, how can her reaction be quicker than her, and Ji Wu Jiu? The assassin was behind Ji Wu Jiu and Su Jie Yu, in order to see the assassin, she must first turn back, if there was nothing why did Su Jie Yu turned back? Also, the place that the assassin appeared was directly opposite Ye Zhen Zhen, if to say the first person to spot the assassin, then it should have been her wouldn't it?

Also, for a cowardly, unskilled, slow reaction woman, to see someone jump out from no where, the first reaction shouldn't it be just mindless scream? How can she skipped this step and immediately guard Ji Wu Jiu? How can she be so sure that the assassins target is going to be Ji Wu Jiu?

All this coincidence fall onto a line now, Ye Zhen Zhen finally found a possible and logical answer: Su Jie Yu got crazy from trying to gain the emperor's favor, not sure who's idea did she get it from, or perhaps it was her own plan, and in the end she did such a foolish plan, wanting to act out a scene, using the method of saving Ji Wu Jiu to gain his favor again.

If it really was no, then Su Jie Yu is really stupid to no extend. The plan might look like it could work, and if it were successful, then it would definitely make her climb up her posts again, but has she never think about it failing? If it was exposed, then there would be unlimited people involved. This was trying to kill the emperor, who cares if it was real or not, it was definitely unforgivable, if really exposed, then General Su will definitely not be saved, even the entire Su Family would also be required to be used as a wager.

Therefore, it is very important to get the criminal to admit to the crimes when he is alive, and not let this matter implicate the Ye Family. Ye Zhen Zhen's mind was only full of these thoughts while she walk back and forth in her room.

Note: Ladies and gentlemen ~ that was the stupid thing that Su Jie Yu did.....

Chapter 40

The emperor was attempted assassination, all ministers were silent initially. When they heard that the assassin was an imperial guard, then discussions were made.

Now a days, many people has remained distances with Ye Xiu Ming without any traces, because they don't know how the emperor will treat him later on.

Ye Xiu Ming and Lu Li is not involved directly, so he did not hide themselves from people, and did what he was supposed to do. Although on his face he did not show any anything, but inside he is calculating what to do.

To be honest, Ye Xiu Ming actually suspect on whether or not Ji Wu Jiu arranged for this act himself. Now the assassin is being locked up in jail, and no one can enter without imperial edict; Lu Li was also grounded at home and watched by a few guards.

Also due to reasons, the women of the Ye Family are not allowed to enter the palace, and so they cannot get news from Ye Zhen Zhen.

Therefore the Ye Xiu Ming now is a bit thrown of balance.

Actually inside the palace, Ye Zhen Zhen is also equally thrown of balance. Although she is rather confident with her guess, but.... There is no evidence. Now cousin brother is being grounded, if the crime is made true... she really can't think of what would happen.

No, she can't stay here and just keep thinking about it, first she will meet with Su Jie Yu.

Ye Zhen Zhen brought along enough people, and went to Lu Hua Palace. Su Jie Yu, because of blocking for Ji Wu Jiu that time, has brought upon some attention from him to her, but Ye Zhen Zhen could not detect any happiness from her, but instead she was appearing a bit scared. This has helped justify Ye Zhen Zhen's guess further. Since the guard did not die on time, Su Jie Yu was afraid the guard will sell her out.

Ordering everyone to leave the room, Ye Zhen Zhen said "I was very curious,

what did you give to Kang Cheng Lu, that made him willing to die”

Su Jie Yu’s hands clenched on to her sleeves “Niang niang, I am not sure what you are talking about”

“Don’t act, you are not an actress, your acting skills are very bad”

“Niang Niang, did you misunderstood something? If I have been rude to you before, I first apologize to you, and if you are still angry, then feel free to punish me, but this type of accusation, I cannot accept”

“Su Jie Yu, aren’t you afraid of involving General Su?”

“I did nothing wrong, so I am not afraid”

Ye Zhen Zhen blinked and looked at her “It looks like I need to force it out of you”

Su Jie Yu shivered “niang niang, you... what do you want to do?”

“What I want to do?” Ye Zhen Zhen lift her eyebrows, with a cold smile “few days ago I managed to obtained a very interesting book, called “Ancient Torture Log”, right in time for me to learn about it from Su Jie Yu”

Su Jie Yu pitiful looked behind Ye Zhen Zhen, with a tone of crying she called out “Your Majesty” and ran towards his arms.

Ye Zhen Zhen turned back, and saw Ji Wu Jiu patting Su Jie Yu’s shoulders, and looking at Ye Zhen Zhen asked “What did the empress want to learn from Su Jie Yu?”

Ye Zhen Zhen haven’t answer, Su Jie Yu spoke first “Your Majesty!, the empress want to torture me.. niang niang said, it was me that causes Lieutenant Lu to be framed, and wanted to make sure I will not beg to live or can’t beg to die. But I really don’t know what did I do wrong. Your Majesty, can you please ask the empress, to properly explain herself, so that even if I were to die, I will know the reason!” While saying these she was crying, with tears that comes on demand.

Ji Wu Jiu’s eyebrows twitched the moment he heard the word “Lieutenant Lu”, He pushed Su Jie Yu away “you leave first”

The two of them were left inside the room, Ji Wu Jiu walked to Ye Zhen Zhen,

and looked at her face, with a heavy tone he said, “To torture the imperial concubines? Because of him, you can do anything”

Ye Zhen Zhen took a deep breath, looked up at him “Your majesty, I do not believe that you did not find the loopholes for this case. Su Jie Yu is a suspect, I want to interrogate her, there is nothing wrong”

Ji Wu Jiu did not say anything.

“Or to say, you actually wanted to use this opportunity to flood where you wish?” Ye Zhen Zhen scoffed.

“Is that how you see me? To be willing to turn white to black, using any type of method?” Ji Wu Jiu’s voice carries a upcoming anger burst.

Ye Zhen Zhen replied “Is it not?”

“If so, then I should not let the empress be disappointed”

“You..!” Ye Zhen Zhen gritted her teeth, her chest heaving up and down due to anger, “I will definitely investigate this case properly, and will not let any innocent people be bullied”

“I cannot wait”

Outside, Su Jie Yu was standing in the garden, wanted to eavesdrop but didn’t dare to, shen then tried stretching her neck to listen to what’s happening inside, but did not manage to hear their voices, she was a bit disappointed.

Suddenly, the door opened loudly from inside, Ye Zhen Zhen came out angrily and without even sparing a glance at Su Jie Yu, she left.

Ji Wu Jiu was standing at the door, looking at her back figure, his expression was very bad as well.

Su Jie Yu then got a little happy from other’s disaster. She walked to Ji Wu Jiu’s side and gently called “Your majesty”.

Ji Wu Jiu held on to her arms and with a very gentle voice he called her “Rou Zhi:

Su Jie Yu hearing him calling her her real name, she felt abit sweet in her heart “I am here”

“General Su spend his life in the warfare, for the country, I really do not wish at the end of the day all he gets was to be appointed the title of treason” Ji Wu Jiu said, and pushed her hands away.

This word was like a sky of lighting shooting down, Su Jie Yu’s face turned pale “Your.. your.. ma.. majesty....”

“Therefore, you decide what to do” After that, Ji Wu Jiu did not look at her, and left. His steps were slow, his back was straight, a long shadow was stretched on the floor due to the sunset, adding on the messy tree branches, it made him appear to be a bit down.

Su Jie Yu’s body loss its strength, slowly sliding down the floor along with the door sill, eyes lacking of vigor.

In front of Ji Wu Jiu there was a sword.

It was a normal sword, made by the arm forces department. The blade of the sword is silvery white, but under the light, if you were to flip it around, you will be able to catch a glimpse of greenish light.

Ji Wu Jiu’s fingers were gently knocking on the table top, gaze falling upon the sword, in deep thoughts.

How can he not see through Su Jie Yu’s plan. He knew, all the woman in the palace is scheming, in front of him doing all sorts of shows, in order to please him, in order to get him favor, in order to fool him, to control him...

Except... for her..

Except for Ye Zhen Zhen.

She has never schemed anything on him, because she has never bothered about him. In her eyes, in her heart, there is no place for him.

Every time he thinks about this, he gets angrier than getting schemed by the rest, a layer of fire is enveloping his body, and the layer is getting thicker, sooner or later, it would be uncontrollable and erupt.

Lu Li.

Ji Wu Jiu realized that this name is stuck in his throat like a thorn, cannot be swallowed or removed, and when touched, he will feel very bad and his temper will rise.

In his whole life, this was the first time Ji Wu Jiu wished that someone will vanish in this world, to thoroughly vanish.

That night, the emperor brought along a sword to Kun Ning Palace.

Feng You De's heart was kept in caution, not daring to calm down at all. He called all the secret guards, and at night, a group of men was all huddling on top of the roof or under windows of the empress's palace, really unsightly.

That is also because there is no other choices.

Feng You De's worst case scenario that he thought would happen, did not happen, the emperor did not go to get the life of the empress. He only slammed the sword on the table, and said to Ye Zhen Zhen "This is the sword used by the assassin that day, there is poison on it"

Ye Zhen Zhen immediately sat up straight, with a serious face, upon hearing those words.

His reaction made Ji Wu Jiu feel a little better, he said "therefore, he really wanted to kill me".

Ye Zhen Zhen closed her eyes "Your Majesty, I could not think of the reason of why the assassin wants to kill you, but I can think of the reason of why you would put poison on the sword"

"...."

She does not believe him, she does not believe him.

She has never been worried about his life or death. All her worries goes only to Lu Li, and only left suspicions towards Ji Wu Jiu.

Ji Wu Jiu suddenly felt his heart was super cold. Suppressing the anger that was coming up, he coldly said "Ye Zhen Zhen don't tell me you have forgotten, who is your man"

Ye Zhen Zhen upon hearing those words also got angry "My man will not everyday think of ways to harm my whole family!"

“I have never thought of harming your family” Ji Wu Jiu looked at her, his eyes was like ice that was buried under thousand years of snow, so cold that it can cut through bones. He added “But if the empress keeps forcing me, I really don’t mind to try”

Seeing her expression change from his words, Ji Wu Jiu’s heart can’t help but feel sad again.

:If so, then your majesty will you let me meet the assassin?” Ye Zhen Zhen asked.

“Up to you”

The next day, Ye Zhen Zhen was carrying his edict to meet with the criminal.

Kang Cheng Lu is a big criminal, he was locked in a special steel cage, making it not possible to escape. He was tied to a steel post, on his gray clothes there were streaks of blood.

Although he was tortured earlier, he was still awake. When he saw Ye Zhen Zhen, he could still smile “greetings to the empress, please forgive me for not being able to kneel to pay my respects”

Ye Zhen Zhen asked “why did you want to kill the emperor?”

“This question, has been asked by many people, what your majesty thinks the reason is, then be it so”

“What Su Jie Yu gave you, I can give you 10 times, as long as you are willing to tell out the whole story”

“Your majesty, I think you should not waste your energy. The days I have left is very little, even if I have a back as big as the sky, I will not have the chance to enjoy them” To try to assassinate the emperor, whether he fess up to the crime or not, he will still have to die.

“I do not know what reasons that you cannot say, but do you know this time, how many people will be involved into this case? And how many more people that will have to give up their lives?”

“Thanks for the reminder, I have remembered something” Kang Cheng Lu

looked down, the days he spent in this steel cage has made him one round thinner, his skin is wrapped tightly on to his bones. Perhaps his body was in deep pain, when he speaks his voice was not stable “yesterday someone met me, promising to keep me alive, and ask me to frame Lieutenant Lu and Minister Ye. I know I committed grave mistake, but Lieutenant Lu has always treated me well, so no matter what i will not frame him even if it costs my life. Even so, it doesn’t mean that, that person would not try other ways to frame him, what I can do is up to here, I hope you will be strong niang niang. I have committed such a big mistake, and involved Lieutenant Lu, and will not be able to repay this life, I hope in my next life I will be able to pay back”

Ye Zhen Zhen was getting anxious and angry as she hears his words. This person really knew how to excuse himself, thinking that he can repay his mistakes in his next life. But he can still be considered someone that is good, since he did not blame others in order to save himself.

Then, who was the person that wanted to buy him up?

The answer was too obvious. That person that can bring an edict along to enter the jail and to be able to save guard his life, and whole heartedly only wanted to frame Lu Li and Ye Family... besides Ji Wu Jiu, who else could it be?

Ye Zhen Zhen returned to Kun Ning Palace in deep thoughts.

Ji Wu Jiu really wants to start, she does not know what she should do. She realized, that actually if he really wanted to, she really can’t do anything to defend, and can only beg. Although now Kang Cheng Lu did not comply, but that person doesn’t seem to be trustable as well, if rounds and rounds of torture was placed upon him, who knows how long his bones will be hard.

Su Jie Yu, right there is still Su Jie Yu, must open her mouth!

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly stood up “Lets go to Lu Hua Palace”

Lu Hua Palace was already in a mess.

When Ye Zhen Zhen rushed to Lu Hua Palace, she was nearly knocked over by a maid servant, Wang You Cai’s reaction was fast, and pushed the maid servant, making her fall to the floor.

The maid servant immediately kneeled and apologized to Ye Zhen Zhen

“What happened!”

“Replying to your majesty, Su Jie Yu was poisoned to death, I was on the way to Kun Ning Palace to report”

Ye Zhen Zhen rushed in, and saw Su Jie Yu’s body has already harden, and not sure what type of poison did she took, there was no signs of her being poison on the body, her face was still red, with a pretty appearance, almost like she was just in a deep sleep.

Even Su Jie Yu died, one more step, the whole Ye Family will be gone for.

Ye Zhen Zhen felt as though her soul has flied off, she said at the bed side of Su Jie Yu and stared at the body.

After a while, the imperial doctor arrived, and found out that the in Su Jie Yu’s tea there was poison. Ye Zhen Zhen also did not bother to ask on further.

After a while, Feng You De arrived, bringing along Ji Wu Jiu’s edict, and praised Su Jie Yu, and gave her back the title of concubine, and was to be buried according to the rank.

She was still someone that you favored upon, now that she is dead, you did not even bother to come and see her, not sure if your heart is cold or you are feeling guilty.

It seems that an emperor’s heart is indeed hard.

Ye Zhen Zhen was thinking and laughed coldly.

Note: Sigh, the trust between the both of the main characters are not yet built.. they still don’t believe one another, she thought he was trying his best to bring Ye Family down, he thought she loves Lu Li, when she was only thinking about the family as whole.. Sad chapter as well, a character has ended her part of the story... Next chapter... is full of angst.. so I am planning to get chapter 41 and 42 out together.. maybe today or maybe tomorrow.. gotta go get some work done first =D

Chapter 41

Hello, initially i wanted to post 2 chapters in a go, but today i won't have time anymore, and since i have completed this chapter yesterday, i will post it up first. The next chapter will come tomorrow... Hehe.. sorry just couldn't find the time to get chapter 42 done.. but i am sure u guys will re – read this chapter.. =X

Please read the following chapter at your own risk, will contain angst and some adult scenes.

Ji Wu Jiu regretted saying those words towards Ye Zhen Zhen. She has already suspected him from the start, and for him to purposely say those words, he is afraid that she will only suspect him more.

All in all, it was because she has never believed him in the first place. Most probably ever since she entered the palace, she has always been wary of him, afraid that he will harm her, or harm her maternal family. This time, he was only afraid that she will think too much.

Ji Wu Jiu was getting reckless. It was not that he has never thought of bringing Ye Family down, even he wants to, it will never be using this type of method. No matter what, Ye Xiu Ming was once his teacher, he would not be such so cold hearted to give the name of treason towards Ye Xiu Ming.

That is why, it will be best if he were to discuss it properly with her.

With this intention in mind, Ji Wu Jiu reached Kun Ning Palace.

Facing a candle light, Ye Zhen Zhen was sitting while holding her chin with her hands in a daze, her eyes were rather bright, but her face was full of worries.

Ji Wu Jiu did not allow anyone to announce his arrival. Upon seeing Ye Zhen Zhen looking like that, his heart softened, walking towards her he held her shoulders down, and said “Zhen Zhen, we should stop fighting”

Ye Zhen Zhen raised her eyes, and coldly looked at him “Your majesty, you are very cunning”

Not understanding why, he sat opposite her and asked “Empress, kindly explain?”

“Su Jie Yu was awarded death by you right?”

“She decided herself, both you and me understood this point well. If she does not commit suicide, the entire Su Family would definitely be implicated”

“So, it meant that she killed herself due to the crime? That means this case should come to an end soon, when will you sentence Kang Cheng Lu?” Ye Zhen Zhen asked eagerly.

Ji Wu Jiu looked down for a while and answered “The truth cannot be exposed now, and Kang Cheng Lu also won’t die yet”

“That is right, the time to use him has not arrived” Ye Zhen Zhen sarcastically said.

Taking a deep breath Ji Wu Jiu, while telling himself that he must remain calm, he said “you think too much, I do not plan to use Kang Cheng Lu for anything, it is just that this is a very complicated plan, Su Jie Yu was also used by others. That assassin’s sword has poison, very deadly. He really wanted to kill me” He stopped at this point and took a look at Ye Zhen Zhen, and saw that her face was full of disbelief. Not sure why but in his heart the fire in heart can no longer be suppressed and was leaking out.

Ye Zhen Zhen scoffed “Then, someone taking an edict to enter the jail, and tried to lure Kang Cheng Lu by promising to protect his life, and in exchange to make him say that the mastermind is Lu and Ye family, what do you think of this matter then, your majesty?”

Ji Wu Jiu felt that he was really going to erupt soon, his hands were curled into a tight fist, and because he was using a lot of strength, his fists are starting to shiver, he gritted his teeth and said “I will only ask you one thing. I was nearly killed by an assassin, did you even feel a tiny bit of worry over me?”

“I will also only ask you this, this time what would it take for you to not harm Lu and Ye Family?”

Ji Wu Jiu suddenly laughed. His laughter was quiet, and his face was cold and bitter, with a hint of mockery. He stood up and slowly walked up to Ye Zhen Zhen, looked down and smiled towards her, but in his eyes there was no hint of smile at all, only eyes that were filled anger and ruthlessness.

“As long as you please me comfortably, who you want me to release, I will release, how about that?”

Ye Zhen Zhen looked at him with widened eyes, her first reaction was uncertainty, then she understood, after that she got a little angry.

Ji Wu Jiu almost immediately regretted what he said. His remaining rationality told him, he should not have said that, and he should not hope for her answer as well.

Between him and her, it should not be this way.

But, his rationality did not remain for long... Ye Zhen Zhen stood up, her hands holding his shoulders, she tip toe-ed and kissed him.

The expression that Ji Wu Jiu was trying his best to withhold collapsed at this very moment. In his brain, it seems that there was a strong wind blowing, a wind that blew away all his sense, and was only left with a man's most natural reaction. One of his hands locked her head's position, and another hand has wrapped around her waist, forcing her to stick to his body.

Ye Zhen Zhen does not know how to kiss, so she only pressed her lips on this his, her thick and long eye lashes was shivering.

Ji Wu Jiu's lips were slowly taking her lips in, slowly and tantalizingly tasting them. Ye Zhen Zhen does not know what reaction she should make, and could only let him do all the work. But after a few tries of trying to get his tongue to enter her mouth, he was blocked by a set of teeth that were clenching hard. So, Ji Wu Jiu can only hold her chin and forcefully open her mouth to make her accept him. His plan worked, his strong tongue entered her mouth quickly.

Tasty.. too tasty, it was hundreds and thousand of times better when comparing to what he imagined, comparing to what he dreamt of.

He himself unsure of what is going on, but he used a lot of strength and using his tongue he thoroughly swept through her mouth making Ye Zhen Zhen a little pained and numb.

In her heart, a feeling of disgust was creeping out again. But this time she was not worried, since she didn't eat much today, even if she were to vomit, nothing much will come out.

Because her mouth was blocked, Ye Zhen Zhen was slowly losing oxygen. Ji Wu Jiu's breath was heavy, and his and her breath were released on to each other, both mixed up thoroughly, very hard to differentiate, almost seems to be combined together, and to never separate.

Ji Wu Jiu has never experienced this typed of kiss before, almost like a fight, trying to fully obtain the other, and swallow them whole.

Only with a kiss has made his brother grew. He felt that there was two soft object rubbing against his chest, he carried Ye Zhen Zhen up, and proceeded to the bed.

When Ye Zhen Zhen was laid on to the bed, she has already completed her self-counselling session. To do this type of thing in between a married couple, it is really normal, it is just that whenever she is treated this way by Ji Wu Jiu, she will feel like vomiting, that is why she didn't like it. But now, since there is no way of avoiding it, then all she can do now is to accept it, although her stomach is really uncomfortable now, but it can be considered much better than to be tortured already.

When Ji Wu Jiu was undressing Ye Zhen Zhen, his fingers were shaking, his heartbeat speed increases, his breath even heavier.

He has been wanting this person for too long, until he has a feeling of it not being real at this very moment.

She is mine, she really is mine now.

However, at the same time, another voice seems to appear in his brain:

Stop now, stop, If you don't stop now, you will definitely regret it.

—How is it possible to stop now!

Ji Wu Jiu lays himself on top of Ye Zhen Zhen, kisses her cheeks, eyebrows, eyes, and finally stopping at her ears, to nibble her earlobes.

He thinks to himself; he needs to be more gentle, be more gentle towards Ye Zhen Zhen.

Though, Ye Zhen Zhen's body is stiff, and not giving any reaction or reply.

He looked up, and saw on her face, the expression of disgust, her face was very

painful to him, it hurt his heart.

Ji Wu Jiu turned Ye Zhen Zhen's body to the side, and then he went behind her and lay sideways as well.

This way, he won't be seeing her expression.

When Ji Wu Jiu entered Ye Zhen Zhen's body, he subconsciously let out a sigh of satisfaction, though in his heart, there was a growing feeling of sadness.

Ye Zhen Zhen's body was straight, burrowing her heads but not moving.

This round of love making, was only one sided.

This thought almost made Ji Wu Jiu crazy. In his heart he hates this situation very much, tortured even. However, his body.... was enjoying it very much. Countless emotions and feelings were coming up, almost tearing him apart into two. One who was very much enjoying Ye Zhen Zhen's warmth and another was looking at them calmly, smiling, with a look of pity and coldness.

"Zhen Zhen, Zhen Zhen..." Ji Wu Jiu called her name, with a husked voice.

Ye Zhen Zhen did not answer him.

"Zhen Zhen look at me, Zhen Zhen"

Ye Zhen Zhen still did not look up, still decided not to move.

Ji Wu Jiu can only continue to call her name, again and again, until the tone changes.

Ye Zhen Zhen still did not answer.

When he finished, Ji Wu Jiu held on to Ye Zhen Zhen, his whole body relieved, his chin lightly brushing against her shoulders, taking in deep breaths. He turned Ye Zhen Zhen's body around, wanting to kiss her.

Then, what he saw was a face full of tear stains.

Ji Wu Jiu got flustered, feeling as though someone took a piece of his heart out, it was very painful. He simply took a blanket corner and helped her wipe her tears, "Zhen Zhen..."

"I bid farewell to you, your majesty" Ye Zhen Zhen closed her eyes, and turned her face away, in her voice there was a strong nasal sound.

Ji Wu Jiu saw that she has made up her mind, and was afraid that she will be angry and disgusted with him. Holding on to the pain in his chest, he got down from the bed. Standing in front of the bed now, he saw that her face was not a blushing red that was supposed to be there after... but instead a pale white. He covered her with a blanket and said “then... I will leave first, tomorrow I will come and visit you”

With her eyes closed, Ye Zhen Zhen did not reply.

When he left Kun Ning Palace, it was already late into the night, outside it has started to snow. The entire palace was quiet, with only the lanterns were lit, looking like eyes of ghosts. The snow has piled up into a thick layer, noises can be heard when movements are made.

Walking towards Jiao Tai Hall, Ji Wu Jiu stopped.

Ji Wu Jiu looked up at Jiao Tai Hall, suddenly his body fall back, his whole body now laying on top of a pile of snow.

“Your Majesty!” Feng You De put down his lantern anxiously, and wanted to help Ji Wu Jiu up, but was stopped by a gesture made by Ji Wu Jiu.

“You go on ahead, I want to be alone”

Although Feng You De is a little worried, but he still can’t go against the emperor’s orders. So he left the lantern with Ji Wu Jiu and went back to Gan Qing Palace first.

Ji Wu Jiu was laying on the snow, with some snow starting to enter his clothes via his collar. The back of his neck is very cold now. Although there was no moon, but with the layer of white surrounding him, it was not really dark. With his eyes wide opened, he continued to lay there.

He starts to think about the building behind him, thinking about the person inside that building. Thinking about her body .., thinking about her body scent, thinking about how disgusted she looked.

As well as her face full of tears.

He lifted his arms and covered his face, turned sideways and curled up his body.

Zhen Zhen, Zhen Zhen.

The energy in his body seems to be draining away, almost like something important to him is going further away from him.

He does not understand.

He finally obtained her, but somehow to him it was more like losing her.

Note: There... finally the consummation of their marriage for real... but not how many would have wanted or expected it to be.. .it was really hard to translate these scenes.... Hmm .. >.<!

Chapter 42

“Niang-niang, I heard yesterday night the emperor left Kun Ning Palace in the middle of the night, and returned to Gan Qing Palace” Qiu Feng said in the morning while helping Xian Concubine prepare.

“I see”, Xian Concubine said while slowly wiping her hands with a smile on her face “Perhaps the empress did something wrong, that angered the emperor”

“Then according to you, what could the empress have done to anger the emperor?”

Xian Concubine gave the handkerchief to another servant, sat in front of the mirror to wait for Qiu Feng to help her comb her hair and said “Su Jie Yu died coincidentally”

“It is indeed” Qiu Feng held on to Xian Concubine’s hair and combed slowly, and added “previously whenever there were cases that involves human lives, the empress will definitely lead the investigation, but this time it seems like there are no news”

Obviously Xian Concubine will know what Qiu Feng was implying, she herself also thought that the death of Su Jie Yu is related to Ye Zhen Zhen, because “it seems, few days ago when that incident happen, the empress was there as well, but she only stood there and saw Su Jie Yu block for the emperor and gained favour, so she was jealous and was holding a grudge”

Qiu Feng thought that this possibility was very high, so she asked ,”then should we use this matter to add oil to the fire?”

“No rush, first we see how the emperor reacts. The assassin was a guard, the emperor would most probably use this chance to implicate Lu and Ye Family as well, just not sure to which extend. The empress in the end would not be able to get anything good of it anyway. Furthermore, even if the emperor let her off, there is still the empress dowager. As for us, we should just have to sit at the peak to look at the tigers fight.

“I will not just sit here and wait, when it is the right time, I will naturally act”

Inside Wu Ying Hall, the person in charge of this case, Xie Chang Qing was being questioned by Ji Wu Jiu. Kang Cheng Lu's interrogation process is not very smooth, no matter how much they tortured or asked him, he only kept saying that he did not like Ji Wu Jiu, and that he thought that he was a bad emperor, kills others easily, and that there was no mastermind behind him. These type of words.. even a fool would not believe.

Ji Wu Jiu pondered for a while and asked "That person, few days before the assassination, was his actions suspicious? "

"Replying to your majesty, after asking around the people that were closed to him, we did not manage to find anything suspicious about his previous actions. Just that... this person does not like woman, but a few days ago, it seems like he visited a brothel to drink. "

"To drink?" Ji Wu Jiu scoffed, "Brothels surely does not lack gossips, which one did he go?"

"Replying to your majesty, the one that he went to is Cui Fang Lou"

"Cui Fang Lou?" Ji Wu Jiu closed his eyes and murmured to himself "Great, I also need to drop by"

Xie Chang Qing thought that he has found out a very big secret, so he hardened his face, at a side trying to reduce his existence.

Ji Wu Jiu asked, "The person who falsified the edict, did you find out the culprit already?"

"Replying to your majesty, a constable found a dead body at Xiang River, after we got it up, and after thorough investigation, it has been confirmed he is the person who falsified your edict, to meet with Kang Cheng Lu"

"What is the deceased's background?"

Xie Chang Qing did not answer, but instead looked up and glanced at Feng You De.

Feng You De replied "Your Majesty, the deceased is called Ren Er Xi, an eunuch from Zhong Gu Section"

Ji Wu Jiu could roughly guess in his heart, “Continue the investigation, find out who he is close with or which palace’s eunuchs that he is friends with, or if he is involved with any ministers.”

“Yes”

After that Ji Wu Jiu brought Feng You De along to Cui Fang Lou. Although he has only been here twice, but the madam there has a very strong impression about him. The moment she saw him, she quickly rushed forward, and greeted him “Gentlemen Ji, it has been a while since we saw you, our Lady Hong Yun has been guarding an empty room by herself, don’t you feel bad!”

Ji Wu Jiu is not used to the heavy perfume smell in the main hall, he did not reply the madam’s accusations but asked her to open a room for him, and after made her stay so he can ask her some things.

After asking Feng You De to guard the doors outside, Ji Wu Jiu took out a drawing and asked the madam “this person, have you seen him before?”

The madam took a look and said “Gentlemen Ji, you coming here, is it to enjoy or here to revenge on someone. If you are looking for enjoyment, I can make sure you will be satisfied.. but if for others...”

Ji Wu Jiu quickly took out some money, and said “this person is a wanted person by the court, if you don’t say, I am only afraid this Cui Fang Lou will bring upon bad luck”

Partially threatening and partially bribing, even if she doesn’t want to say, she can’t help it. Furthermore who will turn their backs against money. The madam took the money and kept it properly before saying “Indeed I have seen this person before, few days ago he came here once”

Ji Wu Jiu looked at her suspiciously, “there is so many people going in and out from here, he only came once, how can you remember so well?”

“Gentlemen Ji, this you wouldn’t know, he is rather poor but he still wanted to get our most popular lady to serve him, that is why he made an impression”

“O? Then what did he do here at the end?”

“Right, it was rather weird too, the moment our Lady Liu Yue saw him, she

invited him to her room, I also don't know what they did inside the room, but after a while he came out already"

Ji Wu Jiu asked "who is Liu Yue?"

"Gentlemen, have you forgotten already? The first lady that you chose when you first came here, that is Liu Yue, our most popular girl."

Ji Wu Jiu tried to recall, and remembered that truly there was a woman that dragged him into the room without reason. He nodded, and took out another stack of money, placed it on the table and said "our conversation today, don't you dare to leak out a single word, if not...."

The madam took the money from him before he can finish his sentence, nodded and said "don't you worry! If I tell anyone I will be a stone for the remaining lifetimes"

"Right, you can leave now, call Hong Yun over"

"Yes, yes, yes, It is time for business" The madam laughed and went out.

Knowing that Gentlemen Ji is here, she knew that it is time for her to make money again, so she was happy. The moment the madam told her to go to him, she immediately left what ever she was doing and headed to his room.

Ji Wu Jiu wasn't sure of how to tell her about it yet.

Hong Yun has been in this business for a long time, so she understands the heart of a man very clearly, seeing that he is having trouble to speak out, she asks instead "Sir, don't tell me you use force on her?"

"..... can be considered so.."

"Ai yo. What do you want to me say ah.. Earlier on I asked you to be gentle and caring, in order for you to.... Great.. now all your efforts are wasted."

Every sentence she said made Ji Wu Jiu's face turn one shade darker, after she stopped, his face was already at it's worst.

Hong Yun then asked, "then... her husband.. does he know about it?"

"???"

"Know or don't know? You have to tell me something"

“I am her husband”

“.....”

Hong Yun looked at Ji Wu Jiu for a period of time not saying anything. She has met countless man, it seems that she is still too young, this was such a unique scenario, why would anyone be afraid of touching their own wife? Also who is this wife, how can she treat her husband, who not to mention is not only good looking but rich too, this way. Don't tell me she will be happy only if she can marry the emperor!

Hong Yun has so many things that she wants to say, but was afraid that if she were to say them, she will anger him, but in the end she only sighed and said “Sir, towards your wife you really have fallen deep in love with her, so sweet, yet so pitiful.”

Ji Wu Jiu on the other hand got shocked by her words “Fallen deep in love?”

Hong Yun finally can understand him a little more ... this person, his brain is not too bright. She nodded and said “Yes, as the saying goes “No treasures can be compared with a good man”, Sir your feelings towards your wife, really makes me touched. Then again, don't tell me.. you don't know that you have fallen in love with her?”

Ji Wu Jiu's expression was of realization.

It is indeed so, Hong Yue said “it is true that when you are involved you would be the last to know, the relationship between man and woman, has always been hard to understand, for you to not know is understandable. But, it was fortunate that you met me.. “Hong Yun looked up to take a peek at Ji Wu Jiu, and saw that he seems to be in a daze, not sure where his thoughts went.

“Gentleman? Gentleman?”

Ji Wu Jiu suddenly stood up, and turned to leave.

Hong Yun chased from the back and said “Sir, you haven't pay up!”

Ji Wu Jiu took out a stack of money, and without looking stuffed them into her hands. Hong Yun then holding on to the stack of money starts to laugh, not bothered with him anymore.

On their way back, Ji Wu Jiu seems to be lost in thoughts, Feng You De looked at him, a face full of understanding and worry.

When they reached Gan Qing Palace, Ji Wu Jiu made everyone leave and alone, was in deeper thoughts.

All this while, the way he treats woman, was the same as how he treats food or objects. When there is a need, then he will use them, and which one is not bad, he will award them.

He has never thought of what a relationship between man and woman could be. All his intelligence was used on planning for the court, towards love and relationship it was not clear...

Now he finally understood that “love” can appear without trace, and cannot be removed making people miss one another so badly.

Ji Wu Jiu has never lacked any woman in his life, and he has never have any feelings of obsession towards any woman.

Until he met Ye Zhen Zhen.

Ji Wu Jiu found out, he has all the way been thinking about this matter the other way round. The reason why he wants her so badly, was because he likes her.

He walked out of Gan Qing Palace, passed through Jiao Tai Hall, and stood in front of Kun Ning Palace. He wanted to go in, to talk to her, to tell her, he likes her.

However, standing in front of Jiao Tai Hall, he never took a step forward.

Opposite him, the windows suddenly opened. Ye Zhen Zhen was sitting in front of the window, and saw him. She felt that it was very stuffy inside, and ignoring Su Yue's advice she opened the window to let some air in, the cold air blew in. She really feel much refreshed.

Ye Zhen Zhen looked at Ji Wu Jiu, Ji Wu Jiu was also looking at Ye Zhen Zhen. Both of them looking at each other from a far like a pair of lovers separated by a bridge.

Ji Wu Jiu suddenly turned around, and walked into Jiao Tai Hall.

Ye Zhen Zhen, who was looking at his back figure suddenly said to Su Yue “Su Yue, I think I am in the wrong”

“Niang Niang, you telling me these words is useless, the emperor would not be able to hear it” Su Yue said.

Chapter 43

Hello... I know it has only been a day but... did you miss me? hahahahahaaha. Gonna end this week with this chapter. I think most of the questions you guys asked in the previous chapters would finally be answered here. See you next week.

December 28th, 2 days from Xi He second year, today is a very memorable day, because on this day, Ji Wu Jiu did a lot of brutal things.

First, he went to Ci Ning Palace to greet the empress dowager, and then in front of her he called out 2 eunuchs from her palace, scolded them, and then ordered them to be flogged to death.

The empress dowager got angry right there “the year is coming to an end soon, not only you did not do any good deeds, but you came here to kill at my place. I have been a vegetarian and praying for so many years, how do you expect me to face the gods now”

Ji Wu Jiu said with a straight face “they partnered with Ren Er Xi, falsified an edict and tried to accuse the innocent, they should be sentenced to death.”

“Where is the evidence? Based on your one sentence, you have sentenced them to death, is it not too rushed?”

“What mother means is that, you want me to continue the investigation? Until the very end, and to find out that the mastermind behind this was you?” Ji Wu Jiu looked at her calmly, with no signs of contemplation on his face.

The empress dowager’s lips started to quiver from her rising anger “You.. You” in the end she slammed the table and said “You unfilial son”

“There is something more unfilial” Ji Wu Jiu stood up, fold his hands and said “Minister Xu Shang Yong, snatching a woman in broad daylight, and the case was brought to the magistrate, I have already ordered for him to be suspended from his post to aid the investigation.”

Xu Shang Yong is Xu Wei Rong’s father. Has no outstanding talent, a pervert, with lots of concubines in his house, and when he sees pretty ladies he will want

to obtain them no matter what methods, he will use. This time he bullied a married lady, with a strong personality, who went home and committed suicide. Her husband carried her corpse and kneeled in front of the magistrate court, he did not request for money and was not afraid of power, and was only aiming for an explanation. Magistrate Shun already felt that the citizen was bullied, but because Xu Shang Yong is the uncle of the emperor, he pushed the case back, and wrote a report to ask for Ji Wu Jiu's opinion.

Ji Wu Jiu's answer back to him was only two words "Punish Accordingly"

"He is your uncle!" The empress dowager's voice also changed.

"So what, if the king went against the law, he will be punished accordingly as well. If he wasn't my uncle, most probably he wouldn't have dared to do such vicious acts"

"you...You..."

"Mother" Ji Wu Jiu's voice was gentler now, he added "I know you are worried about me, but things that happens in the court, I think I am still capable of handling them. If you really want to share my worries, why don't you sincerely pray and eat your vegetables every day, to pray that our Da Qi will have a smooth road ahead, that way it will help lessen my workload. If not, if anything were to happen, you are still my mother, I would obviously not do anything to you, but towards the rest of the people, I would not be too constricted with my actions"

That was an obvious blackmail. The empress dowager although angry, she also knows that she can't do much. This son of hers.. his wings is getting larger, no one would be able to control him soon.

"If so, about your uncle, please do not punish him too harsh" The empress dowager said.

"Too late, my edict has been passed down, a king will not back out of his words"

After coming out from Ci Ning Palace, the next place Ji Wu Jiu went to was Tian Xiang Lou.

In the inner palace, only the ladies with a consort title and above can have

their own palace, those below that ranking can only stay in the side court of any of the other consort's palace, but this Tian Xiang Lou was a small independent court, not big like a palace, previously the empress dowager made the decision to place Xu Wei Rong to stay here alone.

Seeing Ji Wu Jiu, Xu Xuan Shi thought that she was dreaming, "cousin, cousin brother? Are you finally visiting me?" While saying her eyes has started to turn red, tears streaming down her face.

"Yes, cousin sister" Ji Wu Jiu walked towards her, and helped her wipe her tears.

Xu Xuan Shi immediately fell into Ji Wu Jiu's arms, sobbing non stop.

Ji Wu Jiu held on to her shoulders and said "Wei Rong, you are my cousin sister, so seeing that we have that type of relationship, I will not take your life for making Su Jie Yu commit such a treason act against me" Using his most gentle voice tone, to say the most cruel words.

Xu Xuan Shi's body turned stiff, looked up at him unbelievably.

"There is no need to look at me that way, since you have done it previously, you should have known what type of sacrifice you would be facing. I can act foolish, but do not treat me as a fool."

"Cousin brother.."

"Go stay at the cold palace for a while, when you decide you can finally throw away your "smartness", then that is when you can come out"

After saying that Ji Wu Jiu pushed her away, turned and left.

Xu Xuan Shi wanted to chase him, but was held on by some people. Crying she shouted "Cousin brother, cousin brother, I am know I am wrong, do not make me go to the cold palace, I will change, I will change..."

Ji Wu Jiu's steps has never decreased, he did not look back either.

Do not blame the cold hearted-ness of an emperor. In this entire inner palace, is there any woman who treats him with sincerity?

The crying voice slowly fades behind him. Ji Wu Jiu took a deep breath, feeling that the anger in his heart subsided a lot. Actually he does not mind woman

acting cunning in front of him, but to be clever to this point really makes people detest them.

After that, Ji Wu Jiu went to Wu Ying Hall, there Ye Mu Fang was waiting to meet the emperor.

Earlier on, it was mentioned, Ye Mu Fang is Ye Zhen Zhen's second brother, minister of works. This year, he was in charge of the water reservoir project, and was at Shan Dong all this time, he just returned yesterday, rested a bit at home, and then received orders from Ji Wu Jiu to enter the palace.

Ye Mu Fang, now appears to be thinner than when he left from the capital, much more tanned as well. On his face, although he is considered still young, his face is full of beard now, making him look more wise and mature. Although he has suffered but his eyes were still full of vigor, seems like he is still in a good condition.

Ji Wu Jiu cares about the water reservoir project very much, and has been overlooking it all along, there is someone at Shan Dong that will report to him solely. Therefore there was no need for Ye Mu Fang to report, also he will know what happened there, but he still wanted to hear it from Ye Mu Fang directly.

The heavens have really given face to this project this time. Last year during the winter, the northern lands would surely be frozed up for two to three months, so if they were to work during that time, it would be very strength consuming, and they would be forced to stop their work. But this year, it was a warm winter, the lands only froze up in December, and it was estimated that the flowers will bloom in early spring, so the project would only require to be halted for one month plus. The local government there also did a very good job in pleasing the citizens, so their work was progressing very well. Therefore the project speed was much faster than what Ye Mu Fang has estimated, and if all goes well, the water reservoir would be ready before the expected drought season next year.

Ji Wu Jiu was very happy after hearing this, and continuously said "good" three times.

Ye Mu Fang did spend a long time in the court, seeing that Ji Wu Jiu was happy, he took the chance to praise all the ministers involved, if there is any rewards, all

of them will share them together, this way when he returns will they be fully loyal to him.

Ji Wu Jiu then sends down his orders, all the people that Ye Mu Fang mentioned, was rewarded. As for Ye Mu Fang, he still wanted to award him something personally. He awarded him a “Jue” title. (Jue can also mean ultimate in Chinese)

Da Qi’s “Jue” title is given only to those that contributed a lot to the country, and most of the time it is awarded to the generals. Now there are very little wars, that is why the generals that have the “Jue” title is very little, not to mention to the court ministers. Even Ye Xiu Ming, who has many sorts of title, still did not manage to obtain the “Jue” title.

That is why when Ji Wu Jiu awarded this title to Ye Mu Fang, albeit a third rank Jue, it still made him very happy and shocked.

Ji Wu Jiu also personally added another title for him, called Noble He Qing. To be honest, this title is a little big, the term He Qing was used to describe those related by blood to the emperor, and he was just a river repairman, so how can he accept this title. That is why Ye Mu Fang tried to reject this offer.

“Minister Ye, you do not need to reject, although now we are at a peaceful era, so the citizens life is much more important. Since the Yellow River was so calm ever since you took on the project, it means that is also approves of your capabilities, if you are not worthy of this title, then who is?”

Ye Mu Fang was so touched that he nearly cried. He was doing his best in Shan Dong, at first it was so hectic that he did not even managed to sleep properly, and all he wanted was to properly complete this project, so that the citizens can live better. But if to say he does not have any personal intentions, that is not true, but his efforts really did benefit the lives of the common citizens. Ji Wu Jiu is currently praising him non-stop making him feel that he needs to take up full responsibility of the project.

Also the Jue title, not only gave Ye Mu Fang’s work commendation, there was also another usage. Few days ago the case of the assassin was creating lots of rumors, many people thought Ji Wu Jiu wants to act upon Ye Xiu Ming, there was also some that wanted to provoke Ji Wu Jiu to act upon Ye Family. Now, Ji Wu Jiu

has awarded this title to Ye Mu Fang, it implies to those people: Ye Family's position is still strong, you bunch of people should disperse"

After Ye Mu Fang bid his farewells, Ji Wu Jiu felt that his grudge has finally been released. Any person that likes to control others, hates to be influenced by others, Ji Wu Jiu is not any different. What he wants to do, is his decision, whoever that wants to interfere, that person should think twice.

Furthermore, Ye Family produces a lot of capable people, he will never end the entire family.

Ji Wu Jiu was in a good mood, and was taking a stroll in the imperial garden, passing by a fake mountain, he saw Ye Zhen Zhen.

She was playing the swing in the snow, wearing a red dress, sitting on the swing, with her legs swinging. The white surroundings made her look like a fire bond.

Ji Wu Jiu walked towards her, his hand gently pressed down on her shoulders. Ye Zhen Zhen turned and saw his slender fingers, and knew it was him, she stood up and wanted to greet him, but Ji Wu Jiu used some strength to push her back down "don't move".

So, Ye Zhen Zhen really stopped moving, and sat on the swing.

Ji Wu Jiu then placed both his hands on her shoulders. Standing behind her, it was like he wanted to hold her in her arms. Thinking for a while he opened his mouth.

"Sorry"

"Sorry"

Two voice was heard at the same time, Ji Wu Jiu was stunned. When he returned to his senses, his heart felt much more at ease. Slowly pushing her, allowing her to go up and down on the swing, but his hands never left her "Empress, why apologize?"

"Sorry, I misunderstood you" Ye Zhen Zhen said. She has thought it through earlier on, Ji Wu Jiu was stronger than what she imagined, if he really wanted to harm Ye Family, he will not need to force an accusation on to them, many other

faults can be placed on them in the open.

Furthermore, if he were to kick out Ye Xiu Ming, then Fang Xiu Qing will be the only one with power, this type of scenario, as an emperor Ji Wu Jiu will surely not be willing to see. Those who really wants to get rid of Ye Family are many, but it would definitely not be Ji Wu Jiu.

Ye Zhen Zhen realized that, ever since she entered the palace, she was always in a strained mode, always afraid that Ji Wu Jiu will harm her, and to push her to the end. That is why everytime something happens, she will first think about his motive.

But then again, if he really wanted to harm her, most probably she would never be able to fight back at all.

After understanding these, Ye Zhen Zhen did not feel heavy in her heart, but instead felt more at ease. The feeling of letting another person make an important decision, and she no longer needs to be worried about it anymore.

“I also made a mistake, I should not have treated you like that” Ji Wu Jiu sighed, thinking back about his madness the other night, his heart felt pain again.

“You are not in the wrong, it is my responsibility”

Such honest words, was not pleasing to Ji Wu Jiu’s ears. He slowly bend his waist, both his hands slide down from her shoulders, linking them together, he held Ye Zhen Zhen in his arms.

Looking down, he closed his eyes and with his lips right next to Ye Zhen Zhen’s ears, he gently said “ Zhen Zhen, don’t be like this. Since you don’t like it, i will not touch you”

“Your majesty, actually the reason of why I want to vomit, is not because I hate you, but I think... I am sick” Ye Zhen Zhen said, a bit distressed about it.

Ji Wu Jiu opened his eyes, “What do you mean?”

“A type of weird disease maybe’ Ye Zhen Zhen said while looking down, not sure how she should explain to him. The first time, she was not too sure, but the second time, she felt it, as long as the thought of Ji Wu Jiu being with many other

woman doing that thing before, and now to do this with her.. she will feel very disgusted, not only her heart feel it was disgusting, her stomach will feel it was disgusting as well.

But this feeling was not easy to describe, so she does not know what she should say.

“If it is a type of sickness, there should be a way to cure it, you do not have to worry too much” Ji Wu Jiu consoled her.

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded, “Your majesty.. if you...”

“No, I won’t” Ji Wu Jiu stopped her, “First, we should cure your sickness” I want you, but I also want your willingness.

He tighten his arms around her, making sure she is fully pressed to his body, his face laying on hers. The dragon robe he was wearing was wrapped around her red dress, in this snow white scenery, it was although they looked like a dual color camelia flower, blooming very beautifully.

Su Yue, who was bringing over some milk tea for Ye Zhen Zhen saw the scene, turned around and went back.

Chapter 44

Hope everyone had a good weekend, am too lazy to check for grammar.. please don't mind the broken English if there is any will edit them later.. or if there are any kind souls out there who don't mind correcting them... hehehehee.. . this chapter has less dialogues, therefore way harder to translate... T_T

Enjoy!!!

The new year is coming soon, the whole palace is very happening and high in festive mode, each palace is also focused in their spring cleaning, the servants were also receiving awards non stop.

Everyone was most envious to those from Kun Ning Palace. The empress comes from a wealthy family, the emperor also gifts her things every 2 to 3 days, so she is considered the richest woman in the palace. She was also very generous, these few days all that worked for her received awards or gifts till they forgot to close their mouths.

Kun Ning Palace's couplets are all written personally by Ji Wu Jiu, writing festive phrases on red paper with brushes, and hanged on the sides of the main door. His writing skills were very good, even Ye Zhen Zhen can't help but praises them.

Accordingly, Ji Wu Jiu brought a lot of things to Kun Ning Palace, not only that, he also purposely personally pass to her a pair of jade white swan.

Ever since she thought things through, Ye Zhen Zhen is now along the thoughts of "trying to build a good relationship with Ji Wu Jiu" mode. That person she cannot offend.

He decides her life or death, if she wants to live a comfortable live, she must save him some face. So she made Su Yue to choose a lot of gifts to be sent to him as a return gift, and seeing that the rest of the concubines like Zhuang Concubine also personally made something for Ji Wu Jiu, she also decided to follow the crowd and gave him a handmade pouch she made earlier on. The pouch has a dragon embroidered on it, and was sent along with the other items.

The embroidered dragon is rather ugly, in a glimpse it actually looks like a suffering millipede. Ji Wu Jiu was moving the pouch around in his hands, he really wanted to wear it on himself, but during this festive period, he still have to take care of the emperor's pride, so he decided to put the pouch into another pouch and placed it on his waist.

Towards Ye Zhen Zhen, new years celebration is a good thing, but there is one thing that really makes her upset: "Shou Sui" (something like a Chinese countdown ritual). Previous years, as an unmarried lady, she was not really required to perform this ritual, she likes to sleep, and her family dotes on her, so she was not required to be involved on the eve of the new year and allowed her to sleep early.

But now, as the empress, she cannot avoid it anymore. New years eve night, at Gan Qing Palace, Ye Zhen Zhen was accompanying Ji Wu Jiu, along with the rest of the concubine and consorts to stay up. On the table various types of pastries were placed in accordance to the occasion, these delicate pastries were all made to perfection, making people feel touched, however, it still didn't help Ye Zhen Zhen. Once her usual sleep timing approaches, as though as someone pressed a secret button on her body, she starts to lose her strength and vigor, slowly falling asleep. She no longer replies to the consorts chatting and slowly dozing off.

Seeing that she is in such a state, Ji Wu Jiu felt a little sorry, and really wanted to pull her into her arms and let her take a good nap, but if he were to really do it, it would go against the palace rules, so he has to stop himself.

Finally she lasted till midnight, Ye Zhen Zhen is already near the state of dreaming, Ji Wu Jiu woke her up, and told her it was time to eat dumplings. After counting down, it was time to eat dumplings, it was a ritual for some local people, and the royal family also performs them.

There are a total of 64 types of fillings in the dumplings, they were brought up to the table, and who wants to eat which flavor, they just have to order and someone will bring them. Ye Zhen Zhen was still in a daze, and simply called a few types, Su Yue place them on a plate and brought it over to her. With her eyes half closed, looking a bit foolish, Ji Wu Jiu found it very funny.

Ye Zhen Zhen took one of the dumplings and placed into her mouth, she just only chewed two times, she stopped.

“What happened?” Ji Wu Jiu asked

Ye Zhen Zhen used a handkerchief to cover her mouth, and with a few movements from a mouth, she spit out a copper coin. The copper coin was purposely made for the occasion, clean and shiny, it says “Wan Guo Lai Chao”. (something like many nations coming to court, to pay their respects).

Ji Wu Jiu looked over, smiled and said “Looks like the empress will be in good luck this year”

Ye Zhen Zhen did not agree that while eating, to bite on something hard has anything related to being good luck. She then took another dumpling, and with only one bite, her face turned dark.

Ji Wu Jiu looked at Ye Zhen Zhen spitting out another copper coin again, this time it says “Wu Gu Feng Deng”. (Good crop harvest)

The rest of the consorts saw Ye Zhen Zhen spitting out 2 copper coins in a row, and started to get envious. The coin is placed into the dumpling when they are made, in total there is only 10 pieces, now the empress has already gotten 2 pieces, and the rest was mixed in the rest of the many dumplings, who knew where the coins are?

Very quickly, they realized their think too much.

Ye Zhen Zhen was like a machine that spits out coin, another 2 came out again. One “Guo Tai Min An” (peaceful country) and another “Feng Tiao Yu Shun” (good weather and rain)

So the rest of them forgot about their dumplings and looked at her full of curiosity.

To Ye Zhen Zhen, to be disturbed while she is eating something that really really affects her mood. So she also stopped eating, and opened up the dumplings on her plate instead.

Then, another 2 pieces appeared again, one is “Ji Xiang Ru Yi” (good health) and another “Zi Sun Man Tang’ (alot of children and grandchildren).

Looking at the 6 copper coins in front of her, Ye Zhen Zhen felt really helpless, it made her appear to be cheating or something.

Ji Wu Jiu on the other hand was very happy, “The empress is really my lucky star”

The consorts were smart too, whether they were truly happy or not, they all started to greet more festive words to them. Ye Zhen Zhen awarded them, Ji Wu Jiu also awarded them, after all this hassle, she was finally allowed to sleep.

She was already so sleepy that her steps started to be airy.

Ji Wu Jiu said “The empress is so tired, there is no need to return to Kun Ning Palace, tonight you can sleep at Gan Qing Palace”

“No I shouldn’t” Ye Zhen Zhen yawned and started to leave.

“If I say can, means can” Ji Wu Jiu decided to just carry her up, faced the rest of the women there and said “you guys can leave”

They can only look at how he carried Ye Zhen Zhen away. Actually to most of the consorts there, to say that they are jealous or to hate, although this feeling exists, but it was not too strong. Because.. the emperor is not capable of.....

Besides Xian Concubine who was in deeper thoughts. Few days ago the assassination case was no longer placed into importance, the emperor did not do anything to the Ye Family, but instead gave a Jue title to Ye Mu Fang; Su Jie Yu died without any reason, Ye Zhen Zhen did not receive any punishment, and instead Xu Xuan Shi got banished to the cold palace.

.... It seems like, the emperor is really sincere towards the empress.

Xian Concubine, felt her heart turned bitter when she thinks of that.

Every year during the new year celebration it is the same, to eat and to play. What is different for Ye Zhen Zhen was only to receive the ladies of the prominent families from outside the palace, batch by batch. During the day it was very busy for her, so at night she will go out to have walks, to take in the cold wind and to calm herself.

Tonight, when she pass by Lu Hua Palace, she caught a glimpse of something

white passing through, in a fast speed, and in a blink of an eye it was gone.

Ye Zhen Zhen felt weird, rubbing her eyes she asked “Su Yue, did you see anything?”

Ye Zhen Zhen thought it was her eyes playing with her.

Wang You Cai who was at the side replied “Niang Niang, I think I saw a ghost”

“How did you know that it was a ghost?” Ye Zhen Zhen asked while smiling.

“It was wearing white clothes, long hair, green faced and has blood stains...”

“”Alright, the more you say, the more unbelievable it gets” Su Yue said.

Wang You Cai suddenly pointed to the front and said “Niang Niang there it comes again!”

Ye Zhen Zhen focused and realized it really appeared again. It looks like a person dressed in white, hair let down, covering the face, and the legs seems to be floating from the ground, almost half a feet high.

“Empress niang niang, I was framed to death!” It said, her voice floating and far, with a hint of crying, making those who heard it get goosebumps.

Wang You Cai and Su Yue both stepped up and stood infront of Ye Zhen Zhen.

Ye Zhen Zhen asked “Who are you?”

“You ~~~~ cause~~~ my~~~~ death~~~~”

Ye Zhen Zhen held onto Wang You Cai and Su Yue’s shoulders, and pushed them apart, to walked forward, and loudly laughed “If you are really a ghost looking for revenge, my life is here right now, why don’t you come and take it?”

“”

To be able to make a ghost speechless, the empress ability really makes Su Yue proud.

Seeing that there was no more sound coming from the ghost, Ye Zhen Zhen walked towards it. And it seeing Ye Zhen Zhen approaching, it turned around and ran away.

Therefore that night, Ye Zhen Zhen bringing a group of people to chase down a

ghost, was known throughout the entire palace. In the end they did not manage to catch any ghost, but saw the abandon long hair and white clothes in the garden.

“Pretending to be ghost” Ye Zhen Zhen concluded.

Su Yue was curious “Niang niang, who do you think did this? Why did that person act as a ghost to scare you?”

“Who, I don’t know yet. The ghost appeared near Lu Hua Palace, she pretended to be a ghost, most probably thought I was the one who killed Su Jie Yu, most probably wanted to scare me because of that” Su Jie Yu’s real reason for dying was only known between her and the emperor, the rest of the people not knowing would be expected.

Su Yue still doesn’t understand “Even so, that person will not gain anything from it..”

“Pretending to be a ghost should just be that start, I am only afraid there will be a part 2” after a while Ye Zhen Zhen added “These few days, Kun Ning Palace should be guarded properly and be cautious, food and drinks should be monitored properly as well.”

Su Yue agreed

Ye Zhen Zhen closed her eyes “I want to see, what is that person’s next move”

Chapter 45

Today, Ye Zhen Zhen heard that the armory's supervisor Zhang Feng was going to enter the palace to meet Ji Wu Jiu, so she also went to take a look.

Ji Wu Jiu met Zhang Feng at Yang Xin Hall, the reason why Zhang Feng visited was to update Ji Wu Jiu on the news on the land mines research. The name "land mine" was created by Ye Zhen Zhen, 'buried under the lands, once touched you will be blasted apart' quite matching to it's functions. Ji Wu Jiu has to acknowledge that Ye Zhen Zhen is really talented in the weapons industry.

Zhang Feng explained the progress of the land mine to both the emperor and empress, Ye Zhen Zhen was happily receiving this news. Hearing that the weapon is entering the test runs, and would require a lot of time and place to test them, Ji Wu Jiu immediately release a huge fund for them, and thinking that during this festive season, the soldiers must be very tired, so he awarded them more things.

Becoming an emperor requires a lot of talent, one of them is; when the ministers or soldiers contributed to the country, you must let them know that their efforts are acknowledged. This type of thing is easy to be said but hard to be done, not only you have to do it, you still have to balance it well, if you award them too much the people will be too proud, if you award too little, people will be discouraged. So from this Ye Zhen Zhen can't help but feel that Ji Wu Jiu is very capable of handling this type of matter.

After Zhang Feng left with all the gifts, Ji Wu Jiu ask Ye Zhen Zhen "I heard you scared off a ghost yesterday?" The empress is indeed the empress, I have only heard about ghost scaring people, and never heard of human scaring ghost away"

Ye Zhen Zhen was not pleased "What ghost, if that was a ghost then I would be the underworld god"

Ji Wu Jiu's mouth starts to tease "If the Underworld god is as pretty as you, even if I were turned into a ghost, I would willingly follow you away"

Ye Zhen Zhen took a sniff and ask "What smell is this ?" Ever since she entered Yang Xin Hall, she smelt a light fragrance, not like the normal fragrance she has

used, and much more natural, a little like mint but not as strong as that, all in all it gives of a somewhat warm and comfortable feeling to people.

“You smelled it?” Ji Wu Jiu said while pointing at the fragrant pot ‘the fragrant burning inside is “Hai Li Xiang””

“What is Hai Li Xiang?” Ye Zhen Zhen have never heard of it before.

“It is a type of wood that has been sent from Lu Song, it is grown on the beachside, when the water is in high tide it will cover the entire small island, and from far it would seem like the trees are growing on water, that is why it is called Hai Li Xiang (Fragrant from the Ocean). Previously they have also send them in every year, but because the wood that was sent in carries a strong sea smell, and the people from central plains are not used to it, so the people who knows about it are very little. A few days ago, the empress dowager asked someone to turn them into charcoal, to use it in the fragrance pots, not much different in terms of usage if compared to the normal charcoal, but it also emits a light scent. I thought that it smell quite good, so I asked for some” Ji Wu Jiu explained patiently.

Ye Zhen Zhen took another sniff “I find the smell quite nice as well”

“If you like, I still have a lot here, just take some, I will get someone to make more”

Ye Zhen Zhen starts to contemplate, this thing was made by the empress dowager, who knows if there is any thing hidden.

Ji Wu Jiu saw through her worries and said “Don’t worry, this Hai Li Xiang, I have already used them for a few days, nothing seems to be wrong with it”

That’s true, no matter how cunning the empress dowager might be, she would most probably not harm her own son, Ye Zhen Zhen nodded acceptance.

During the new year celebration, besides consistently checking on the progress of the armory, Ji Wu Jiu did not really attend to the matters at court. Even if he was the emperor he still need some times to rejuvenate himself.

But he was busy with another thing: The empress’s weird disease, how can it

be cured....

For this, he has dragged all the imperial doctors one by one to ask them, however, not even mentioning to cure, those doctors have not even heard of this before, not even the old farts or the knowledgeable Doctor Tie has answers.

Ji Wu Jiu has asked everyone that can cure sickness, and still couldn't get an answer. So he was very distressed.

When he was still distressed, Feng You De announced "Your majesty, Mr Dou came to greet you"

Although Big Beard Dou is a monk, always with the expression of "I am a priest, I want to save the world", but actually he is someone that also cares about pleasing others, the people that he needs to please he will not lose the opportunity, this time around he has accepted the Chinese culture and went to greet everyone a prosperous new year. Ji Wu Jiu was thinking, this big beard although should not have been involved in this type of matters but he should still be considered someone that is knowledgeable, who knew if he has heard about this type of weird disease before.

Therefore Ji Wu Jiu ask big beard to enter, and after a small chat, he asked "Mister have you heard, that a woman might be sick/vomit during the bed business among a man and woman?"

"???" Big Beard Dou normally understands the normal conversation language used, but towards more elegant words, it was hard for him.

".... It means wanting to vomit"

"O, your majesty, I have heard of such a thing." Big Beard Dou answered.

"O?" Ji Wu Jiu was very happy, almost jumping up from his dragon throne "Mister, do you know the reason behind it?"

The words that will soon come out from Big Beard Dou was like multiple lightning that was aimed towards Ji Wu Jiu. He said "That is because that woman likes woman, and does not like man", he paused, seeing Ji Wu Jiu's expression, he added "this is a type of sin, must be changed".

"....."

As a easily offended and an emperor that holds on to grudge, Ji Wu Jiu has always note down other people's mistake in his little mental black book, but no one else's was as black as big beard Dou now. Ji Wu Jiu even thought that his words now have a bigger impact on him than all those things that Ye Xiu Ming did to him before.

No wonder their Jesus was nailed to the cross, Ji Wu Jiu was thinking while gritting his teeth, he also wants to nail big beard to the cross now.
(The original author apologizes for this part, if it offended anyone)

Trying his best to keep calm, in the end Ji Wu Jiu only ordered Feng You De to drag out big beard Dou out of Gan Qing Palace.

He can't really do anything to that person, he is already of old age, if anything were to happen to him, Ye Zhen Zhen would surely be angry at him.

After that, Ji Wu Jiu went to visit Ye Zhen Zhen at Kun Ning Palace. The moment he entered, he felt that there was something wrong, Ye Zhen Zhen was under the blankets laying on the bed, sleeping soundly, though with a layer of sweat on her forehead, making the hair near her forehead all wet.

Ji Wu Jiu knows that Ye Zhen Zhen likes to sleep, but it was also just waking up later than others by a bit, to sleep in the bright daylight are not normal. He woke her up "Zhen Zhen, are you feeling unwell?"

Ye Zhen Zhen rubbed her eyes and woke up "Your majesty, you are here" and she tried to get out bed.

Ji Wu Jiu held her down. He touched her forehead, it was not hot, but his hands got a layer of sweat. Looking at Ye Zhen Zhen again, her face was pale, and looked very tired, so frowning, Ji Wu Jiu turned to ask Su Yue, "What happened to your master?"

Su Yue also appeared to be lacking in energy, "Replying to your majesty, the empress these 2 days has been sleeping a lot, I also do not know why"

"Quickly call for the doctor"

This time around, the doctor on duty was Doctor Ding, around 30 over years old, although not as skilled as Doctor Tie, but amongst the same ranked, he is considered quite good. Checking her pulse, Doctor Ding asked "Her pulse is very

weak, like having an injury on her body, the empress, did she get hurt anywhere recently?”

Su Yue who was standing at the side answered “Never, ever since the empress’s legs got better, she has been very careful, and has never been harmed”

“Then did she receive any kind of big shock?”

This question from Doctor Ding, the people there were all stunned. If it was from shock, then it would only be about the ghost matter two days ago, but Ye Zhen Zhen was clear that she did not get scared, but why did she get this type of pulse now? Ji Wu Jiu believed Ye Zhen Zhen’s courage, only she will be the one scaring the ghost, but she being like this now, there must be some other reasons behind it.

Seeing that the three of them not answering, he came to an understanding. To work in the palace, to act foolish is the most common talent, so he did not think it was necessary to ask further and only said “If it was because of receiving shock, then I will open a prescription for it”

“Hold on” Ji Wu Jiu stopped doctor Ding, looking at Su Yue’s pale face, he said “You check on Su Yue as well”

Doctor Ding checked Su Yue’s pulse as well, and was surprised “Why is it the same type of pulse?”

Before Doctor Ding can answer, Su Yue answered “I am not injured, nor did I receive any shock”

Both the empress and Su Yue also saw the ghost, it was only two days but this type of thing happened, if it was not someone scheming something behind, who will believe? Ji Wu Jiu look at Ye Zhen Zhen, and saw that her expression tells him that she realized something.

“Indeed there was a follow up plan” Ye Zhen Zhen scoffed.

“This type of pulse, if it continues on without curing it, what would happen?” Ji Wu Jiu ask Doctor Ding.

“Replying to your majesty, if one does not treat it, it will make a person’s body

weaker and weaker, and in the end death”.

“If using the method of curing it based on the diagnosis of shock, is there any guarantee it could be cured?” Ji Wu Jiu asked again.

“This....” Doctor Ding realized from their reaction that there should be a hidden story, so he said “If the empress’s sickness came from other reasons, then I am not sure as well”

So that time, if Ye Zhen Zhen really passed away, then it would be blamed on to the ghost, such a good way, and most probably there would be no one taking the blame. Ye Zhen Zhen got angrier by the thought, that person is really evil, and clever. This can be said as to kill someone without a trace. If that day she really screamed out from being scared by the ghost that day, then perhaps maybe she might also believe that she was shocked to sickness.

Dismissing the doctor, Ji Wu Jiu was walking back and forth in front of Ye Zhen Zhen’s bed, Ye Zhen Zhen got drowsy from him walking back and forth, yawned and her body starts to lay back down on the bed.

“No, you cannot continue sleeping” Ji Wu Jiu pulled Ye Zhen Zhen up “Su Yue, help your master get ready, both of you will shift to Gan Qing Palace today”

Both of them got sick at the same time, most probably somebody already did something to Kun Ning Palace, no matter what, the best would be to bring the both of them to somewhere safe first. Ji Wu Jiu carries Ye Zhen Zhen up, and seeing that she is lacking her usual energetic self, he was both sad and angry at the same time.

Note: There should be no chapter tomorrow~ PH in my country ~! hehe

Chapter 46

Hi.....

Ji Wu Jiu ordered for Kun Ning Palace to be thoroughly searched, but the results was, there was nothing out of the ordinary. He didn't understand what is wrong, and asked Ye Zhen Zhen "Did you and Su Yue touched something else together somewhere?"

Ye Zhen Zhen pondered for a while and shook her head "Nope"

Ji Wu Jiu then turned and ask Su Yue, "In Kun Ning Palace, are there people who are in the same condition as you guys?"

This time Su Feng who was standing at the side answered " Replying to your majesty, I also have those symptoms but it is lighter than Su Yue, the rest of the people also don't have."

"If you are also like this, because you also enters the room of the empress, just that Su Yue enters the room more frequently, that also means" Ji Wu Jiu turned to Ye Zhen Zhen to conclude "if someone really poisoned you, they must have placed it in your room"

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded "that is what I am thinking too, but Wang You Cai and the rest already flipped through my room, but they still didn't find anything suspicious"

While they are still in discussion, from outside Doctor Tie has arrived to help check on the empress. It has been over a day since Ye Zhen Zhen stayed over at Gan Qing Palace, she felt that she has gained back some energy, her head much clearer as well. Incidentally that was what Doctor Tie concluded "Niang Niang, you are much better now, after 2 more days you would be fine" He also checked Su Yue, and said the same thing.

Although they are getting better, they still cannot return to Kun Ning Palace.

Doctor Tie made a new prescription and passed to Su Yue. Then bringing his medical case, he started to leave, upon reaching the door, he turned back "I am sorry for asking, but is the incense burning in the fragrance pot Hai Li Xiang

wood?”

Ji Wu Jiu answered “ Yes it is, you recognize it as well?”

“Kun Ning Palace is using this as well?”

“Correct’

Doctor Tie brushes his beard and murmured “So that is what happened”.

“Did you manage to notice something?”

“Replying to your majesty, this Hai Li Xiang wood is the specialty from Nan Yang, the imperial clinic has some, but because it has no medical qualities, no one really payed attention to it. But there is something special about it, only the local people there knows about it, the people in the capital that knows about it is very rare. I also heard it only from a friend that came from Lu Song mentioning it”

“O? What is it?”

Doctor Tie did not answer, but instead asked “If I am not wrong, I remember that there is a pot of Narcissus, is it still there?”

Su Yue answered “Yes it is still there, still in bloom”

“That is it!. Hai Li Xiang woo, when it is burn will have a reaction when met with the fragrance of the Narcissus flower, and they will form a type of poison, if a person smells it for long, the body will start showing tiredness, and the pulse will not show it as poison, but more to being shocked. The empress with her current state now, most probably it was because of the combination of the narcissus and Hai Li Xiang wood.”

His words made all the people surprised.

After heavily awarding Doctor Tie, Ji Wu Jiu asked everyone else to leave, and pulled Ye Zhen Zhen into his arms, sighed and said “Zhen Zhen, you have suffered” This time around a feeling of guilt is starting to build up in him, because the Hai Li Xiang was passed to her from him, she didn’t want it initially, but he advised her to take it.

Not to mention, recently he understood something. In his inner palace, all the women appears to be weak and gentle, but actually in their hearts they are all

cruel and cunning, with endless schemes. In comparison with Ye Zhen Zhen who looks like she is very cunning, and far from being gentle and weak, Ye Zhen Zhen is the real kind person here. Although being schemed by others for so many times, she still did not harm anyone's life, not that she can't but she doesn't want to. Xu Cai Ren was evil, she could have thoroughly get rid of her, but in the end she only let her lose her hair only.

Suddenly Ji Wu Jiu felt really bad for Ye Zhen Zhen. Actually this woman, really does not suit to live in the palace.

Then, Ye Zhen Zhen said "Your Majesty, this time even you are implicated into the plan".

That's right, Hai Li Xiang was obtained from the Empress dowager by Ji Wu Jiu himself, and also he was the one that gift the wood to Ye Zhen Zhen. He has used it for a few days, and thought that it was just a nice smelling scent, but would never have thought that he has already fallen into the trap.

"Mother, oh mother, why are you forcing me" Ji Wu Jiu could not help but sighed, softly caressing Ye Zhen Zhen's face, "Zhen Zhen, this time I have made you suffer, I will compensate you"

"No" Ye Zhen Zhen shook her head "Your majesty, I think that this case is not as simple as that"

"O?"

"This unique point of Hai Li Xiang is too secretive, even in the whole imperial clinic, only Doctor Tie knows about it, if so how would the empress dowager know about it? This is too suspicious. Second, to be able to calculate each step to such sharpness, to involve both you and me, and also to use the method of "only the willing will be hooked", that made me suffer but still can only keep it to my self... to be straightforward "Ye Zhen Zhen looked up at Ji Wu Jiu "this type of scheme, the empress dowager might not be able to do"

What she said is already very kind, to be honest, the empress dowager will never be able to plan something like this.

That is why, this case although the empress dowager is involved, but there should be someone smarter behind it.

Ji Wu Jiu is a very intelligent person, he did not think of it earlier because he was too anxious, now hearing Ye Zhen Zhen saying so, he came to a quick realization, and after some thoughts he said “This type of thing, only people from Lu Song will know”.

“In the palace, is there someone that grew up in Lu Song?”

“Yes”, the year I was coronated, Lu Song sent in 12 beautiful ladies, I kept 2, and the rest distributed to the ministers.”

Upon hearing what he said, Ye Zhen Zhen understood the root of the problem “Who is the two person that was kept?”

“....”

Ye Zhen Zhen was rather speechless at the moment, he cannot even remember his own women.

Actually, we can't really blame Ji Wu Jiu on this matter, the pretty ladies that was sent to the palace by other tribes or nations are not little, normally he will just keep one or two of them as a good will, and place them in the palace. He is not a pervert, and does not really bother too much about women or give much thought about them. Furthermore, he remembered the two ladies from Lu Song are tanned and skinny, not his type at all, so he did not visit them before.

So, Ji Wu Jiu called Feng You De in.

“Your Majesty, both of the ladies surname is also called An, got the title of Xuan Shi, one of them few years back because of missing her hometown too much has passed away, the other one should be promoted to Cai Ren now, staying at Yao Guang Palace's side courtyard.” Feng You De answered.

While listening Ye Zhen Zhen could not help but sighed “really a person with a sad life”

Ji Wu Jiu immediately got someone to bring An Cai Ren over, with a serious face he said “If you do not want to take on the blame of harming the empress and to receive the punishment of dying without your whole body, you better answer truthfully; About Hai Li Xiang, who have you mentioned it to before?”

An Cai Ren, did not know what happened, but it scared her till she kneeled on

the floor, not daring to speak, taking a look at Ji Wu Jiu and then Ye Zhen Zhen.

Ye Zhen Zhen instead said “Someone place Hai Li Xiang and Narcissus together to harm me, I know it wasn’t you. All you have to do is to tell me and the emperor, if there is anyone that knows about this. If you don’t tell, I may not be able to protect you as well”

“Replying to your majesty, it is.....it is.. Xian Concubine” An Cai Ren knew that she was implicated into something serious, so she said while tearing “I have stayed in Yao Guang Palace for a long time, and not close with anyone else, normally there is no one that visits me as well. After Xian Concubine entered the palace, she has visited me twice, and chatted with me, so I have mentioned about the specialty of my hometown. I am sure that about Hai Li Xiang, I have only mentioned it to Xian Concubine only.”

Ye Zhen Zhen smiled, “This Xian Concubine really knows how to be a good person” In the inner palace, no matter who, she has managed to make them all happy, making everyone praise her virtue.

Ji Wu Jiu’s face turned angry “Indeed it was her”

Ye Zhen Zhen let Su Yue bring An Cai Ren back to her place, and made sure that she will not mention this to anyone else. After that she looked at Ji Wu Jiu, and saw that he was not having a good expression, a little tired, and a little disappointed. Ye Zhen Zhen can understand his current feelings, Xian Concubine was originally a person that is easily liked by others, and also Fang Xiu Qing’s daughter, and normally she portrays the ‘I am not involved with the matters of life, living the life of a fairy’. To find out that she is an equally cunning and scheming woman, most men would not be able to take it.

Ji Wu Jiu turned towards Ye Zhen Zhen’s gaze “Zhen Zhen, this time around, no matter how you want to treat her, I will also help you”

“What can I do to her?” Ye Zhen Zhen ask back. This trap, that was planned by Xian Concubine is really too clever, with no loopholes, it was a trap that requires people to willingly jump in, this way she has already remove herself from being implicated earlier on, not leaving behind any evidence. Also, even if she were to punish, there is still the empress dowager blocking, she won’t be able to do anything much.

Ye Zhen Zhen cannot help but praise Xian Concubine, such a perfect trap, she acknowledges that even she might not be able to think of such a plan. It is just that no matter how much she calculated, she missed out that Ye Zhen Zhen was a person that are not afraid of ghosts, and also would not know that Doctor Tie will know about the unique trait of the Hai Li Xiang.

No matter what, this time around Xian Concubine has managed to extract herself out from being implicated, and for Ye Zhen Zhen , she has no choice but to take on the suffering herself.

Although Ye Zhen Zhen has decided to let it go, Ji Wu Jiu thinks otherwise. Men holds their pride high, as an emperor, his pride is something that should not be touched. This time round, even his mother teamed up with his small wife to harm his main wife, not only nearly killing Ye Zhen Zhen, and also made him lose his face in front of his woman, he will not tolerate it!

To say someone is guilty, one must first have evidence, he is the emperor, is there anything that he cannot do? If you want to compare who is better at scheming, even the two old farts, Fang Xiu Qing and Ye Xiu Ming cannot compared to him, why would he be afraid of two women that has lived in the inner palace so far?

So what if the empress dowager is my birth mother? I cannot do anything to you, but I can make you feel disgusted. You have used all types of tricks to harm the empress, wasn't it just because her surname is Ye.

The next day, when Ye Mu Fang was going to return to Shan Dong, the emperor was suddenly leading a group of guards to send him off grandly, shocking Ye Mu Fang a little, the rest of the people, no need to say much, were definitely shocked and surprised as well. One should understand in the 6 main ministries, the ministry of works is the least powerful, not like the ministry of personnel, controlling the man power in the court, not like the ministry of finance taking care of the nation's money issues, nor like the ministry of defense controlling the army, also cannot be compared with the ministry of rites who always have to meet with the royal family, that allows them the chance to please the emperor. All in all the ministry of works is a powerless and poor department. Ye Mu Fang was thrown her by his grandfather, because Ye family wants to extend their powers there, as well as he himself is highly interested in the job, so

even if it was not an easy job, he is still very willing.

Ji Wu Jiu praised the people from the ministry of works right there, making a few of the ministers cried on the spot.

Not only that, Ji Wu Jiu also sent 12 of his personal guards to Ye Mu Fang, claiming that they are to ensure Ye Mu Fang will not drop a single hair. Most people when they heard this part, they also rolled their eyes inside their heart, not only he was just a person who repairs the river, he is also Ye Xiu Ming's grandson who would bother to harm him?

After sending off Ye Mu Fang, Ji Wu Jiu went to Ye Manor on his way, to pay respects to his own teacher and to greet him a happy new year, and also gift him many things. Ye Xiu Ming was not comfortable with Ji Wu Jiu suddenly visiting him, and in his mind there were only negative thoughts, which in the end caused him to think: Is he finally going to end us.....

Ji Wu Jiu did not realise that his act of kindness has given a bad feel to Ye Xiu Ming. Anyway, he was satisfied when he left Ye Manor, and returned to the palace.

Indeed the empress dowager got to know about this very quickly. Ji Wu Jiu was in Ci Ning Palace, looking at her reaction calmly, while thinking that this will not end this matter, he needs a plan that will, stop her from further scheming.

As for Xian Concubine, hehe.....

That day, the empress getting shocked till she can't get out of bed was spread throughout the entire palace. The empress thought that Ji Wu Jiu went to Ye Family because Ye Zhen Zhen was sick, so her mood was not too bad, but very quickly she found out, that it wasn't the case. Because, he actually wants Xian Concubine to go to Jing Xiang Monastery to pray for Ye Zhen Zhen for a period of time.

To pray at a monastery, isn't that being a nun, although still allowed to keep her hair, but it is still becoming a nun. Out of the blue to send a concubine to the monastery, what if she were not given the opportunity to ever come back?

The empress dowager was thoroughly angered, but could not really argue with Ji Wu Jiu, because Xian Concubine normally created the character of virtue and

gentleness, this time it matches perfectly, the emperor wants to get a concubine that can get close to the gods to help pray for the empress, if she was not chosen, who else would be good enough?

No matter what, one is an empress, another just a concubine, if anything were to happen to the empress, if the concubine is required to do something, then they would have to do it.

This time, Xian Concubine really got scared, she did not know that Ji Wu Jiu will be so heartless. As per the character that she has established, it was not right for her to reject him, but can only quietly tear up in front of Ji Wu Jiu, portraying a “I am not willing to part with you” expression of heartbreak, not saying if she will go or not go, and was only hoping that Ji Wu Jiu will suddenly soften his heart and retract his edict.

Ji Wu Jiu does look like he has soften his heart, he said “I advise you to go there to hide yourself first, according to the empress, her wish was to let you shave your hair as well, in order to show your sincerity to the gods”.

Xian Concubine is well aware that the empress has a weird interest in making people lose their hair, so without further ado, she immediately packed her things and went to Jing Xiang Monastery.

Note: Not sure if you guys are satisfied with the outcome, but personally, I am very much satisfied. Ahahahahahaha, (she did not lose her hair btw ~)

Chapter 47



picture =)

Credits to whoever made the

Ever since Xian Concubine went to Jing Xiang Monastery, the empress's really recovered from her sickness. Everyone in the palace also praises Xian Concubine for able to gain favour from the gods with her sincerity. Xian Concubine nearly vomited blood after hearing about that, she also wanted to get a "Xiao Ren" (paper shaped of people with date of birth of particular person you want to curse) of Ye Zhen Zhen to stab.

On the other hand, Ji Wu Jiu has never given up to look for cure towards Ye Zhen Zhen's weird disease. But he has also decided to fix his current mindset; In the matters of bedroom business, the most knowledgeable about those matters are not the imperial doctors but should be.....

Yeah, so he went to Cui Fang Lou again.

Most probably it is still the festive period, most men also came out to find enjoyments, so Cui Fang Lou was bustling with business. So when there are

many customers, it was unavoidable that you will meet someone you know, Ji Wu Jiu's eye sight was very good, and manage to spot the local ministers, and before they can spot him he was already using a teapot to cover his face. He also knew, as an emperor to visit a brothel, it is not something he should be proud of.

Feng You De "....."

As the emperors personal eunuch, it can be said as where ever he is, that would also mean where Ji Wu Jiu would appear, so.. the emperor don't really need to cover.....

The minister understood the meaning from Feng You De's gaze, and immediately pardoned himself and hides into a room.

Ji Wu Jiu quickly made the madam open a room, and to call Hong Yun up. Hong Yun came up, and served Ji Wu Jiu a cup of tea, and smiled "Gentlemen Ji, you came again? Did you miss me?"

After getting teased often, Ji Wu Jiu just ignored it, and did not answer, took the tea and wanted to take a sip, but when he look into the cup, he saw there was a "position" drawing inside, very detailed. Ji Wu Jiu suddenly felt the tea was no longer appetizing and pushed it away.

Hong Yun immediately got someone to change the tea cup, smiled and asked "Gentlemen Ji, visiting me again, are there are more questions that you want to ask?"

Ji Wu Jiu was a little shy. Some words when spoken to the doctors, was easy to explain, but towards a woman, he did not know how to start. Even so, he still told her honestly and awaited her reply, full of hopes.

After listening to him, Hong Yun replied "I thought there was something big, so it was just this? Gentlemen Ji, you wife is not sick, she is just someone who likes to be clean"

"Explain"

"This, I am sorry to offend, but I must first ask, in your house, besides your wife, are there still other concubines?"

Ji Wu Jiu nodded

“How many are there?”

“Most probably... tens of them” He could not remember too well.

“!!!” Must not scold, must not scold, Hong Yun tried to calm herself down, this was her fortune god, that bastard is her fortune god, must not scold!

Ji Wu Jiu noticed her expression was not too good, so he asked “that... how is it related to her?”

“Of course it is related!” Hong Yun stared at him. “Gentlemen, this is really my first time meeting someone like you, if to say you don’t understand the feelings of love, but at home you have so many concubines, how can one believe that you are a piece of wood in the matters of love, but then again to say that you are a playboy, you are so.. so.. let’s forget it” She closed her mouth, and picked up a cup of tea to drink.

Ji Wu Jiu understood that he got dissed, patiently he said “then, what is really happening now?”

“What else could it be? She simply dislikes the fact that you have too many woman, your body is not clean”

Ji Wu Jiu have never heard about that before, so he asked “How is that possible?”

“Let’s put it this way”, Hong Yun place her cup down, “I think you are someone that likes being clean... looking from another point of view, if a woman that has been with many men before, she wants to make love to you, what will you do?”

Ji Wu Jiu pictures about the situation a little, if there were such a woman, naked and climbing on to his bed to do those stuff, what would he do?

.... X her out.. (most probably it means kick her ass out here.. hahaha)

Therefore, he finally understood a little.

Looking at Ji Wu Jiu’s expression of disgust, Hong Yun purposely held on to her chest and teased “Gentlemen, you really hurt my feelings, making me feel so ashamed!”

Ji Wu Jiu did not even reply her, but instead took out a stack of money, and placed it on the table. Hong Yun was very happy, took the money and counted

them.

“I still have another query, why the other women also does not mind, only she is like this?”

Hong Yun who was looking at the money all along, answered “I also have a question for you, why so many men also come here to look for enjoyments, but when you come, you even refused to the drink the tea?”

Ji Wu Jiu was speechless from her question.

“So, that is to say” keeping the money safely, “actually you and your wife is the same type of people”

“Then, what should I do?”

“Even if I tell you, I don’t think you would be able to do it”

“Speak”

“Very easy, dismiss all your small wives, and only dote on your wife, will you be able to do this?”

Ji Wu Jiu was made speechless again. About this, ... he will not be able to do it.

“That is why, I will honestly say, I hope you don’t mind, Initially I thought that towards your wife, you are sincere, but seems like it is just so so.”

Her tone made Ji Wu Jiu feel very uncomfortable after hearing it, he stood up “Farewell”

“Goodbye Gentlemen” After Hong Yun lead him out, she closed the door and without giving any face she said “Men!”

Ji Wu Jiu returned to the palace in deep thoughts. Ever since he found out the reason behind Ye Zhen Zhen’s weird disease, he felt that his heart is feeling a weird sourness, it does not seem like it was happiness but it definitely was not hatred as well. When he thought of how Ye Zhen Zhen does not like performing the bed business with him because he has too many women, or to say that Ye Zhen Zhen wishes that he will only have her alone, he felt a little surprised, but inside his heart he also felt a little sweet, it was like she was a pot of vinegar.

Towards Ye Zhen Zhen being like this, it was like she was naturally a pot of

vinegar. Towards jealous woman, most men will not like them, but when Ye Zhen Zhen is like that, Ji Wu Jiu actually thinks that she is very cute.

Ji Wu Jiu was in a huge dilemma. If he wants to make love with Ye Zhen Zhen, he will need to give up the rest of the other women, he himself felt that this was not really possible. But if not that way, he will never be able to touch Ye Zhen Zhen, this made him felt even worst.

Thinking about it again, because of Ye Zhen Zhen, he has been a monk for quite some time already, and he is getting more comfortable with this situation, which made him feel more in dilemma.

Therefore that night, the emperor did not go to Kun Ning Palace, but stayed at Gan Qing Palace alone.

The next day was the 15th day of the lunar new year, the whole capital was filled with lanterns, full of people bustling around, and quite a lot of brave young ladies and gentlemen were walking next to each other on the streets, chatting and joking together. The sky was filled with fireworks.

Ji Wu Jiu and Ye Zhen Zhen also came out of the palace to stroll around. Ye Zhen Zhen rarely comes out of the palace, and fell in love with almost everything she sees, things to eat, to play, were all drooped onto Wang You Cai and Feng You De, and she was still not satisfied. There were many people on the streets, shoulders brushing againsts one another, Ji Wu Jiu was afraid she will get lost in the crowd, so he has been holding her hands all along, he also did not want other men to touch her, so he place held her shoulders to him as well, almost pulling her into his chest.

On this day, there would definitely be the lantern riddle games. At the north side of the capital, there was a stage for lantern riddle games, it was organized by a rich merchant from the capital, he was very generous and the winning prizes made many people drool. The level of the riddles are separated into 4 from easy to hard, for the hard levels, you would need to place a wager, and if you got it the prize would be very satisfying, for the lower levels, you would not be required to place any wager, but of course the gifts are not as nice as the hard level. The emperor and empress was standing in front of the stage, guessing the lantern riddles, but who knew that they would almost win away everything that

the store has, making the merchant's face paled, thinking that he would be in a huge loss this time. To be honest, what items has Ye Zhen Zhen never seen before, she didn't really want those gifts anyway, so she only chose a few nicer ones and returned the rest. So even after winning away their items, the merchant still need to thank them a lot.

Ji Wu Jiu only took a pair of fish jades, the first is actually linked to one another, but it can be separated, there is a red string at the fish's mouth to be placed on the waist as an ornament. Ji Wu Jiu separated the two fishes, placed one on himself and another he gave to Ye Zhen Zhen, but afraid that she will not wear it, so he personally tied the fish on to her waist. He accidentally touched her sensitive part of her waist that made Ye Zhen Zhen laughed out loud. Su Yue, Wang You Cai and Feng You De who was standing beside them, had the same thought in mind: This is a public place!

They strolled till the river side, here there were people releasing the Kong Ming Lantern. Su Yue bought a lot, Ye Zhen Zhen and Ji Wu Jiu were releasing them by the river side together. The Kong Ming Lantern is made with a layer of thin red paper, it is not in a shape of the normal lanterns, but it is a big headed round shape, after lighting the fire inside, the whole lantern will admit a bright orange light, looking almost like a giant orange. Holding on to the lantern by the river side, Ye Zhen Zhen released it and looked at it slowly going up the sky, thinking that it looks like a firework that will never vanish.

Ye Zhen Zhen subconsciously waved her hands at it.

Ji Wu Jiu was holding the Kong Ming Lantern, but his eyes were at Ye Zhen Zhen. She was looking up now, her snow white face was lit with a warm orange light, her side profile very gentle, her lips opened half, her eyes bright like no other, without blinking looking at the lantern that was going further and further, her expression was in an innocent daze although her gaze does not appear so.

Ji Wu Jiu's heart suddenly shook, it seems like the whole world has left him like the retreating water tides, as for her, red as fire, bright as light, gentle as mist, making him feel a numerous feelings in his heart at the same time.

Ji Wu Jiu subconsciously holds on to his chest, and looked at Ye Zhen Zhen like a fool.

Ye Zhen Zhen turned and saw his expression, although in a daze his eyes were extra ordinarily bright, so she smiled at him “You are not playing?”

Ji Wu Jiu threw away the lantern in his hands, walked towards her and held both of her hands in his.

“What’s wrong?” Ye Zhen Zhen looked at him.

Ji Wu Jiu did not answer. He looked down, and his lips were already gently placed onto her forehead, both of his eyes closed, with his long eyelashes vibrating softly.

The lantern on the floor rolled a few times, and struggled to fly up at the end, passing by the both of their faces, and flew up to the sky.

The night sky was suddenly filled with thousands of fireworks, with all sorts of colours, almost lighting up half the sky.

Chapter 48

Thanks all for the agreement ~ hehe ! Although I said I will summarize... in the end, the translation is still the usual 5 pages (word doc) long... hahahahahaha ~ some parts were already shortened though ~! Enjoy ~~

After the new year celebrations, spring arrived, the ministry of defense really received the attack report from the borders. Tu Lu Fan, gathered a group of armies and was heading towards Dun Huang, Da Da Bu on the other hand gathered troops and was headed towards Da Tong, which was all expected by Ji Wu Jiu. The land mines are tested and ready to be used, and is currently being mass produced, batch by batch being sent to the borders. Besides that, Ji Wu Jiu also accepted Ye Zhen Zhen's suggestion to make more cannons and bombs to be distributed to the borders in 3 separate routes. Since long ago, the people from the central plains has always gone to war placing war strategies in higher importance than the right usage of weapons, and Ye Zhen Zhen has always thought that the weapons have never been properly utilize during a war.

However, Nu Zhen tribe did not make any move so far.

Ji Wu Jiu was very confident with his estimation. After discussion with the ministers, they came to a conclusion that Nu Zhen tribe haven't attack because they are waiting for Da Qi to transfer their arm forces to Da Tong and Dun Huang first before attacking.

So, Da Qi will instead send armies to Liao Dong first to safe guard the place, this was a decision supported by everyone.

It was just that, on the matter of who will be the person in charge of this movement, they have a slight argument. The captain at Liao Dong now would not be able to take on this task, the person there now is Tan Feng Xiang is the brother in law of Fang Xiu Qing, this person may be good in training armies, but in the matters of war, he is not very good at it, so even Fang Xiu Qing himself does not think that, Tan Feng Xiang should be handling this case alone. Actually there is someone that is very suitable: The previous 3 army camp captain Ye Lei Ting. That person is both clever and brave, and has a good leadership, has

experience at war, although those war was not big — there was no big wars in these peaceful era, but amongst the peers he is one of the best.

But of course, considering that Ye Lei Ting is from the Ye family, it was just not sure if Ji Wu Jiu will be mindful or not if he were to be used.

Ji Wu Jiu indeed wanted to use Ye Lei Ting, but he was not going to let him be the general, because..... he wants to be the general himself.

“What?? Your majesty wants to go to war personally?” Ye Xiu Ming’s eyes nearly popped out after hearing Ji Wu Jiu’s idea. His face was full of disapproval as well.

Yes, to go to the war personally was something planned by Ji Wu Jiu from the very start. He was the emperor, but he is also the citizen of Da Qi, as a hot blooded man, he is also very willing to go to war and fight against the enemy who dares to invade his country. To be honest he is both talented in strategizing as well as in martial arts, rather suitable to be placed in the warzone. He tried to use this factors to persuade his ministers but no matter what, the main problem here is that he is the emperor, and he is the only direct descendant left, if anything were to happen to him, the whole nation would be in a mess, what if the dynasty were to change it’s surname.

Even Fang Xiu Qing did not help Ji Wu Jiu on this matter. Not only him but none of the ministers agreed to his decision and all pleaded him to change his mind. Ji Wu Jiu got angry and left Yang Xin Hall, although the ministers were left behind and continue kneeling to make him change his mind. Ye Zhen Zhen dropped by Yang Xin Hall to find Ji Wu Jiu but only found Fang Xiu Qing and her grandfather in deep conversation, both with dark expressions. When Ye Xiu Ming saw Ye Zhen Zhen he immediately told her what happened and requested her to help advise the emperor.

So at night, when Ji Wu Jiu went to Kun Ning Palace, Ye Zhen Zhen asked him “I heard you want to go to war personally?”

Ji Wu Jiu raised his eyebrows “Empress, you also want to stop me from going?”

“No”

“Then you agree with my decision?”

“Your majesty, I want to go also”

What Ye Zhen Zhen said was the truth, she felt that as long as Ji Wu Jiu does not go directly to the warzone, with his intelligence to strategize behind the scenes would definitely be useful, and would most probably not harm his life, and also she herself really wanted to go.

“No, you cannot go” Ji Wu Jiu answered directly.

“Why?!”

“There is no why” There are a lot of reasons, this is a war we are talking about, it is dangerous, not to mention in the army there would only be men, she is a female....

“If you go, I go”

This sentence was very powerful, Ji Wu Jiu was helpless. He believed that even if he does not like her go now, once he left the palace to Liao Dong, she would most probably follow him no matter what method she used, this type of thing most people would not dare to do it, but Ye Zhen Zhen would definitely be able to.

So to make sure Ye Zhen Zhen stays in the palace, the only way is to guard her personally.

A little speechless, Ji Wu Jiu asked “why do you want to go?”

Ye Zhen Zhen also knows how to boot lick others, not telling the truth that she just wanted to go to war personally, she instead said “I am worried about you”

This sentence was really very useful towards Ji Wu Jiu, he immediately pulled her into his arms, and sighed “Zhen Zhen you are fooling me, but... I am still very happy you said that”

“Then, can I go now?”

“Go dream on”

“.....”

The next day, Ji Wu Jiu was met with the most historical moment in his entire life in court. No matter who, how high ranking or low ranked his ministers were,

they were all doing the same thing.

Cry!

The styles of crying were a plenty, full of tears, chokingly crying, tearing, some even had phlegm coming out from their noses.

Ji Wu Jiu anger couldn't rise upon seeing this scene but while trying to calm himself down, he finally couldn't take the mass crying scene anymore and said "Stop crying, I won't go, ! Not going !"

In front Ye Xiu Ming, upon hearing Ji Wu Jiu's promise, stood up and said "Ok, Ok, its enough, the emperor said he is not going already"

So everyone ceased crying.

Sitting on the dragon throne, looking down at the people down there, in his heart he was using "this way Zhen Zhen would not be going to the war, not a bad idea" to calm himself down.

Thus he ended the court, but not without giving out a verdict of appointing Ye Lei Ting as the main captain of the Liao Dong army, and to give him full power of fighting against Nu Zhen Tribe, and to distribute his main army power as so, 20 thousand to go to Xuan Fu, 10 thousand to Da Tong, and 100 thousand to Liao Dong, and the rest to stay at the capital. The rest of the armies at the other regions are to be placed on alert as well, and to be ready for instructions any time.

The day before the armies were to head to their respective places, the Ye Family ladies entered the palace to greet Ye Zhen Zhen, this time around, they brought along Ye Zhen Zhen's aunt, which was also Lu Li's mother.

Aunt's expression was not good, Ye Zhen Zhen greeted her and only to find out her aunt was already tearing, non stop.

Shocked, Ye Zhen Zhen hurried to her side and asked "What are you doing? If there is anything please tell me properly?"

"Your majesty, can you please ask the emperor, seeing that the Lu family has always been loyal, please ask him to not ask Li-er to join the army, he is the only

male in the family, and I only have this one son. His father is already at Xi Bei now, if anything were to happen to Li-er.....”

She did not continue, but Ye Zhen Zhen also understood what she meant. Lu Li, ever since the assassination case, was demoted to the army camp of Wu Cheng by Ji Wu Jiu because Lu Li was not able to safe guard the palace’s safety. This time, he was also appointed to follow the army to the warzone, and will head to Liao Dong tomorrow morning.

Not going to Liao Dong is not Lu Li’s idea, but because he is the only male left in his family, and his father is still at the borders, the mother’s idea is to forcefully make him stay back in the capital, but it is also understandable. Though Ye Zhen Zhen also understands this, but found it weird as well “Aunt, if you really don’t want cousin brother to join the army, then you can ask him to ask pardon from the captain there, uncle is someone respected in the armies, and he is the only male left, this request should not be something hard” Why does she need to come here to ask me to ask Ji Wu Jiu?

Hearing what Ye Zhen Zhen said, aunt cried even worse “Your majesty, you didn’t know, but this time around the emperor personally chose him to go!”

“.....” What does Ji Wu Jiu meant?

Ye Zhen Zhen consoled aunt a little and promised to talk to the emperor with regards to this, and after the Ye ladies left the palace, she headed to Yang Xin Hall.

“Zhen Zhen, you came? Sit down and talk” Ji Wu Jiu was in a good mood.

Ye Zhen Zhen was standing at the entrance of Yang Xin Hall, and asked “Your majesty, did you personally choose Lu Li to join the army ?”

The moment Ji Wu Jiu heard “Lu Li”, the smile that was just appearing on his face dropped, he place his brush down, and looked at Ye Zhen Zhen “You came here, for him?”

“Why did you do that?”

“What do you think? Lu Li is a minister who is still at fault, this time there is such a good opportunity for him to contribute to the country to regain favor, he is your relative, and very hardworking, of course I have to think about him” Ji Wu

Jiu answered. He has also thought it through, as long as Lu Li is not in the palace, Ye Zhen Zhen would not be able to meet him, and slowly her heart will go to him. If so, then there is really no need to kill him. This time, to send Lu Li to the army is because there is Ye Lei Ting there to help him, guaranteed a good job, not to mention that fella's martial arts is better than him, he definitely would not be disadvantaged in the warzone. After the war, he will definitely promote his ranks, and also help him find a wife, such a good ending.

"But he is General Lu's only son, both father and son to be at war at the same time, isn't it not too good?" Ye Zhen Zhen frowned

Seeing Ye Zhen Zhen worried about Lu Li, an anger was rising in Ji Wu Jiu, he replied "To be able to fight for the country, is their pride, what is not good about it?"

"Theoretically it is right, but the way your majesty says it, is not really kind"

"Empress, stop making me angry, why don't you go back first?"

Ye Zhen Zhen, however knelt on the floor, looking at him "I hope your majesty retracts your order"

Ji Wu Jiu was clenching his fists, his eyes were ablaze, and veins were starting to pop. Originally he was a person who was good at controlling his temper, but whenever Ye Zhen Zhen is involved he will find it very hard to control his emotions.

"I Hope your majesty——"

"Get out! Ji Wu Jiu stopped her.

Ye Zhen Zhen did not move, still kneeling.

"Go out, I do not want to see you"

"Your Majesty....."

"Zhen Zhen, if you feel that I am too much this time, then I will also tell you this, I have much more plans that are way worse, just tell me how bad you want it to be." Ji Wu Jiu said while smiling coldly, his smile carrying a hint of bitterness.

"I understood" Ye Zhen Zhen stood up, looking down she left.

Seeing her disappearing from the door, Ji Wu Jiu unconsciously moved his hands to hold on to his chest, his expression was very sad.

Note: Uhh oh~~ Chapter ended with angst.... and it is the weekend!

Chapter 49

DISCLAIMER ALERT!!! I DO NOT HOLD ANY RESPONSIBILITY FOR ANY NOSEBLEED, UNDERAGE, OR MADNESS LAUGHTER. This chapter, I cannot translate it at work.... So I did it at home.. and I shall post it at night.. when all the little kids are asleep.. though, for those in the other time zones.. I hope you will read it.... Alone? Hahahahahaha... those that are not comfortable with overly intimate scenes, kindly skip this chapter entirely.. the entire chapter... is not really suitable for audience under 18, and I will put the “Read More” as a barrier for the start of the....ahem...blushes ~ also I don’t really want to proof read it yet.. too shy ~~ lalalala

On a cold winter night, Ye Zhen Zhen was standing at the vast pavilion, looking at the moon in the sky. Feeling that someone hugged her from behind suddenly, Ye Zhen Zhen did not turn around, but calmly called him “your majesty”

“En” Ji Wu Jiu’s face was placed on to her hair. He closes his eyes and took a deep breath, taking in Ye Zhen Zhen’s scent, the hands on her waist subconsciously tightens. Ye Zhen Zhen caught onto the smell of alcohol, and knew Ji Wu Jiu drank. Tomorrow, he will be sending off the armies to their battle, tonight it was unavoidable that he will have to drink with his generals. Ye Zhen Zhen asks, “Your majesty, are you drunk?”

“No”

“I have something to explain to you, no matter if you believe me or not”

“Empress, please speak”

Ye Zhen Zhen sighed, and said “Me and Lu Li has never had any sorts of male female relationship”

Ji Wu Jiu slowly opened his eyes, his gaze was bright.

“Initially I thought, some things I would not need to explain, but it seems like your majesty you are thinking too much. It is true that me and Lu Li grew up together, and played together. We were like brother and sisters, and would obviously be closer to one another, but.. this does not prove anything. Your

majesty, will you be able to believe me?”

Ji Wu Jiu lightly touches her cheeks, and said sweetly “As long as you are willing to say, I will believe you”

“Also, about today, I also did it because Aunt has asked me to do so, for a son to go far, a mother would surely be worried, not to mention for a war, that is why....”

“Zhen Zhen, what I said earlier was out of anger as well. Lu Li is skilled in martial arts, nothing will happen to him. Furthermore, there is Ye Lei Ting around, he will not let anything happen to General Lu’s only son”

Ye Zhen Zhen knows Ji Wu Jiu has made up his mind, and no one will be able to change it, so she stops convincing him. Also, what Ji Wu Jiu said also made sense. He also would want the war to end faster and for everyone to return safely.

“Zhen Zhen, let’s go in, it is cold outside” Ji Wu Jiu said while pulling Ye Zhen Zhen’s hands into Kun Ning Palace.

Warmth envelops them when they enter Kun Ning Palace. Ye Zhen Zhen rubbed her cheeks, her cheeks were frozen from the chill outside, and had turned pale. After rubbing them, it turned to a hint of blush.

Allowing Su Yue to remove her cape, she was wearing a red coloured embroidered dress, the clothes were fitting, although a little thick, but still properly showcased her slim body. She took the tea from Su Feng, and drank a sip, looking up she saw Ji Wu Jiu was looking at her in a daze. Another maid servant has brought him a cup of tea, but he did not realize it.

He really drank too much, still a bit muddle in his head, Ye Zhen Zhen thought. Holding her own tea cup, she called to him “Your majesty, please drink tea”

Hearing her words, Ji Wu Jiu still did not take the tea from the maid servant, but walked towards Ye Zhen Zhen, held her hands up and looked down, and drank the tea in her cup. The light brown colour of the tea passing through his pink lips, was a very good sight.

Although he was drinking tea, but until now his eyes were still upon her, his gaze were a little bright, but looked a little hot as well, like fire.

He looked up and swallowed the tea, his throat made a noise that comes with swallowing, that could be clearly heard by Ye Zhen Zhen.

Ji Wu Jiu somehow felt that even he had just drank some tea, he still felt very thirsty.

The atmosphere was a little weird. Ye Zhen Zhen felt that the Ji Wu Jiu now is not very normal. When she return to her senses, and wanted to get someone to help them prepare to sleep, she found out that they have earlier on been left alone.

Ji Wu Jiu took the cup from her hands and places it on the table, then grabs her hand and places it on his face, slowly caressing it, and his gaze was a little mystical, his mouth is tilted up, and eyes carries a hint of smile.

Ye Zhen Zhen towards this type of thing lacks understanding, so she only thought that Ji Wu Jiu was drunk, so she called out “Someone, come in and help the emperor change”

No one came in. Su Yue earlier on has closed the door and stay guard at the door.

Ji Wu Jiu pulled Ye Zhen Zhen towards the bed and sat her down, placing his hands on her shoulders, leaning on to her, he leans towards her ears with a low tone he said “Zhen Zhen, please dote on me a little” His voice hoarse, with a little pleading tone filled with gentleness.

When he spoke, his lips accidentally touched her earlobes, making her feel ticklish. Ye Zhen Zhen has never heard Ji Wu Jiu spoken this type of words before, it was like a normally ferocious beast suddenly being tamed and asking to be pet.

This.....

Towards a drunk person, Ye Zhen Zhen did not know what to do. Furthermore, what’s worst is that hearing him speaking with such gentle tone made her a little soft hearted. So she pampered him “How do you want me to dote on you?”

Ji Wu Jiu grabbed her hands, and placed it in between his crotch, there something was waking up.

Ye Zhen Zhen’s face darkens, and immediately wanted to move her hands

away. Ji Wu Jiu though, was holding on to her hands tightly, and pressed down even harder. His breath was getting rougher “Zhen Zhen, I won’t touch you, I won’t touch you, but can you touch him a little?Hmm?” At the very last word, it was like the sound came from his nose, his voice was carrying a tone of hurry and happiness.

Ye Zhen Zhen turned to look at him. His eyes was like a black stone, black and clean, and on the surface there was a layer of mist, and in the middle a flame was blazing, that would more probably not be diminished by water anytime soon.

Suddenly she felt a little guilty. They were a married couple afterall, not allowing him to touch her, then... she will touch him instead.

Therefore, Ye Zhen Zhen really touched the hard thing.

Ji Wu Jiu breathing hard, immediately loosen his belt and pants, and let his little brother loose.

Ye Zhen Zhen:”

“Zhen Zhen...” he called her again gently.

Actually Ji Wu Jiu did not remove all his clothes, only his lower body’s clothes were removed, and revealing only what was required. He turned his body sideways, to better facilitate Ye Zhen Zhen’s movement. His stiff little brother, due to his movements moved up and down, like it was nodding towards Ye Zhen Zhen.

Ji Wu Jiu moved one of his hands towards the back to support his body, and another on Ye Zhen Zhen’s shoulder said “Zhen Zhen, help me please” his voice carrying a very good tone to persuade people.

Ye Zhen Zhen holding her chins, was looking in between his legs. To be honest, although they have performed consummation before, but this time is her first time seeing a man’s private part. Since both of them are a married couple, there is nothing to be shy about really. Therefore, Ye Zhen Zhen opened her eyes wide, she was looking at the little brother, a face full of realization.

Being stared at so straightforwardly, Ji Wu Jiu only felt that his little brother got even harder.

“So Ugly” Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly gave her opinion.

“.....” Ji Wu Jiu’s body shivered from this two words, and when he shivers, his little brother moved as well, like it was approving what Ye Zhen Zhen said. Black lines were forming on his head, to meet this type of woman, he really did not know what to say.

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly moved her hands towards the little brother and lightly touched it.

Ji Wu Jiu let out a sighed, and smiled “Continue”

“Eh, water is coming out” Ye Zhen Zhen said.

“Zhen Zhen, touch it, it will release more” Ji Wu Jiu has already long forgo any courtesy.

Ye Zhen Zhen then holding on to her chin was in deep thoughts again. The thing in front of her, made her think of a gold fish. Two big eyes, a long tail, no.. should be a long mouth.

Goldfish also knows how to make water come out from their mouths, goldfish can make bubbles too.

“Zhen Zhen?” Ji Wu Jiu calls her.

“It would be great, if it can make bubbles too” Ye Zhen Zhen’s gaze returned to the hard thing’s mouth, face full of regret.

“.....”

Whos, *** will, make, bubbles,ah!!!

Ji Wu Jiu was going to breakdown soon. But what’s worst that in his mind, there was an image of his little brother making bubbles, he was really going to be crazy soon.

What angers him more is that, during this type of conversation his little brother is still standing prouder than ever, so to those that dares say that he cannot... really will not understand that he is the man amongst the men.

Ji Wu Jiu in the end decided to grab ahold of Ye Zhen Zhen’s hands, and pushed her hands onto his little brother, moving it up and down. Ye Zhen Zhen seeing his

expression, of nearly crying, nearly laughing, also decided not to reject him, and followed his actions. Although it was she dislikes it a little, but the feeling of disgust was not really present.

After a while, however Ye Zhen Zhen felt that something is wrong, and looked at her own hands questionly.

Ji Wu Jiu wanted to ask her what is wrong, but he does not dare, he is afraid words that will shatter the earth will come out from her mouth again, until that time.. even if he can..might also become cannot.

“I feel like...” Ye Zhen Zhen was contemplating whether to say it or not.

“Don’t speak!!!”

Ye Zhen Zhen does not know why Ji Wu Jiu’s reaction was so big, but she also obediently kept her mouth close, but in her heart she was still feeling very weird, this type of feeling was not something new to her, like she has always been doing it?

Ji Wu Jiu realized Ye Zhen Zhen in the matters of bedroom business was really like a piece of wood, so he also understood that he should not hope for her to please him on her own. So he decided to stop acting shy, and concentrated on instructing Ye Zhen Zhen on where and how to touch.. Although Ye Zhen Zhen did not really study properly, it still brought on happiness to him very much. And to think that Ye Zhen Zhen is currently awake, looking at him, willingly do this for him.... He felt very happy, his chest heating up.

This type of emotion, he has never gotten it from any other women before.

Ye Zhen Zhen starts to listen to Ji Wu Jiu properly, until.. she got a little impatient, yawned, and moved at the same time.

Ji Wu Jiu’s breath suddenly got quicker “Zhen Zhen, faster”

Ye Zhen Zhen automatically listened to his request, and her hands moved faster, and after a while, Ji Wu Jiu’s body stiffen and burst. Because he has not done it for a long time, so there was a little more than expected, the floor was splattered with a layer of white.

Ye Zhen Zhen looking at a few streaks of white passing by her, laughed and said

“This is quite fun”

This time around, after being trained by her weird words, while still taking deep breaths also answered “if so, I will also let you play it”

Ye Zhen Zhen shake her hands that were starting to ache “Next time, you have to quicker”

Ji Wu Jiu held her hands, and suddenly pulled her into his arms. His breath was still not stable, and the blush on his face was still there, with sweat drops on his forehead. He look down, both foreheads touching one another, eyes against eyes, he said in a serious tone “Zhen Zhen, I will only be good towards you from now on, is that good?”

Ye Zhen Zhen climbed out from his arms, kneeled at his side, with her head tilted she asks “You are the emperor, every sentence you said is an edict, is that correct?”

Ji Wu Jiu grab her hand, and tightly held them, smiling “ A leader does not back out of his words”

Ye Zhen Zhen look down and see their interlocked hands, and said “Actually, I have always thought that you hate me”

“I also thought that you hate me”

“I initially did——”

Ye Zhen Zhen did not manage to finish her sentence, Ji Wu Jiu suddenly push her down and pressed her down on the bed, and closed her mouth. Holding on to her lips, he kissed her deeply for a while, then slowly peck her lips lightly.

Ji Wu Jiu held her face, his lips slowly caressing her, using a gentle tone he said “Zhen Zhen, do not hate me”

“....Okay”.

Chapter 50

Ji Wu Jiu went to the 3 main army camps, to bid farewell to the departing armies, and said some very motivational words towards the soldiers making the tens of thousands of men feeling highly motivated. He then returned to the palace, and continued a whole day of work at Yang Xin Hall, during dinner time, he decided to go to Kun Ning Palace to eat, because he was starting to miss Ye Zhen Zhen.

Thinking about yesterday night's sweetness, inside Ji Wu Jiu's was very warm, and sweet. That is why he can't wait to meet with Ye Zhen Zhen, making his steps even faster.

However, when he reached Kun Ning Palace, Ji Wu Jiu found out Ye Zhen Zhen have not started dinner preparation, and this in her case was something very out of the ordinary. Feeling something was wrong, he went into her room immediately.

There was no one inside the room, Su Yue, Su Feng or Wang You Cai was not there also. Then, there was noise coming from the bed, some muffled voices could be heard, the atmosphere was very weird.

Ji Wu Jiu thought that perhaps Ye Zhen Zhen was ill, so he walked towards the bed opened the muslin cloth to take a look, but who knew he would be so shocked by what he saw.

On the bed, there was no Ye Zhen Zhen, but only Su Feng and Su Yue, both of them being tied up properly, mouth covered, and the weird muffled voices were made by them earlier. When the both of them saw Ji Wu Jiu, their eyes brightened, and tried to send message through their eyes.

Ji Wu Jiu suddenly felt something bad happened, at that moment many types of possible scenarios flew by his mind, each getting worse then the other. He took out the cloth from their mouth and asked "Where is the empress? Was she kidnapped by Wang You Cai?"

"Replying to your majesty, it was Wang You Cai who was kidnapped by the Empress!"

Hearing that Ye Zhen Zhen was not in danger, he calm down a little, untied the both of them and said “Speak, what actually happened?”

“This morning, after serving the empress her breakfast, she and Wang You Cai tied me up, and placed me on the bed. Then Su Feng was called in, tied and placed together with me. After that the empress left with Wang You Cai. Before that Wang You Cai was advising her not to go, and when he left, he does not seem to be very willing as well. But the empress threatened him, if he does not want to go, she will tie him up and throw him into Tai Ye Lake to feed the fishes. What happens after that, I do not know”

“She has never returned at all?”

“No”

Ji Wu Jiu did not understand, as the empress, Ye Zhen Zhen can do what ever she likes, why does she need to tie people up? Tying this to maid servants up, would most probably be because she was afraid the both of them will go look for her when she did not return, and if they can't find her the entire palace will be notified.

Afraid they will go look for her?

She left the palace?!

Ji Wu Jiu was shocked by his guess. For a woman that lives in the palace to sneak out, really requires a lot of courage, but thinking that the person is Ye Zhen Zhen, he felt that it was not impossible.

Furthermore, to forcefully bring along Wang You Cai, would most probably be because he has the badge to leave the palace, something that even an Empress would not be able to obtain easily.

Ji Wu Jiu immediately summoned the palace guards as well as eunuchs on duty to ask if they have seen the empress, or any stranger's face, he was afraid Ye Zhen Zhen will camouflage herself as an eunuch to leave the palace.

In within that group of people, there were actually a lot of them that seen her, she did not change her appearance. According to their answer, Ji Wu Jiu found her route of leaving the palace, it was towards the Shen Wu Gate.

Therefore, Ji Wu Jiu personally rushed to Shen Wu Gate, and summoned all the eunuchs on duty, and asked if they have seen the empress.

The eunuchs that were on duty in the morning answered “Replying to your majesty, the empress left the palace with an imperial edict at around 8am.”

“Imperial edict?” Ji Wu Jiu raised his eyebrows dangerously “Which edict was she referring to!?”

“According to Niang Niang, it was from your majesty personally”

Ji Wu Jiu took a deep breath and asked “Did she bring anyone else?”

“Replying to your majesty, she only brought along Wang You Cai “

“Only bringing one person, and you all dared to let her go out” Ji Wu Jiu’s face was very scary when he said those words.

The eunuchs realized that something was not right, and immediately knelt down to beg for mercy.

“Someone, bring these group of people down, and each to be flogged 40 times, keep their heads on at the moment, if anything were to happen to the empress, I will be back for them. You, bring a few people to investigate outside the palace to look for the empress’s trace, do not let news travel out. What ever happened today, who ever speaks a single word to another person, all will be beheaded!”

After leaving his words, ignoring the sounds that are coming from the people being dragged away, Ji Wu Jiu body was shaking, his expression was still very bad. Feng You De can actually hear the sound of him clenching his teeth.

To fake an imperial edict! To leave the palace without permission! This woman’s guts is getting bigger and bigger!

Ji Wu Jiu got angrier by each thought, and returned to Gan Qing Palace filled with anger. On the way back, all the maid servants and eunuch that happens to see him was scared till they all knelt down and not daring to make a single sound, and waited for Ji Wu Jiu to go far away, in the mean time inside they were all thinking about the capability of the person who can actually anger the emperor to this state.

Passing by Kun Ning Palace, Ji Wu Jiu suddenly stopped.

Leaving the palace according to edict? From the emperor personally?

In his mind, he was trying to recollect every single word that he said to her yesterday.

“Go out, I do not want to see you”

“Understood”

“You are the emperor, every word you say is an edict, is that correct?”

“A Leader does not back down on his words”

.... So it was this type of edict, it was this this way you left the palace! Ye Zhen Zhen you are really!!!!

Ji Wu Jiu felt that he will burst anytime soon, seeing a bright light, his chest was heaving heavily, angered blood was rising, and suddenly feeling a sweetness in his mouth, there was liquid coming out from his mouth uncontrollably.

Feng You De saw that Ji Wu Jiu vomited blood, he was scared but immediately help hold on to him, and shouted to the eunuchs nearby “Faster, call the imperial doctor!”

Doctor Tie, checked on Ji Wu Jiu, and said that his anger attacked his heart. Towards this, Doctor Tie was surprised, the emperor was not someone temperamental, this time what could have caused him to be this angry.

Ji Wu Jiu dismissed everyone, and sat on his bed alone, in deep thoughts.

Yesterday night, because he was being too emotional, he said that type of sweet words. When Ye Zhen Zhen asked him, he thought that she just wanted a promise from him, but who knew, she was using the opportunity to lure out those words from him.

For him to finally make a decision about being loyal to her only, he thought that it would be able to touch her a little, but who knew, she does not bother about it!

His sincere feelings was not received, and not only throwing it on the floor, but

adding a few stomps on it as well.

Too cruel, you are too cruel Ye Zhen Zhen.

Ji Wu Jiu smiled bitterly. They all said the emperors are the most cold hearted, but only the heart made of stone that can never be melted are truly the ones that make people life bitter.

His heart was being stabbed by thousands of needles, and was screaming sadly, it was like it being sliced to thousands pieces, layer by layer making him pained till numb, and hard to breath. Ji Wu Jiu held on to his chest with strength, slowly calling out Ye Zhen Zhen's name, again and again, his gaze from a fool in love, slowly turning into cold and hatred.

You think that you walking out of the palace with my edict, you will be fine? Ye Zhen Zhen I will definitely not let you off easily!

Ji Wu Jiu did not sleep the whole night. He was thinking about his conversation with Ye Zhen Zhen, thinking about yesterday's nights happening. All the sweet talk, at this moment was become a joke.

What's a bigger joke was that, he is starting to be worried about her.

A woman, only bringing a young eunuch along, and not knowing the culture of the normal citizens, if someone were to con her, what would happen?

If she met someone dangerous, what would happen?

If this news was spread out, and people with hidden agenda managed to find her first, what would happen?

The world outside is different from the palace. Inside the palace she can do what she wants, but inside the city, who will know that she is the empress? Who will be patient with her, protect her?

She is such a pretty person, eyes bright, with a mole on top of her lips, if someone were to have bad intentions towards her.....

Ji Wu Jiu does not dare to think further. He suddenly stood up and shouted "Zhao Zhi Cheng!"

The moment his words ended, someone immediately appeared and kneeled in front of the bed “I am here, is there any order your majesty?”

“Bring all the hidden guards and spies, to look for the empress, every house send someone back to send news”

“Understood”

Zhao Zhi Cheng left. Ji Wu Jiu lie back down on the bed, and was in imagination land, but because he was still in an anxious state, he was not sleepy as well. When Feng You De came in to rise the emperor for court, he found that his face was very tired, without vigor, so he advised “Your majesty, if you are not feeling well, shall we cancel today’s court? Your body is the upmost important”

Although Ji Wu Jiu was not in the mood for court, he still went to Huang Ji Hall and sat for a while, the ministers was reporting their works non stop, until they received the gaze from Feng You De, so in the end the court ended quickly.

After the court ended, Ji Wu Jiu received the report from the hidden guards, Ye Zhen Zhen, after leaving Shen Wu Gate, headed north and did not stop at her home. Then in the middle of her route, she changed her appearance so her trace was lost. Zhao Zhi Cheng already ordered drawings to be made, and was searching each main gate of the capital.

Towards north? Did not return home? Ji Wu Jiu kept replaying this two sentences and headed to Ci Ning Palace. He told the empress dowager, Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly fell ill, and cannot perform her daily greetings, the other consorts also does not need to go Kun Ning Palace to disturb her.

“You still want to fool me, it was evident that she sneaked out from the palace!”

Ji Wu Jiu at the moment does not have the time to bother about who was the one who leaked the news, and only said “She did not sneak out, but she had my edict”

The empress dowager scolded “Such actions, not only the emperor did not fault her, but still help to cover?”

“Mother, I am not in a good mood today, so I would not argue with you. I only have one thing to say, if anyone dares to harm the empress using this

opportunity, I will definitely not be forgiving”

Zhao Zhi Cheng reported that, the whole capital’s gate did not see the empress leave, Ji Wu Jiu also seems to have properly calmed down, so his thoughts are more clear now. He was angry about Ye Zhen Zhen’s trick and her cold heart, but did not think about the most important part.

Why did Ye Zhen Zhen took such a big dare to leave the palace? What is there that she really wants to do, and only can be done after leaving the palace?

War.

So she definitely left the capital. The guards at the gate did not notice her most probably because she did a very good camouflage.

“No need to search for her, most probably she has already joined the army group” Ji Wu Jiu said towards Zhao Zhi Cheng. Now he is very regretful that he gave her a tiger seal, but who knew her courage would be so high.

Zhao Zhi Cheng who was kneeling on the ground felt his heart lighter, “Your Majesty, do you want me to send someone to the army camp to retrieve the empress?”

“No need, this time I want to catch her personally”.

Note: Forecast ~ will be busy till next Thursday ~ L

Chapter 51

HELLO EVERYBODY!!!! I have finally reached the exact midpoint of this series! Another 51 chapters to go (including the epilogues) Hahahaha... I hope you guys will be satisfied with this chapter

Also~! Warning, for slight nose bleed session at end of chapter ..
hahahahahahaah

Before leaving the capital, Ji Wu Jiu needed to pass an imperial edict to Ye Xiu Ming and Fang Xiu Qing, to allow them to make decisions for the court while he is away from the capital. Besides that he also needs to choose a candidate for the next emperor, as a precaution, and also to avoid Ye Xiu Ming and Fang Xiu Qing from dragging him back to the capital.

Choosing the standby emperor is really something that causes headache, earlier on it was mentioned that the royal family has very little descendants, and Ji Wu Jiu was the only son of his father. Last time, when the emperors gave birth to a few more sons, they will also fight till the last one survives. Ji Wu Jiu's father previously also killed of his brother in order to obtain the throne.

Therefore Ji Wu Jiu had to go through his ancestry book, and found a distant relative. This person was the Ming Emperor's 5th generation descendant, and if calculated properly this person is considered to be the uncle rank of Ji Wu Jiu. After few generations of dispute, this person is not in a good state. He is also the sole descendant, over 40 years old and still unmarried, seemingly his lineage might end. Now he is a scissors sharpener, at the end of his road.

Ji Wu Jiu was considering again and again, and thought that if he accidentally allowed a scissors sharpener to accidentally become an emperor, those ministers would most probably dig up his bones to scold. Therefore, with a stroke of his brush, he chose Princess Li Yang's son, Tan Ji as the standby emperor candidate. If anything were to happen to Ji Wu Jiu, Tan Ji will have to change his surname to Ji, and to be adopted by Ji Wu Jiu as his son. Princess Li Yang is his aunt, so this Tan Ji is his direct cousin brother, so his decision was reasonable. Furthermore to allow Tan Ji to take over the throne, there are advantages, this person, his brains are very weak, to the point of not being able to be groomed, his father was

mentally ill, and has long since been gone, and only Princess Li Yang is guarding him, relying on the wages for the royal family to survive. Therefore he does not have any support from the court, if he were really to be the emperor one day, he will also only be a puppet, and his sole purpose is to maintain the royal lineage. With Ye Family and Fang Xiu Qing taking care of the court, Da Qi's fate should be fine.

That is to say, no matter how much Ji Wu Jiu hates Ye Family, but during the important times, he also can only rely on Ye Family only.

But above, was Ji Wu Jiu's over worrying. He would not die so easily, after taking care of those barbarians, curing Ye Zhen Zhen's sickness, he will get a few sons from her, and then all the problems will be resolved.

Why did his thoughts went to Ye Zhen Zhen giving birth to his sons, wasn't he supposed to be angry at her.

The second day after Ji Wu Jiu left the capital, only did the edict reach the inner court. Ye Xiu Ming and Fang Xiu Qing was speechless, but since the matters is set, they really can't do anything much, afraid of getting disliked by Ji Wu Jiu. When Ye Xiu Ming returned home, he scolded that little rascal, and went into his store that keeps all his treasures, and took out an armour.

The armour is full white, smooth, shining and soft. This thing, the name is called "Silk Shirt", a very common name, but has a very special ability; Impenetrable. Although the name is called silk shirt, but it is not made from silk, but from a type of spider web that can only be found in Yun Nan forest. This type of spider is very rare, its body is very big, and the web they produce is very strong, one strand of it can trap a goat. Someone mysterious there has collected this web for years, and finally made this one armour, and somehow it ended in the hands of Ye Xiu Ming.

Now, Ye Xiu Ming has no choice but to take it out and pass it to Ji Wu Jiu. No matter what, this little rascal's life is the most important, more precious than any treasures in the world.

That night, Ye Xiu Ming sent someone with the armour to chase after Ji Wu Jiu, to make sure Ji Wu Jiu receives the armour as soon as possible.

Not to mention that the people that Ji Wu Jiu brought along are all elites

amongst the elites, and their horses are the best, after three days they have caught up with the army group that has earlier on departed. Seeing Tan Feng Xiang, he went straight to the point and asked him if there were any person that entered the army group with a tiger seal. About this matter Tan Feng Xiang was not really sure. This tiger seal, because it involves the emperor, so the people that saw it will not really mention about it, and will not leak any news out. But seeing that Ji Wu Jiu was looking very anxious to the point of wanting to swallow people up, he immediately got people to ask around layer by layer.

Ji Wu Jiu also personally requested Lu Li to meet him, but in the end Lu Li was also clueless. He was still worried, but also felt calmer; Zhen Zhen did not come to find Lu Li.

After 4 hours, a soldier was brought forward to be questioned, he said that there was really someone that was carrying the tiger seal that entered the army group.

Ji Wu Jiu immediately brightened up “Where is this person now?”

The soldier did not really know who the person was in front of him now, but seeing Captain Tan’s attitude towards him was respectful, so he answered respectfully as well “General Zhen stayed at the army camp for two days, taking some explosives and bullets, and have left”

“General Zhen?”

“Yes, he says his surname is Zhen, a 5th rank general personally appointed by the emperor, his name was Zhen Wei Meng” (it means, (Zhen) Really, (Wei Meng) Strong.. something like that..lol)

“....”

Looks like it was really her.

Ji Wu Jiu’s mouth moved a little and asked “When did he arrive and when did he leave?”

“General Zhen arrived on the day we set up camp, I was the one that received him. But because he said that the reason he is here is very secret, so I did not mentioned it to anyone else. He followed me to check on the armies and two days later he left without bidding farewell”

After hearing what he said, Ji Wu Jiu understood what Ye Zhen Zhen was thinking. This woman is really clever, she already knew that someone will be chasing her soon, so she will not wait to be captured. The reason why she stopped here, was also just to get some armed weapons, and bullets.

No, that shouldn't be it only. Ji Wu Jiu closes his eyes, with his understanding of her, for her to take such a big risk to come out, was most probably being attracted to war, and if after coming out and did not go to war, surely she will not be satisfied. So at the end, she would still end up at Liao Dong, but what she wants is for the person that was sent to catch her get nothing, and after that person returns to report to Ji Wu Jiu, then only she will return here. Therefore, as long as anyone were to go to Liao Dong to wait for her to reveal herself, then sooner or later she will be captured.

Then, after leaving the army camp, where would she go?

Ji Wu Jiu was looking at a map, and guessing the place that Ye Zhen Zhen will head after leaving the army camp. This woman likes happening places, and with the tiger seal, she can enter any army camps, and any opportunities to visit army places she will definitely not let go off. So most probably she will go to a city that has army reserves..... his gaze stopped at a point on the map.

Ji Zhou.

The city of Ji Zhou is located on the north of the capital, all year round there are soldiers located there. After Nu Zhen tribe took over Meng Gu, Ji Zhou is facing the North Western Meng Gu and North Eastern Nu Zhen directly. It was just that these two forces are located a little far from this place, so they are not directly involved with the battlefield.

But, if this place was implicated into war, than it would mean the capital and the entire Da Qi would be in trouble.

The person in charge of Ji Zhou city is an veteran general, Xiu Xi Ming, this person is good with handling his soldiers, good at defense but not attacking, and has been at Ji Zhou for a few decades, and has been very vigilant in keeping this city safe.

Ye Zhen Zhen once again infiltrated into the army camps, and to check up on them. The way she pretended was very good, using Ji Wu Jiu's name to properly praise Xi Xiu Ming, making this veteran general in the brim of tears, and he towards the south he kneeled and bowed three times, making Ye Zhen Zhen feel abit guilty.

Besides acting in the army camps, Ye Zhen Zhen will sometimes go out to play. She was a great spender, and generous, she also looks handsome, with mysterious relationship with the army camp... so in within three days, a General Zhen was very famous in Ji Zhou, a lot of rich and nobles also heard of her and send her invitations.

Therefore, Ye Zhen Zhen somehow or other met Li You.

Li You's background was really mysterious. This person knows medicine and war strategies, knows how to play the zither and how to write poems, able to use the sword, as well as to use a chef's knife. It seems like he a jack of all trades.

He adorns a white cotton robe, and appears to be like a weak scholar, but Ye Zhen Zhen has fought with him before, and knew that he is not at all weak.

His body was tall, looks... can be considered good looking.. Ye Zhen Zhen at this moment does not know how to judge a man's looks, because she found out, being faced with Ji Wu Jiu everyday, the type of handsome-ness he have, has made the other men, no matter how good looking, became common or normal in her eyes.

But, Li You has something that Ji Wu Jiu does not have: He likes to laugh, and when he smiles it was extra gentle, making people flustered. Adding on that he is very knowledgeable, and also interested in almost anything, Ye Zhen Zhen quite like to interact with him.

Today, Li You invited Ye Zhen Zhen out, and she also accepted. Initially Li You's intention was only for the both of them alone, but Wang You Cai was worried and with a thick face he accompanied the both of them, like a lamppost. Ye Zhen Zhen did not stop him, so Li You also did not say anything.

The north side's spring arrived a little later, the flowers by the river side just opened recently, and the willow trees just recently sprouted some greens. Ye Zhen Zhen was standing by the river, looking at the flow. Li You was looking at

her.

She was looking straight, not wearing any scarfs, her neck was smooth. Besides that, she was not wearing her armour today, although wearing men's clothings, but her chest.... E, it was still detectable.

Finding that his thoughts are a little perverted, Li You coughed, and looked down.

"What's wrong?" Ye Zhen Zhen asked.

Li You did not answer, but turned to look at the gun that was on her waist, and asked "The gun that you are carrying now, is it that multiple shot gun in the rumours?"

"it is" Ye Zhen Zhen took her gun down, aimed it at the sky. Her gun, although uses the same type of bullets in the army camp, but the body of the gun is smaller than those, and was more suitable to be used by woman.

Li You looked at her actions and laughed "Can you borrow it to me?"

"No"

"...."

"Do not mind please" Ye Zhen Zhen place the gun back at her waist and said "The armory stated, the multiple shot gun's production is our Da Qi's top secret, this weapon cannot be borrowed to others easily"

Li You smiled "I was just a little curious, If so, then it was me who was too absurd, let me first apologize to you Zhen.... Brother Zhen."

Ye Zhen Zhen just only wanted to console him, but in the corner of her eyes , almost like seeing ghost, she shouted "Not good", turned around and ran.

Li You felt something was weird, turned around and only saw a man leading a group of people chasing towards her scarily.

That young man was shouting while running "Zhen... Zhen Wei Meng! Stop right there!"

Ye Zhen Zhen upon hearing those words, without even turning back ran even faster. Her black and full hair was also moving along with her. Li You did not

know what was happening, but could tell that this man came to look for trouble, so he tried to stop him. But didn't know that the moment he raised his arms, a shadow has already passed by, the man is already way ahead of him.

Such speed!

Li You still wanted to chase after him and the group of people that was behind that man, has already come up and surrounded him, and not caring about the both of them who went far ahead. Li You observes the people around him, and found that they are all people with high martial skills, if they were to fight him one on one, he still have some chances to win them, but to fight them in a group.... He immediately place his hands down, and made a "I Surrender" expression.

Ye Zhen Zhen was running along the river, and has considered jumping into the river a few times, but could not really find the courage to do so. The river in this early spring should be very cold, thinking about it alone has made her shiver.

Ji Wu Jiu was getting closer.

Ye Zhen Zhen was already on the verge of crying. She didn't know that he was able to find her in so fast, and also wouldn't have guessed that he will personally come to get her.

Seeing that Ye Zhen Zhen was not really far from him, Ji Wu Jiu jumped up, and grabbed on to her. The both of them fell down at the river side, and rolled a few times.

"I am wrong!"

Roll ~~

"I am Sorry!"

Roll~~~

"Ji Wu Jiu, I miss you"

The rolling duo suddenly stopped.

Ji Wu Jiu looked at the person that was pushed under him: Wearing men's clothing, her hair already loosen, and covering her forehead and eyes messily, and because of the running earlier, she was flushed and breathing heavily, the

breath she was releasing was straight on to his face, making his face flushed as well.

Even at, the her at this moment, he also found that he did not dislike it.

She said she missed him, but who knew if it was sincere or lies.

But whether it was the truth or not, it still managed to shock him: Ji Wu Jiu's anger was dissipated by her one sentence.

He felt that his heart was numb-ish, and a little hot, this heat was transferred to his face, and then entered his brain. Suddenly he bend his head, and locked Ye Zhen Zhen's lips crazily, "I missed you too, missed you..."

In Ye Zhen Zhen's heart, this method is really useful.

She no longer dislikes Ji Wu Jiu's kisses, although she wasn't sure why, but the most important thing now is to make sure he is not angry anymore. So she was going along with Ji Wu Jiu, and used her tongue to lick him.

This action has totally made Ji Wu Jiu lost his last bit of rational, kissing her, .. his body subconsciously grinded on her legs.

A man, meeting his wife that he was been searching for days, and to be treated this passionately by her, if the lower half of this man did not have any reaction, then he can be an eunuch already.

Ye Zhen Zhen felt the hard and warm thingy on her legs, and remembered, that day Ji Wu Jiu quite enjoyed being touched there, and this time wanting to please him, so she decided to please him. Therefore, using a little strength she held on to that thing.

Ji Wu Jiu was going to be crazy soon.

The group of soldiers earlier on, seeing that they have not returned after so long, was getting a little anxious, a few of them went ahead to look for them. To find the both of them at the river side, with Ye Zhen Zhen under Ji Wu Jiu, and her body shaking a little, the guards immediately dispersed and ran away like they saw something scary.

Over there, the two of them was too busy to realized what happened. Ji Wu Jiu was laying on top of Ye Zhen Zhen, his face at hers, breathing heavily, and calling

out “Zhen Zhen” by her ears. Ye Zhen Zhen was a quick learner, and seeing that the Ji Wu Jiu now has turned from the calm and collected person he was into a different person now, Ye Zhen Zhen felt that she accomplished something big.

Ever since this event, Ye Zhen Zhen has concluded: If Ji Wu Jiu is ever angry at her, no matter how angry he is, as long as she touched there, she can make his anger dissipate almost immediately.

Note: Oh my... our zhen zhen is really.... Clueless!!!! Hahahaha.. I pity Ji Wu Jiu.. I also think that at the end when Ye Zhen Zhen called out his name instead of “Your Majesty” it truly melted Ji Wu Jiu’s heart even more... hehehe

Also.. not sure if that Li You will be a competitor later.... Hmmmm....

Chapter 52

When Ji Wu Jiu and Ye Zhen Zhen returned, they were holding hands, acting like 'we are originally like this, nothing happened'. The guards were still in distress, and seeing them coming back, they all turned to look up at the sky, face full of "I did not see anything, I don't know anything".

Ye Zhen Zhen's lips were still slightly swollen from the kiss just now, and Ji Wu Jiu on the other hand, although his face is expressionless, but there was still a thin layer of blush on his cheeks, and his gaze are already not as sharp or scary, but instead it has a layer of gentleness on them.

Li You looked at Ye Zhen Zhen and asked "Brother Zhen, are.. are you alright?"

"I am fine" Ye Zhen Zhen said, and looked at Ji Wu Jiu, "This is my good friend, called.. called....." Confirmed cannot say his name is Ji Wu Jiu.

Ji Wu Jiu greeted him and said "I am Wu Chu, me catching my playful wife earlier, I must have shocked you " The way Ye Zhen Zhen looks, even a blind person would be able to tell that she is a woman, so there was no need to help cover up, to speak up earlier now, would be good too, to end some people from gaining unnecessary thoughts.

Hearing him say that, Li You was stunned a little. Although he could have roughly guessed their relationship earlier, but for him to so openly acknowledge their relationship, it still made him surprised. Looking at the two of them again, he was thinking about what they could have done earlier, since they were missing for so long.

"I am Li You, who would have thought that Brother Zhen was actually a lady, and is already married, and have such a good relationship with Brother Wu"

Ye Zhen Zhen saw that Li You looked like he was not happy, so she replied "It was not intentional to dress up as a guy, but there are no other way, I hope brother Li would not mind too much, and do not take it to heart"

Hearing how well Ye Zhen Zhen treats that person, Ji Wu Jiu was a little unhappy, and very quickly bid farewell, and brought Ye Zhen Zhen back to his

residing place.

Ye Zhen Zhen was afraid he will punish her, so she was acting very coy throughout the journey. Ji Wu Jiu realizing that she was being very careful with her actions, found it rather funny and also worried. Towards the problem called Ye Zhen Zhen, he has sort of accepted his fate, since no matter what she did, he also can't do anything to her, to scold or hit her, he is not willing, to punish, he can't think of a good way. When he rushed over here, his anger was raising to the roof, thinking about doing this or that towards her, but when he truly met her, happiness has over powered his anger. Originally he thought that this time, she would fall into his hands, but who knew... it was him.. that fell into her hands...

Thinking till here, it seems like Ji Wu Jiu's thoughts have pondered to a certain direction.

To be honest, if Ji Wu Jiu does not have the title of an emperor, or his handsome face, the technique of pleasing woman that he has, is near to almost zero. So when he likes a woman, he only knows how to be patient with her, and treat her well, but his lip service skills are not good. Not to mention Ye Zhen Zhen is close to a piece of wood in this area, if you want to wait for her to realize, then you can slowly wait, wait till you meet hades, also she might not necessary realize.

The next day, Ye Zhen Zhen and Ji Wu Jiu rode out the city to play. Ji Wu Jiu insisted that they share a horse, and the guards were quickly left behind.

Both of them were riding on the horse on the vast grasslands. Ji Wu Jiu felt the wind blowing pass through his ears in a rush, in his arms were a warm body, he was looking at the clear sceneries, and he is smelling the fragrance that was coming from Ye Zhen Zhen's hair. He was satisfied, holding on to Ye Zhen Zhen, with one hand holding the rein, slowly they went further and further.

Not sure how long they rode, both of them stopped at a cliff somewhere. There were a lot of trees at the back of them. Ji Wu Jiu was sitting on the ground, Ye Zhen Zhen sat cross legged in front of him, with a sliver of grass in her mouth in deep thoughts, looking at the blue sky.

Ji Wu Jiu was holding on to the helmet Ye Zhen Zhen took down, and another hand was softly petting her head, with his eyes closed enjoying the time.

“Your majesty, I think this place is better than the palace” Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly said.

“When we are out, don’t call me the emperor”

“O, Wu Chu”

Ji Wu Jiu look at her, smiled and said “Call me husband”

Ye Zhen Zhen blinked and obediently called out “Husband”

“En” Ji Wu Jiu answered while smiling, he pulled Ye Zhen Zhen towards him and captured her lips. Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly pushed him away and said “There are noises”

“What happened?”

“I heard noises that is made by a lot of horses” Ye Zhen Zhen answered. This time around the guards should have stopped somewhere far, even though if it was them, there shouldn’t be this many, there should be at least a hundred horses.

The both of them immediately stood up and look, after a while they saw a group of people appearing, all equipped with weapons, from the way they are dressed they should be the Mongolian armies.

This is weird, this is Ji Zhou, why would Mongolian armies appear here?

But now is not the time to think about this problem, because that group of people there also realized the two of them were there, and stopped not too far from their spot.

The both of them are not exchanging glances with the group of armies there.

Ji Wu Jiu is very regretting that when they left today, they put on their armours, now in the eyes of the opponents, they are two soldiers from Da Qi.

Ye Zhen Zhen subconsciously grabbed on to Ji Wu Jiu hands tightly.

“Zhen Zhen, don’t be afraid” Ji Wu Jiu grabbed her hands instead, and consoled her in a soft voice.

How can she be not afraid, the enemy has more people, even if the twenty guards were all here, they would not be able to fight all of them, and not to mention there are only the both of them here now.

Ye Zhen Zhen was so nervous that even her hands are starting to sweat. Lowering her voice “Your majesty, later you need to run first, I will try to stall them here for a while. You have to run into the forest, they would not be able to find you there, wait till the guards come to save you, and then you can run out. Furthermore the people there don’t know who you are, so they will not waste effort to look for you.”

Hearing this, Ji Wu Jiu heart felt a little sour and sweet, sighed and said “It is not possible for me to abandon you”

“Not possible also must be made possible” Ye Zhen Zhen looked at him anxiously “You are the emperor, you cannot die”

“Then what about you?”

“I have the multiple shot gun, I would be able to distract them for a while” Ye Zhen Zhen said while patting her gun. She was thinking that she will be allowed to hunt today, so she brought along her gun, and she also have sufficient bullets.

“Are you not afraid of dying?”

“Afraid, how can I not, but ..but..” Ye Zhen Zhen was so anxious that her eyes were turning red “I can die, you must not die!” As an emperor, if he died, the whole nation will be in a mess. Ye Zhen Zhen said while wanting to take her gun out.

Ji Wu Jiu pushed her hands down “Zhen Zhen you won’t die, I will also not die”

“There is no time already, quickly run!”

“Zhen Zhen, calm down, Zhen Zhen” Ji Wu Jiu hugged her, “Sit down and listen to me”

Ye Zhen Zhen released her hands from the guns, and looked at him, seeing that he is very calm and collected, not sure why but she also quiet down, and allowed him to pull her to sit down.

Ji Wu Jiu brushed her forehead, and his hands gathered a layer of sweat.

Patiently he explained, "These people saw us, but did not immediately attack, is because they are worried, of this being a trap. The more calm we appear, the more they will not dare to start anything."

Ye Zhen Zhen does not agree "But this way, the risk is still too high, you should run away first"

Ji Wu Jiu instead asked "Tell me the truth, for you to even sacrifice yourself to save me, is it just because.. I am the emperor?"

Ye Zhen Zhen looked at him not understanding what he said, and why he would ask.

Ji Wu Jiu shook his head and smiled, a sad smile "Forget it, I am asking although I already know the answer"

Ye Zhen Zhen does not have the heart to side track now, "Your majesty, you... should run!"

"Zhen Zhen I told you before, when two armies fight, the most important thing is not the geography or weather, and also not the weapons, but people's heart." Ji Wu Jiu was patting Ye Zhen Zhen's smooth hair, he continued "towards the hundreds of people there, there are only 2 consequences of attacking us: Either they successfully captured two soldiers from the opponent army camp, and get a better horse for their efforts or they could fall into a trap and lose their lives. If it the first one, then their souvenir would not be a lot also, but if it is the latter, they will have to lose their life. Just like gambling, win little, but lose a lot, this type of bet, who would be willing to enter?"

Ye Zhen Zhen looked up at him with a surprised face.

"That is why" he concluded "The ones that are truly afraid of taking risks are not us but them"

Ye Zhen Zhen's gaze was shimmering.

Ji Wu Jiu looking at her daze expression, he found it very funny, so he pinched her nose "What's wrong"

"Nothing" Ye Zhen Zhen look down, and went into his arms again, and said "To be honest, I am starting to idolize you"

What I want is not your idolization. Ji Wu Jiu's heart thought.

These two person as a married couple, even if they were a little intimate, the both of them will not feel that something is wrong, but in the eyes of others, it would be different.

That group of Mongolian army's little leader, was afraid of the cunning central plains people setting traps, so he ordered them to stop, to first observe. What they saw was two men hugging each other without any trace of shyness, making them really speechless.

The little leader thought that taking the risk of a trap just to capture two unethical men, is really not worth it, this type of trade is really not worth it, so with a wave of his hands they continued on their journey.

This side, Ji Wu Jiu saw that the people are leaving, took out a flute from his waist, and blew hardly, and along with the flute's sound, from a far suddenly a group of people appeared and was running towards them.

Darn, there really is a trap! The little leader saw the group of people, and quickly ordered his people to leave quickly.

This group of Mongolian army actually predicted that there would be a trap earlier, but now when there really was a trap none of them dared to even turned back, but just grab on to their horses and galloped away as quick as possible, and only thinking about how to live.

Therefore, Ji Wu Jiu brought Ye Zhen Zhen along, leading the twenty people, chased a hundred over people away. Ye Zhen Zhen light up her gun, and released a few shots towards them.

Gun! Really too scary! The Mongolian army ran even faster.

After chasing for about 10 miles, Ji Wu Jiu raised his hands to stop his guards.

Actually there are only twenty of them, if they really angered the Mongolian army, or if they were to realize about it, then they would be the one at a loss.

Two guards carried a person over, and threw him on the floor. He was one of the Mongolian armies, and his legs were injured. Ye Zhen Zhen's few shot just now was not aimed, but still she managed to shoot down 3 person, which 2 of

them were already dead, and left with this one now.

“Bring him back, and interrogate him properly”

“Understood!”

Chapter 53

Till next week ~!

Ji Wu Jiu got a soldier that speaks Mongolian to act as a translator to interrogate the soldier that they managed to capture. The captured soldier was quite determined to remain quiet and even stopped eating.

“Even if you don’t tell me, I know where you are from”

The soldier had no reaction still.

“You are from the Wu Lan tribe. The head of the Mongolian Wu Lan tribe, is Bo Ri Tie Chi Na also known as the Cockroach from the Desert”

The soldier started to react, and he subconsciously shivered.

“Originally I thought when he surrendered to the Nu Zhen tribe, he was reluctant, but seems like he is very willing to join them now”

The soldier looked at Ji Wu Jiu, and asked if he tells him, will he let him live

“It’s too late”, Ji Wu Jiu replied, with a calm face, “What you know, I also know now”

He left the room, and went to look for Xu Xi Ming and Ye Zhen Zhen.

Xu Xi Ming was standing in front of a map, discussing something with Ye Zhen Zhen in a low voice. Seeing Ji Wu Jiu walked in, he immediately knelt down “Greetings to your majesty!”

Ji Wu Jiu immediately pulled him up, ‘General Xu, there is no need for such formalities”

Ye Zhen Zhen asks “Did you get anything from him?”

Ji Wu Jiu walked towards the map and answered “The group of soldiers we met were sent to gather information, and seems like the Mongols are planning to be involved this time”

Wu Lan Tribe is a Northern Mongolian tribe, few years ago they were seized by the Nu Zhen tribe, Bo Ri Tie Chi Na led his groups to surrender to the Nu

Zhen tribe. This time, Ji Wu Jiu thought that Bo Ri Tie Chi Na was unhappy with Nu Zhen tribe so that was why there were no news regarding them earlier on, but it looks like the case isn't so.

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly understood "This person most probably has teamed up with Nu Zhen, when the war starts, he will bring a group of army to attack Ji Zhou, when that time comes even if he were to bring armies here, Liao Dong's side will suffer, but if we don't help Ji Zhou, the Capital will be placed in a very dangerous situation, is what I said correct?" She looked at Ji Wu Jiu with a face waiting for praising.

Ji Wu Jiu flicked her forehead "Such a good student"

"Then should we play the entrapment game" She suggested

Ji Wu Jiu shook her head "Nope, we do not have the extra power to attack and defense at the same time. Ji Zhou is a fortress; they will only need to pay attention to defending. "

Xu Xi Ming said "Your Majesty, do not worry, as long as I am here, not even a Mongolian fly can come into this city!"

"If so, then I will have to ask General Xu to take care of Ji Zhou"

Xu Xi Ming knelt on the floor again "I accept!"

After pulling him up, Ji Wu Jiu added "I have already commanded to transfer thirty thousand soldiers from Shan Dong to help Ji Zhou. Bo Ri Tie Chi Na's army although is strong, but they are to help Nu Zhen, and not really clever, the moment we make Nu Zhen retreat, they will retreat as well. It is just that, General Xu have the responsibility of guarding this city, I am just afraid that some ill hearted people will harm you"

"Why would I be afraid of them!"

"General Xu, you are not afraid, but I am worried. How about this, I will leave 6 elite guards with you, you will not leave their sight, and to make sure you are well protected"

Xu Xi Ming was so touched that his eyes begins to turn red, and wanted to reject this offer, but Ye Zhen Zhen added "General Xu, your life now does not

belong to you only, but to the whole nation, so there is no need for you to push it away”

Hearing her saying so, Xu Xi Ming kneeled again and thanks the emperor.

Going out from the army camp, Ye Zhen Zhen took the initiative to hold Ji Wu Jiu’s hand “I think that you are getting even more capable”.

Ji Wu Jiu returned her hold and asked “If compared with your cousin brother?”

“Although your martial arts skill is not as skillful as him, but you are more intelligent” Ye Zhen Zhen gave a very honest critic.

“if so, do you like it?”

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded

Looking at her expression, Ji Wu Jiu knew that she did not understand his question truly. He also did not explain further and gently played with her palm, smiling like a perv, “If so, give me a kiss, will that be alright?”

There were many people on the streets, although Ye Zhen Zhen is thick skinned, but it was not till this level “We will talk about it when we go back”

When they returned to their residing place, Ye Zhen Zhen has long forgotten about that sentence, but Ji Wu Jiu remembered it well, he closed their room door and kissed her ferociously, and while kissing the both of them have already rolled on to the bed.

Ye Zhen Zhen was laying on his chest, breathing hard she asks “We are heading to Liao Dong right?”

Ji Wu Jiu was patting her head, he answered “I can go, but you cannot”

“I want to go, I want to follow you”

Ji Wu Jiu helped her sit up “Promise me one condition”

“What condition?”

“Undress”

“.....”

Seeing that she is stunned, Ji Wu Jiu knew that she was think too much. He

removed his own clothing, removed the Silk Shirt, and threw it on her head
“Wear this, then you can follow me”

Ye Zhen Zhen knew what that was, and immediately threw it back to him “I will accept other conditions, this one, I cannot”

Ji Wu Jiu pulled her cloths “Do you want to wear it yourself, or do you want me to help you? Or do you want to obediently return to the capital?”

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly looked at him questioningly “Why are you treating me so well?”

Why did I treat you so well? I treat you so well, but you still don’t know why I treat you so well? Ji Wu Jiu opened his mouth, wanting to speak thousands of words but somehow his throat did not even let one out. After a while he finally spoke “If you die, then I will be a widower”

“Makes sense” Ye Zhen Zhen nodded hearing him say that, “You also cannot die, if you die, I will become a widow”

Outside, Wang You Cai was preparing to knock on the door, so he accidentally heard their conversation. Wang You Cai cannot help but to be amaze by this two person’s way of sweet talking. Other people’s sweet talk can melt bones, but theirs was like hitting someone on the back.

Ye Zhen Zhen in the end did not win over Ji Wu Jiu and wore the Silk Shirt. She found out towards a certain type of decisions Ji Wu Jiu will be very stubborn on them.

Before leaving Ji Zhou, Ye Zhen Zhen went to bid farewell to Li You. Towards Li You, Ji Wu Jiu’s attitude towards him is a little weird, not like how he would treat an enemy, but also not friendly, and his gaze towards him was like he was investigating something...

Ye Zhen Zhen somehow felt something is wrong, and when she and Ji Wu Jiu was on route to Liao Dong, she found something else was wrong too.

“You have 18 elite guards, you gave General Xu 8, so there should be 10 let, why is there only 6 now? Where did the other 4 went?” Ye Zhen Zhen asked.

“Threw them away” Ji Wu Jiu answered.

This type of answer made Ye Zhen Zhen rolled her eyes. But no matter what, if he does not want to tell her, she won't ask further.

They continued on to Liao Dong with speed, and when they reach Liao Dong, Ye Lei Ting was there already. Because of various reasons, Ji Wu Jiu did not reveal his identity, and still used the name Wu Chu. Just that, even if he did not say it, a lot of people know that his background is not simple: At such young age, the moment he arrived he became the Deputy General, who knew which rich or noble family from the capital is he from, that was sent here to train. A young person like him, most probably he is here to deter others.

With this thought in mind, many people in the camp looks at Ji Wu Jiu with disdain, this type of look however, was in the end ended in a martial arts competition.

Ever since then, small general Wu Chu gained another nickname "Jade Faced Hades"

That day during the martial arts competition, Lu Li was there as well, but he did not compete. Lu Li is a sensible person, he saw whenever Ji Wu Jiu wins, his gaze will turn towards Ye Zhen Zhen, and when Ye Zhen Zhen praises him, his energy will be tenfolded.... Therefore, Lu Li made the decision to act sick, and would not go create problem.

Ji Wu Jiu knew how this group of people discusses about him, so he decided to punish them using this opportunity. Also he did something that was rather not courteous: In the army camp, everyone is brothers, not good if too much strength is used, and that is why.... He only hit their face.

Therefore, this competition was deemed to be very interesting because of the effects it produced.

Ye Zhen Zhen saw that he was sweating, so she took out a handkerchief and passed it to him.

But he did not take it, but pushed his face towards her to let her wipe them off.

Ye Zhen Zhen couldn't help it, but to use the handkerchief to help him wipe of the sweats on his face. The both of them did not think it was anything, but the

people around them felt that something was amidst: To men, both also handsome and young, one was smiling with a gentle gaze, another was focusing on helping the other wipe the sweats off, no matter how you look at it, it should not be something that is normally done by men. And thinking back on the interaction between the two of them, it truly was a little intimate. Thinking even in more detail, the both of them is staying in the same tent. Not to mention, the way they call one another, Brother Zhen is still ok, he would normally call out the other person's name, but what did Wu Chu call him? Zhen Zhen! Although towards brother Zhen, this type of pretty boy, it was hard to call him "Wei Meng", but everyone else also calls him brother Zhen, only Wu Chu, he will call him Zhen Zhen... without any signs of shyness.

The army camp is only filled with men, it is not like they have not seen men that prefer men, but they both of them were very open, which was very rare.

Over here, the both of them after wiping the sweat off, has left the place without realizing what went through other people's mind, and not too far after heading away, Ji Wu Jiu held Ye Zhen Zhen's hand.

Leaving a group of people speechless, looking at their back figures, with a very complicated mood: To be honest, even if they are both males, but when they are together... they look quite matching....

The next day, Ji Wu Jiu followed Ye Lei Ting, and other high ranked generals to discuss about some things, and then after that he returned to their tent. Wang You Cai was standing outside guarding, and saw that it was Ji Wu Jiu, he did not stop him.

When Ji Wu Jiu entered the tent, he heard water sounds.

The whole tent was built very simple and open, nothing much inside. He stood at the tent's entrance, and saw that person's figure in the hot steam. Ye Zhen Zhen's black hair after getting wet was even darker, and shining. On her back, it was like a pure black waterfall. Her shoulders were half shown, and looked very smooth, and despite it was her back that was facing him, it still made him think a lot of things...

Ji Wu Jiu's gaze could not help but headed downwards along her shoulder.

Then he saw a black and big iron pot.

Ji Wu Jiu “.....”

This iron pot is used to cook rice for the army camp, bigger than the normal pots by a lot, and to be used as a bathtub now, the size was actually quite fitting. Ji Wu Jiu realized, under the pot there was a layer of ashes, most probably to keep the iron pot from being cooled fast, so those ashes was used to keep the warmth.

Looking at the iron pot, somehow the blood that was rushing to his head was calmed down a little. He walked towards the pot and bend down near it, not making a sound.

Ye Zhen Zhen knew someone was walking towards her, and knew it was Ji Wu Jiu. So she opened a towel and placed it on the water to cover her body.

Water steam was rising. Ji Wu Jiu's gaze ended on Ye Zhen Zhen's shoulder, and saw the water droplets on her collar bone, looking further down, although there was a towel covering, but the mount in front of her chest was still quite obvious.

Ji Wu Jiu's throat was tightened, he gently carried up her black hair and was touching them, he added “Zhen Zhen, you are not willing to be with me, is it because i... touched too many women?”

Ye Zhen Zhen's body stiffen, this type of thing, was private and also embarrassing, making her not sure how she should reply .

Ji Wu Jiu sighed, and said “Zhen Zhen, it's been a long time since I touched a woman”

“No wonder they all say that you are a brokeback”

“.....” Ji Wu Jiu suddenly bend his head down, and bite her shoulder, and hearing Ye Zhen Zhen being pained, he reduces his strength, and was only using his teeth to lightly graze her wet skin, like a new born animal looking for milk, very carefully feeling the new things around him.

“Stop it, it's very itchy” Ye Zhen Zhen laughed.

Ji Wu Jiu kept his teeth, and used his tongue to lick over the teeth marks, and at the same time he said “If I died, the reason would most probably be, me being

angered by you”

“You cannot die, if you die, I will be a widow” Ye Zhen Zhen smiled, “Can you first go out now, I want to wear my clothes”

Ji Wu Jiu was standing outside being faced with the cold wind, then an idea came to him.

Since Zhen Zhen thinks that he is not clean, then if he were to be clean in front of her everyday, there should be some use right? The more he thinks about it, the more he thinks that this idea would work, looking down, he grinned, his expression however scared Wang You Cai who was standing nearby.

The next day, when Ye Zhen Zhen wants to bath, she found Ji Wu Jiu was sitting in her pot.

Part 1

Hello~! Short update before the end of the week to spread some sweetness around. The second part would come next week (or earlier.. hehe)~ To those that was concerned, my neck is better now, although still can't turn much.. but at least it doesn't disturb daily life.. hehehe Enjoy ~

ps: too long didn't translate..seems like speed has gone down.. hmmm....
(language too..haha)

When Ye Zhen Zhen wanted to take a bath, she found Ji Wu Jiu sitting in her pot.

"I want to bath" Ye Zhen Zhen reminded him.

As though as he grew from the pot, Ji Wu Jiu looked at Ye Zhen Zhen "Why don't we bath together?"

"Not good" Although the pot was big, but to put two person in a pot, seems to be a bit farfetched.

"Either we bath together, or you look at me bath" Ji Wu Jiu gave a second option.

He thought that Ye Zhen Zhen will either be embarrassed or reject this idea, but who knew without any hesitation she would carry a chair over to the pot. Ordered Wang You Cai to bring in the bath water, and then sat on the chair calmly, holding her chin and was in a ready mode to observe him bath.

Wang You Cai was leading a few others with buckets of hot water, when he entered he saw Ji Wu Jiu sitting in the pot, and Ye Zhen Zhen was sitting in front of the pot, one in a daze and another calm, in his heart he really couldn't guess what this imperial couple is trying to do again, so he kept his head down and quickly get his job done and left the room, not forgetting to close the door properly.

Facing Ye Zhen Zhen's straight face, Ji Wu Jiu felt a tremendous pressure. He looked down at the steam coming from the hot water. It looks like he was possessed just now, if not how would he have made such a weird decision. Ji Wu

Jiu rubbed his nose, feeling a bit nervous, this type of nervous-ness has never even appeared when he was faced with a full court of ministers. but at this very moment, he was so nervous that he don't even dare to look at Ye Zhen Zhen.

“Why are you not undressing?” Ye Zhen Zhen reminded him kindly.

“.....” Who is teasing who now....

Ji Wu Jiu took a deep breath, hardens his heart and took his clothes off, and entered the pot.

At the bottom of the pot, there was a small stool, and inside the pot, the surface was very smooth, the smooth feeling is very different from a wooden tub.

This type of weird comfortable feeling, still did not let Ji Wu Jiu calm down, under Ye Zhen Zhen's gaze, his face was quickly turning red from the hot steam. In the pot, without moving, he tried to use a negotiating tone, “Why don't.. you go out first”

“Are you shy?” Ye Zhen Zhen surprised.

“.....”

“It is not like I have not seen you before” She consoled him.

“.....”

The feeling of being teased is getting stronger, Ji Wu Jiu realized that he should not use common logic with Ye Zhen Zhen, things that are normally avoided by normal ladies are something new and fun for Ye Zhen Zhen. What is weirder was, it was not like he was not used to other women looking at his body, and also experienced being serviced during his baths by women, but now.. not sure why, but he felt so, so.. embarrassed.

Actually, Ye Zhen Zhen did not only thinks that this was something new, but... Ji Wu Jiu's body is really very nice to look at. She has never seen other man's body, so she does not know how to appreciate them, but this body in front of her, has a long and toned body, body line was very beautiful too, and seems to be very strong. His skin after being soaked by hot water, was in a tone of red, like being covered with a light layer of make up blush, and the water droplets on his

body was almost like fresh morning dew on flower petals.

“Really as beautiful as the flowers in the drawings” Ye Zhen Zhen commented with guts.

“.....” Ji Wu Jiu really wanted to bang his head to the pot, should those words be used to describe a man???!”

Ye Zhen Zhen ignored his face that was going to be as black as the pot, her gaze stopped at the beautiful collar bone of his, after a while, her gaze when downwards.

Ji Wu Jiu thought that her gaze is like a pair of soft hands, and was moving on his chest, at that moment, he wanted to cover his chest.

Ye Zhen Zhen’s gaze finally stopped at a peak point on Ji Wu Jiu’s chest. That little dot was playing hide and seek with her along with the movements of the water. She has never seriously observed that thing before, this time she saw that they were slowly turning red from the hot water, and seeing it hiding under water as if it was shy, she really had the thought of pinching them.

Ji Wu Jiu finally understood what was picking up a rock and slamming one’s own feet, and also decided to stop being shy. Anyhow, his intention was to clean himself in front of Ye Zhen Zhen, so although the atmosphere now is a little weird, but as long as it reaches his motive, then it should be good enough.

So, he started to bath himself properly.

Ye Zhen Zhen was just observing quietly, not speaking a word. She had a weird feeling, as though as the body in front of her now should belong to her, other people should not touch it....

After a while, Ji Wu Jiu finally finished bathing, he wore his clothes and took a walk outside, when he came back Ye Zhen Zhen has already bath, and was already on the bed drying her hair. Ji Wu Jiu walked over, leaned on the bed and used a dry towel to help her dry her hair. Suddenly he said “Zhen Zhen, I have washed myself clean”

Ye Zhen Zhen sat up, looked at him weirdly, “I saw”

He pulled her hands, and placed them in the middle of his legs, “I really cleaned

myself well”

Ye Zhen Zhen knew what he was trying to say. She suddenly remembered that she haven't do something that she wanted to do earlier, so she raised her hands and slipped them into his clothes and pinched the red bean on his chest. (Author used red bean....i follow..ahahahahaha)

Ji Wu Jiu took a cold deep breath, not sure whether he himself was comfortable or in pain, holding on to Ye Zhen Zhen's wrist, frowning, “please be gentle”

Ye Zhen Zhen did not foresee his reactions, and wanted to remove her hands, but was pushed down by him.

Their bodies were entangled, hair messy. Before their lips meet, Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly said “Why don't, in the future you don't let anyone else touch you”

Ji Wu Jiu kissed her eyes again and again, and said in between “I would not let others touch me, I only want you, only you....”

Oddly, Ye Zhen Zhen somehow felt very satisfied.

Part 2

The next day was a Shang Si Festival, the common people calls it “San Yue San’ . Early in the morning Ji Wu Jiu and Ye Zhen Zhen went to visit Guang Ning City, the culture at Guang Ning City is a little different from the capital, most people here are not locals, some of them came from the north, and along with them, they brought along their culture, and when it is merged with the local customs here, it has become something unique all together. Ji Wu Jiu pulled Ye Zhen Zhen along with him in the crowds and following the normal citizens they lit up some incense as well, with a sudden impulse, he suddenly chanted to out of no where “I pray to the gods, in the sky and in the earth, if you are really there, please cure my wife’s sickness”, like he was possessed or something. The people surrounding them quickly gain some distance from them, and placing them in the centre of attention.

Shang Si Festival is also Nu Er Festival, on this day, the ladies are allowed to choose or confess to the ones they like. The girls will use colorful strings to make a ribbon, and when they meet someone they like, they will present it to them, and if the guy is also interested with the girl, then he will tie the ribbon on to his waist. Ye Zhen Zhen and Ji Wu Jiu was also walking in this crowd, and both of them also received numerous types and varieties of ribbons from the girls, initially Ye Zhen Zhen did not know what they meant, so whenever she sees any that were nice or unique, she will place them on her waist. When she put one on, Ji Wu Jiu will remove it, and at the end he just snatched all her ribbons, and pulled her to another street.

This street has many shops, while walking by, they passed by a fragrance shop. Ji Wu Jiu took a look at the name board, and saw “Xiang Ru Gu”(Fragrant till the bone), and couldn’t help but be stunned.

Ye Zhen Zhen whom was planning to go in, saw him in a daze while looking at the signboard, so she asks him “What’s wrong?”

“Nothing,” He shook his head, “just that I was reminded of an old acquaintance.”

“O,? Then where is that person now?”

Ji Wu Jiu sighed, “The person is like the name here, No matter what treasures I give you, it didn’t work, I can only think about you till the bones”

Ye Zhen Zhen asks “It’s a woman?”

Ji Wu Jiu asks her back “Jealous?”

Ye Zhen Zhen ignored him and entered the shop. The fragrances she used in the palace was the best, this time around she just wanted to try something new, flipping and sniffing through the shop. The shopkeeper’s first impression towards these two gentlemen, was that they are someone that will send money to him, so he was very helpful to them, not allowing his staffs to help but to do it personally. Ye Zhen Zhen saw a few types of fragrance that she has not seen before, and they smell good too, so she has chosen quite a lot and told the shopkeeper to pack them up. Stopping at a octagon shaped wooden box, she lightly opened the box and took a sniff, and suddenly a rush of fragrance could be smelled. Nice, but not too over, thick but not overpowering, like flower, but it shouldn’t be flower as well, also like wood type, but not as well, the smell is sweet and fresh, and very out of the world. Ye Zhen Zhen could not help but state “Such a unique fragrant!”

The shopkeeper laughed, “Gentleman, you are really someone knowledgeable in this field. Not to hide anything from you, this fragrance is called “You Suo Si” (something that I miss), it is made by this shop only, in the whole nation there is only one.” While saying this, he couldn’t help but to hold up both his thumbs, and his face full of pride. “Furthermore this type of fragrant does not need to be lit, you can put them in a room, or even in a fragrance pouch and placing on your waist, it is both convenient and nice to smell”

Ye Zhen Zhen said “Not a bad idea, but it is just that the name is a bit weird, You Suo Si? Isn’t it easier if we just speak out what we miss, why bother acting all shy about it”

Ji Wu Jiu went nearer, took the box and sniffed, after smelling it he felt a little daze.

“What is wrong with you again?” Ye Zhen Zhen asks

“This, I think I have smelt this somewhere before” Ji Wu Jiu slowly closed his eyes, trying hard to remember the feeling, but it seems so far away. So at this moment, he couldn’t really remember it well.

Hearing this words, the shopkeeper couldn’t help but say “Gentleman, most probably you mixed up, this type of smell is unique only to our stall, our secret recipe, other people should not know. Us business people would not dare to make sure a big statement without validating it”

Ji Wu Jiu shook his head, and said “Most probably, I am not too sure myself, nothing important”

Ye Zhen Zhen also wrapped up quite some amount of this scent. She then moved towards another box and opened it, inside there was a capsule that was very intricately engraved. So she took the capsule out and found out there was something inside, opening it she found a brown round fragrant pill.

Ye Zhen Zhen took the capsule and smelled it lightly, and felt something was wrong, so she took another sniff, in the end she asks “This thing, it has no smell?”

The shopkeeper smiled “Gentleman, this fragrant is called “Shi Tu”, it cannot be smelled by humans, only trained Tits can smell it out. (before anyone get confused, Tit is apparently a bird)

Ye Zhen Zhen was surprised, then why are you putting them here? Are you selling it to the tit?”

“Not selling to them, it is to sell it together with the Tit. In this Guang Ning City, there are all sorts of people. Some families are afraid that their children will be conned away and cannot be found, so they will place this fragrant on their body, in within 10 miles, the Tit will be able to track it. As long as the fragrant is still on the body, they will be able to find their children”

“It really is unique” Ye Zhen Zhen praises.

Ji Wu Jiu also thought that it is quite good, “Let’s buy some”

“We don’t have any children”

Ji Wu Jiu tapped her head lightly, “Silly, you carry it on your body, if you get

lost, I will be able to find you quickly”

“How will I get lost, I am not a children”

“Just wear it” He said, and suddenly lowered his head next to her ears, in a low voice “If not you will be defying an imperial edict.”

Both of them carried out packages and two bird cages out from the shop and headed back to the army camp. The army camp is not as happening as the city, but also decided to celebrate Shang Si Festival, a group of men was drinking wine and reminiscing about their love stories, no matter if it was real or fake, they were speaking of it full of passion. Also, not sure from where but Ye Lei Ting managed to find a group of dance girls, dancing non stop in the camp.

Ji Wu Jiu suddenly understood why Ye Zhen Zhen wanted to leave the palace so badly, and to visit the army camp. Most probably she got too bored staying in the palace, although she is fed well, and served by many everyday, but according to her attitude, in the end she is still someone that prefers to live happily and unconstrained. That is why she has mentioned more than once that “This place is better than the palace”.

Even so, at the end of the day, she would still have to return to the palace, to the place that she does not like. Thinking about this has somehow made Ji Wu Jiu felt a little pain in his heart. Looking at Ye Zhen Zhen sideways, she was currently laughing out loud without constraint.

The wine in the armies are very strong, Ye Zhen Zhen was in a good mood, and drank a few bowls, her gaze are starting to float, and was laughing foolishly at the fire place. Ji Wu Jiu grabbed a hold of her shoulders with one hand, and holding a bowl of water in another, trying to make her drink some water. Ye Zhen Zhen however, ignored him and continued to be in her own world.

“Zhen Zhen drink some water” Ji Wu Jiu gently tells her, while trying to push the water to her face.

The moment the bowl reached her lips, she suddenly turned her head away and laughed “No, I want to drink wine”

Her smile was very alluring, like a blooming peony. Ji Wu Jiu realized no one was really paying attention to them, so he quickly stole a peck from her cheeks.

Ye Zhen Zhen looked up at him, and suddenly her hands were placed on his chest, looking for something. This time round, Ji Wu Jiu was not wearing his armor, so Ye Zhen Zhen very quickly found the red bean on his chest, and she pinched them lightly through the cloths.

Ji Wu Jiu moaned lightly.

She got more and more addicted. Ji Wu Jiu could not take it anymore, threw the bowl aside and helped her back to their tent.

When they arrived back to their tent, Ji Wu Jiu remembered something: He needs to insist on bathing in front of Ye Zhen Zhen. Although Ye Zhen Zhen is drunk now, but he cannot give up, he must be persistent. So he placed Ye Zhen Zhen on the bed, and ordered Wang You Cai to bring in water. After he finally finished bathing, he went to the bed, and found out Ye Zhen Zhen already turned her body, with her back facing to him.

Ji Wu Jiu thought Ye Zhen Zhen fell asleep already, so he slept on his sides and hugged her from the back, his chin on her shoulders, in a low voice he murmured to himself “Zhen Zhen, I have washed myself clean”

Ye Zhen Zhen shivered slightly, and said “Ji Wu Jiu, I am sorry” In her voice carrying a tone of someone that just cried.

Ji Wu Jiu turned her body around, and found her face full of tear stains, and new ones were coming out from the corner of her eyes, her black hair is also soaked with tears.

Ji Wu Jiu could not help but feel sad, he immediately helped her dry her eyes, and gently consoled her “Zhen Zhen, don’t cry, don’t worry”

“I am sorry, I am sick” Ye Zhen Zhen closed her eyes tightly, new tears streams down again, “I am sick, I am sick.....”

“Don’t worry, you can be cured, Zhen Zhen don’t cry, you can be cured....” Ji Wu Jiu kept consoling her gently, his sleeves were all wet from her tears, seeing at her now, made him feel very very bad.

“Why don’t you look for someone else, it doesn’t matter who. Just that... you must not let them touch you”

Ji Wu Jiu kissed away her tears, and replied “I will not look for anyone, I will only look for you”

“But, I am sick, I am sick a.....”

“You can be cured, even if you can’t be cured, it does not matter..”

Note: Sigh ~ I want one Ji Wu Jiu please....

Chapter 55

After being worn out from crying, by midnight Ye Zhen Zhen has slowly doze off to sleep. Ji Wu Jiu however, did not manage to sleep at all that night.

Early morning the next day, when Ye Zhen Zhen woke up, she has already forgotten what happened yesterday night. Seeing how gentle Ji Wu Jiu is, when he looks at her made her felt weird, however she also felt a little guilty, somehow she thought that she must have done something bad yesterday. Though, since Ji Wu Jiu is not saying anything, she will also happily not ask, after breakfast they left to play at the army.

At Sheng Ji Camp, there was a gun competition.

Ye Zhen Zhen would of course join in the fun. She was riding her horse rushing in from a 100 feet towards the place. The soldier that was standing below a pole trying to hang up some lanterns, somehow dropped the lantern when he saw her approaching. Ye Zhen Zhen held up her small gun and aimed at the lantern, the red lantern was shot through and dropped sideways.

The crowd immediately cheered. Though what she did was surely not the best showcase of skilled that the rest have seen, but it was just that Ye Zhen Zhen has very good relationships with the people in the army.

Ji Wu Jiu who was in the crowds also clapped for her. Looking at her cool demeanor, accepting the praises from the people surrounding her, and once he thought of how that person belongs to him, his heart somehow felt a little proud of her.

Ye Zhen Zhen was quite satisfied with the response, kept her gun and felt that indeed skills are to be practiced to be better.

It was Lu Li's turn next, on his horse, when he passed by Ye Zhen Zhen, he gave her a gentle smile. Although Ye Zhen Zhen explained that there were only brother and sisters affection between the two of them, but the gentleness and affectionate smile was really not pleasing in the eyes of Ji Wu Jiu.

Lu Li has just been recently promoted, and most people knew that he is

someone with a good backing, but his skills and personality has made people accept him willingly. Ye Lei Ting also thought of promoting him further to be a Wu Lue General, and have already prepared the request, only to await for Ji Wu Jiu's reply. The later cannot reply immediately, and has delayed a few days, before nodding to Ye Lei Ting.

Lu Li is now on his black horse, rushing towards the target from afar, aiming at the lanterns, he made four shots and 4 lanterns were beautifully blasted apart, with it's red papers making their way down like flower petals scattered by fairies.

This time around, the people there was really impressed, all calling out "Good" loudly, Ye Zhen Zhen also followed and clapped her hands while praising him.

Expressionless, Ji Wu Jiu grabbed one of her hands in his.

Then, a soldier approached him, "General Wu, General Ye invites you to the main tent to discuss about the war situation now"

"Understood" Ji Wu Jiu nodded, and let go of Ye Zhen Zhen, and seeing her still happily looking at Lu Li, her gaze full of admiration and pride, he added "Invite Lu Li as well"

"Yes"

Although Lu Li is being backed by Ye Lei Ting, but it was not good to overly show it, that was why he was still not qualified to enter the main tent to discuss about the war. Also accordingly, Ji Wu Jiu was just a 4th rank General, but because he was the deputy general to Ye Lei Ting, he is allowed to enter the main tent with the rest of the 3rd rank Generals, and supposedly even if he entered there, his role was just to stand around. However, this person who has never even been to a war before has been able to made most of the old generals listen to him, and even General Ye is very courteous towards him, and also purposely looks for him to discuss about certain stuffs.

Therefore his name and position in the army camp is a bit more unique, a lot of people especially the lower ranks soldiers will listen to him very well. This time around, hearing his orders to bring Lu Li along, that soldier did not even contemplate and quickly acted accordingly.

That aside, Ye Lei Ting has received news from the frontline, Nu Zhen Tribe's

front army has already arrived at Yong Chang Town, and would most probably arrive in two days, to Guang Ning City Gates. Few of the generals there also agreed to sending an elite army there to aid and to diminish their motivation.

Ji Wu Jiu too agreed on this plan.

Originally Nu Zhen was a poor and small tribe, and they have been sending tribute to Da Qi, in the state of some low grades items and in exchange receiving some gifts back. Da Qi was alright with this method as they were thinking of just spending some money to gain peace at the borders. However, a decade ago, a person called A Er Ha Tu appeared in Nu Zhen Tribe, calling himself the god of war, and has also successfully united the Nu Zhen Tribe, and also took over some small tribes of the Mongols, expanding his area of control, recently also he has been eyeing on the Da Qi areas, using armies to disturb the common citizens, seems like he has to ambition to take over Da Qi.

If they only occasionally disturb, then it would not be too hard to take care of, but this A Er Ha tu, is not someone simple, Ji Wu Jiu thinks that he has a bigger ambition and motivation behind his acts. Ji Wu Jiu's motive this time was to end all of this once and for all. Hearing that A Er Ha Tu is leading 50 thousand soldiers to attack Liao Dong, Ji Wu Jiu has already came up with lots of methods to go against him.

This time around, the frontline of Nu Zhen tribe consists of around 5 thousand people and horses, the person leading them is A Er Ha Tu's second man, A Ke Dun. The art of war has always been a pride for these people from tribes, as well as something the central plain people are not really great at. Therefore even if it was just 5 thousand soldiers, they should not take it easily.

Taking advantage of the mines, multi-shot guns, and taking in the advice from Ji Wu Jiu and Ye Zhen Zhen, their testing rounds were quite successful, and this time they can really use it. It was just that when the armies ran away, it would be quite a headache.

"It would be best if we can place the mines at the place that they will run away too" Lu Li said.

"Such easy words, around here are all grasslands, they can run to which ever direction they see, how would we know to which direction they will go?"

Someone argued.

“No, we will know” Ji Wu Jiu said

Hearing him say so, everyone turned to look at him.

“I have researched on A Ke Dun this person, although this general is very brave, but he lacks decision making, if he were to face a loss, his first reaction would definitely be to look for A Er Ha Tu to replan, therefore” He pointed at the map in between Guang Ning City and Yong Chang “We will battle here, and then send 3 thousand army to Yong Chang Town to attack A Ke Dun’s remaining army. When the soldiers escape, their speed will increase, if we are afraid we will not be able to get them all, we still can set another trap 10 miles south of Yong Zhang.”

After he finished, he waited for questions. A forty year old, tanned and bearded general said “I still don’t believe, how can we be so sure that he will look for A Er Ha Tu?”

Ji Wu Jiu answered “Even if he did not do that, we can force him to do so. We will place soldiers at the other routes, and just simply shoot our canons towards the sky, confirmed they will just run back to the route without confirming”

Really too wicked! Ye Lei Ting said in his heart. It is just like how normal people trap rabbits, to make noise at all sides to force the rabbit to the route that they want him to go. When a person is running away or escaping they will not have the time to think rationally, A Ke Dun’s brain is also just average, most probably he will just act like the rabbit and fall into the trap. This type of plan sounds very simple when it came from his mouth, however before this there wasn’t anyone who could have thought of this plan.

Other people’s thoughts are similar to Ye Lei Ting. The people in this tent, most of them actually know who Ji Wu Jiu is, initially they thought that the emperor came to the army to play, but after spending these days with him, they also found out his ability. He was just a twenty plus young man, but he was much more cunning than the old people there, the ideas and plans that he came out with can really make people clench their teeth. Furthermore as an emperor, his actions in the army camp was very humble, this was very rare.

Ji Wu Jiu didn’t know that he has successfully bought over the hearts of another

bunch of people.

After confirming their plan, Ye Lei Ting as the main general starts to allocate jobs. Because it was the first battle, they want to scare the opponent a little, so he has decided to go himself, to meet with this A Ke Dun. As for the head for the side attack, Ye Lei Ting ignored Ji Wu Jiu's keen gaze and gave the task to Lu Li.

Besides Ji Wu Jiu, everyone else agreed with his decision. Don't joke around, Da Qi's general did not all die, it was not time for the emperor to lead the army yet.

Although Ji Wu Jiu could have guessed what the decision would be, but he still felt very upset. Pulling a long face, he left the tent, and wants to look for Ye Zhen Zhen to complain, but after a round of search, he still did not see her figure.

Then, a secret guard suddenly appeared, and whispered something to his ears.

Ji Wu Jiu did not manage to listen to everything he has already shouted "Searching for death!!"

Note: As you can see, this chapter was rather boring... so.. it took me a lot of motivation to get it done... hahaahahaha.. I want more lovey dovey pls ~~~

Part 1

Double Update today, please read chapter 55 first~~~

Ye Zhen Zhen was sitting on the observation deck, yawning.

Today, she went to Guang Ning City to play, on the streets she actually met Li You, both of them chatted for a bit, and when for a meal together. After that, she heard Li You wanted to go watch something call “Flower Rating Show” so she also tagged along, but who knew this flower rating show was actually a talent show at the brothel.

Even if Ye Zhen Zhen was a guy, and really wanted to experience dances and music talent by the ladies, the ones in front of her now are not even worth watching for her.

After observing her reactions, Li You smiled “I thought Brother Zhen knew what the flower rating show is all about, that is why you followed me, so I brought you along. Seems like me bringing you to this type of places is my mistake”

Ye Zhen Zhen waved him of, “I do not blame you, I myself did not ask properly”

“This time, I am not sure how Brother Wu will punish me”

Ye Zhen Zhen heard the problem from the statement, “This time? Don’t tell me it was when we were strolling previously?”

Li You showed contemplation, on whether to tell or not.

Seeing him being troubled, Ye Zhen Zhen added “What did he actually do?”

Li You answered ‘Brother Zhen, tell me honestly, do you know that Brother Wu have sent someone to observe me all this time?’

Ye Zhen Zhen was stunned “Why is he observing you?”

Li You shook his head, “That, I don’t know. Initially I thought you were involved as well, it really made me sad, but it seems like even you are not aware of it”

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly remembered the 4 secret guards Ji Wu Jiu threw away, the answers seems to be clear now. Ji Wu Jiu was a person that was very

cautious, this time who knew why he is aware of Li you, but no matter if it was real or not, it was not appropriate for her to be involved. If Li You was really innocent, and Ji Wu Jiu could not find anything, then he will stop the investigation, there was no need for her to know about it as well. Furthermore, a married couple is of one body, although Ji Wu Jiu did not inform her about this, in the end Li You is still an outsider, why would she be angry at Ji Wu Jiu for an outsider. Recently, Ji Wu Jiu is not as hateful as last time, he is more and more pleasant in her eyes, she also wants to be in good terms with him, and does not want anyone to mess it up.

Therefore Ye Zhen Zhen changed the topic, “Brother Li, the ladies on the stage are all pretty, which one do you prefer?”

Li You understood that she does not want to be involved in this matter, in his heart, his guess about this two persons identity is getting clearer. He laughed shyly and answered “Brother Zhen, please let me off, I came here to please my eyes only”

“Actually I have a question that I don’t understand, why does men like to come to this type of places? Isn’t it dirty?”

Li You lowered his voice and smiled “You are not men, of course you wouldn’t know a men’s thinking. Brothels have their own attraction point, I heard” he lowered his voice further “our current emperor, also likes to go to this type of places”

Closing her eyes, Ye Zhen Zhen’s expression turned cold and asked “Who did you hear it from?”

“A minister from the capital, when he went to the brothel, he actually saw the emperor there”

Ye Zhen Zhen’s heart felt heavy, and she stopped talking. Li You took a peek at her expression and in his heart, Indeed!

A while later, Li You noticed that Ye Zhen Zhen was slowly turning into an oven that was being filled up with charcoal, so he decided to bring her out. But suddenly, outside barged in a group of people, their actions was very fast, Li You just only stood up, when his neck was held by a few swords.

Without a change of expression, Li You looked at Ji Wu Jiu and smiled “Long time no see, Brother Wu”

Ji Wu Jiu expression was as though as he was going to eat someone. His left hand was blocking Ye Zhen Zhen, and she was also not giving off any good expression, as though as there was nothing wrong with a woman visiting a brothel.

The other customers nearby has never seen anyone seek for revenge in such a opened way, and was scared into a ball. A few servers were carrying wooden sticks heading towards here to stop them, but was stopped by the secret guards and was kicked far away by them.

The atmosphere was rigid for a while, then Ye Zhen Zhen stood up, walked in front of Ji Wu Jiu, “You really want to murder someone here?”

Ji Wu Jiu did not bother about the people there, and pulled Ye Zhen Zhen out of the brothel, all the way not speaking a single word, and his chest was heaving up and down quickly due to the anger.

Not long after walking out of the brothel, to a quieter place, Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly pushed his hands away, and slowly massaged her hands that was starting to feel pain.

“Ye Zhen Zhen!” Ji Wu Jiu called out

“What’s up?”

“Do you know where you went just now?”

“I know, how could I not know” Ye Zhen Zhen remembered Li You’s words, and her heart somehow felt angered.

“You...!” Ji Wu Jiu no longer knows what to do, “You are the empress, how can you go to that type of place!”

Ye Zhen Zhen scoffed, “If the emperor can go, why can’t the empress go?”

This sentence was as though as a lightning striked on him, Ji Wu Jiu paled.

Seeing his reaction, Ye Zhen Zhen confirmed what Li You said, so she kept quiet and continue to laugh coldly.

Her expression of disgust was too obvious on her face, it made Ji Wu Jiu's eyes pained, his heart pained as well.

He finally understood, his sacrifice, in her eyes was something so light, with such a small misunderstanding, was enough to break the trust between them. It was not that she was not able to see his feelings, but she has never trusted him from the start!. All his gentleness, his efforts, was all for nothing, she has always place herself away from him, looking at him as though it does not involve her, not to mention feelings, even a little trust was not given to him.

Ji Wu Jiu's heart got colder the more he thought about it. Now he is not only angry, he is also disappointed, as well as sad, resigned and wronged... the mixture of emotions he felt are being rushed to his brain like a flow of river, he felt that the blood vessels in his brain was twitching non stop, his chest also felt like it was blasted apart.

Holding his chest, he backtracked a few steps, his eyes was turning red, looking at Ye Zhen Zhen, with a shaky voice "Ye Zhen Zhen, you have no heart"

Ye Zhen Zhen saw his hurt expression, and felt her heart shook, "I....."

Ji Wu Jiu took a few steps back, turned away from her and left. Although his back figure was still straight but his steps were very light.

After passing two streets, Ji Wu Jiu suddenly stopped "Come out"

Someone appeared out of nowhere and stood in front of him, holding his hands he called "Gentleman"

"Don't kill Li You first, continue observing him. Bring another two person and go back to the capital to investigate about him, if he has any relation with Cui Fang Lou, especially with that Liu Yue"

"Gentleman" that person was contemplating, "If so, then by your side there will only be left with 3 person"

"You don't have to worry, 3 person is enough to take care of my life"

"Understood"

Ji Wu Jiu closed his eyes dangerously, the sound of his teeth clenching can be clearly heard by the people nearby. Daring to act cunning in front of me, you

really don't want to live anymore!

Returning to the army camp, Ji Wu Jiu's anger has still not been dissipated, Ye Zhen Zhen also felt very annoyed, although the both of them did not meet up after returning to the camp, but both of them decided to use the same method to feel better.

That night, Ye Lei Ting appointed 15 thousand soldiers, to face the enemy at the frontlines, and another three thousand to follow Lu Li to attack, and another two thousand to help set up the mine traps.

This group of people will be rushing out to the battle in the night, in order to meet up with A Ke Dun's army. Ji Wu Jiu changed his appearance and quietly joined the first battalion, but the moment he joined there, he saw someone familiar there as well.

Part 2

Ye Zhen Zhen!

Ye Zhen Zhen also noticed him. Both of them glared at one another for a while, although still angry at each other, but has temporarily come to an agreement. Not exposing each other.

However, things does not go their way, right before departing, Ye Lei Ting managed to spot the both of them, and tied them up, and threw them back to their tent's bed. If there were any other choices, Ye Lei Ting also didn't want to tie up the emperor and empress this way, but nothing should happen to these two person.

Ji Wu Jiu and Ye Zhen Zhen was laying on the bed sideways, face facing one another. Their hands were tied behind their backs, and legs too were tied together tightly. The both of them once again glare at one another.

Ji Wu Jiu “.....”

Ye Zhen Zhen “.....”

The atmosphere was rather weird at this very moment.

After a while of glaring competition, somehow or other, Ji Wu Jiu moved his head forward and pecked Ye Zhen Zhen's lips. After kissing her, he himself was stunned, even when he came back to his senses he was not sure what happened also.

Ye Zhen Zhen too moved forward, and returned his kiss.

Without dignity Ji Wu Jiu's heartbeat rose. He can no longer control himself and once again captured Ye Zhen Zhen's lips, but no longer pecking only, but full of passion. Holding on to her lips fiercely and allowing his tongue to trace her lip's shape, after a while, when her breath is not even, he left her lips, and after she took a few breaths, he once again took her lips and played with them.

Ye Zhen Zhen's head was getting blurred from his kisses, the anger that was in her heart also started to dissipate. Not knowing why herself, but the feeling of him kissing her was actually quite nice, like she was slowly becoming a deity. She

is very true to her own feelings, and couldn't help but to open her mouth to respond him, and used her tongue to lick him. For her to take the initiative made Ji Wu Jiu heart's nearly stopped, hooking her tongue, he passionately moved them around, almost like wanting to absorb her into his mouth, the feeling made him want to explore her more, this type of feeling,.. Ji Wu Jiu has lived for 20 years, things that has entered his mouth before would be deemed as the best in the world, but there is nothing that can be compared to what he is feeling now.

He was getting more aggressive, his warm breath was upon her face, making her face turn red like a cooked prawn.

Because the both of them was tied up, it was very tiring to move, and after struggling for a while, they finally ended with a stretched neck, like a thirsty fish trying to get water from each other's mouth. Like a pair of kissing fish.

Ji Wu Jiu finally understood what was "For a couple to start a fight on the top of the bed and to end the fight at the end of the bed", as well as another thing: This life, he will be held in Ye Zhen Zhen's hands"

His anger this morning has completely dissipated now. The person in front of him now, has very red cheeks, thanks to his kisses, eyes lightly closed, making her lose her usual strong demeanor, and only left with gentle beauty. The her now, no matter what he thinks now, would never be able to get angry at her, and will only be left with care.

Both of them, after some struggling has finally came to rest together, both of their bodies are pressed to each other, although this position is very awkward, but it made their hearts very calm and comfortable.

Ji Wu Jiu moved his chin to touch Ye Zhen Zhen's face gently, with a sweet smile he asked "Still angry?"

"I am not angry" Ye Zhen Zhen answered, "I think you are the one that is angry"

"I was not... angry"

"That.. uhm, I think I have misunderstood you" Ye Zhen Zhen said.

“O?”

“Although you went to the brothel, you must have your reasons”

Ji Wu Jiu’s heart got warm, and asked “Why would you say so?”

“I am not sure, I just think that, you wouldn’t go find that type of women”
When she remembered how disappointed and hurt Ji Wu Jiu’s expression was, Ye Zhen Zhen feels abit guilty.

“You are correct, there was a reason why I went there, but it was not for that...”

“That is why, I am sorry”

“Don’t worry, I just hope that you will believe me in the future, and do not doubt me”

“En” Ye Zhen Zhen agreed, and then suddenly thought of another thing,
“That... why are you investigating Li You?”

Ji Wu Jiu stunned “You want to stop me?”

“No, I only want to know why, you would have your reasons, if you are not willing to tell me, it is fine”

Seeing her like this, Ji Wu Jiu was touched, so he did not hide from her
“Initially, I suspected that he was a spy from another country, but after investigation, I find him rather mysterious, and it seems to be hard to find out his background as well”

Ye Zhen Zhen was a little surprised, “This is weird, but he does not seem like a bad person to me”

Ji Wu Jiu explained “The word Bad Person would not be written on a bad person’s face”

“Fine, let’s not talk about this anymore. Tell me about your acquaintance”

Ji Wu Jiu asks “Which acquaintance?”

“That... Xiang Ru Gu?”

“En, when I was at the Eastern Palace, there was a maid servant called Xiang Ru, when I saw the board, it reminded me of her”

“Then what happened later?”

“Later, she passed away”

“That’s it?”

“That’s it”

Ye Zhen Zhen was prepared for a long and descriptive story, but who knew it would end in a few sentences, so she continued asking, “Then how did she die?”

“Her father was sent to the borders because he was corrupted, so imperial mother took the opportunity to kill her. That time I was only a crown prince, and young, and was not able to protect her” Ji Wu Jiu said while sighing.

“Then do you miss her now?”

“There is too many things in my heart, there is no time to miss her. Its just that she was my people, she was quite detailed, and knows me very well, but in the end I did not manage to protect her, and feels very regretful now”

This was the first time, Ye Zhen Zhen hears Ji Wu Jiu speak out truthfully to her. The him now, is different from his normal self, making people feel that he is really approachable. But when she thinks of how the empress dowager deals with the people beside Ji Wu Jiu, so without thinking she couldn’t stop herself from asking, “If I am also... by the empress dowager”

Ji Wu Jiu did not want to hear the rest of her words, so he captured her lips. Seeing that she was made speechless, he licked her lips a little and let her go, “No, I will not let it happen”

Ye Zhen Zhen then looked down, and was not sure whether she should believe what he said. The empress dowager was still his birth mother, what can he do to her.

Both of them chatted a while more and fell asleep. The next day, the sky just started to brighten, noises were spread in from outside, waking Ji Wu Jiu up. When he opened his eyes, he saw Ye Lei Ting entering the tent, and personally came in to untie the strings.

Ji Wu Jiu massaged his hands that were starting to get numb, and then helped to untie Ye Zhen Zhen, and seeing that she still did not wake up, he proceeded to

help her massage her hands and legs.

“How’s the war?” Ji Wu Jiu asks, his hands still busy, so he did not look at Ye Lei Ting, his gaze still looking at the sleeping Ye Zhen Zhen gently.

“Blessed by your majesty, we won”

Not only that, everything happened according to Ji Wu Jiu’s plan, Nu Zhen’s army started to escape after getting scared, and returned to Yong Chang twon, and on route they met with 2 traps, and after this 3 events, the 5 thousand Nu Zhen army was nearly gone, A Ke Dun’s head was then chopped of by Lu Li.

After hearing the report, Ji Wu Jiu was in a very good mood, but was also quite jealous. That he could not go to the war and was instead tied up and thrown on the bed.

What’s next was to award accordingly. Lu Li cut off the opponent general’s head, of course he would be awarded the best, but there was just one problem: There was no one that knew who A Ke Dun was in the camp. Who knew if the head he brought back was him or not....

A few generals was gathering at the head, Ji Wu Jiu heard about it, and went towards the bald head and touched it, and concluded “This is indeed A Ke Dun”

“How so?”

From the moment A Ke Dun was born, there was a protruding bone on his head, and it was spread by their tribe about this miraculous event, and it wasn’t any secret.”

The people there was in awe after hearing his explanation, as well as feeling bad. Looks like the emperor is really well prepared, comparing to themselves who does not even know about this.

The days to come pass by as normal. Although everyone agreed the emperor was both clever and skilled, however for him to join the army, No way!

Because they were afraid that both of them got hot headed, Ye Lei Ting also decided, whenever there is any war, big or small, he will first discuss on how to tie them up.

A Er Ha Tu was very speechless. Although his self proclaimed title of God of war

was rather narcissist, but under him there were true capable generals. He always knew that it was important to know the tactics of others before facing them, therefore has done his part in investigating Ye Lei Ting's style of using the army, and have properly thought how to counter attack. So this time although not 100 percent win, but there was still 80% at least, but who knew this time the way Ye Lei Ting uses his army was different, and was way more mysterious. Since when has become so cunning.

Was that really Ye Lei Ting? That ****, isn't he not the reincarnation of Zhu Ge Liang if so!

News soon spread that there was a very clever advisor in Da Qi's armies, and all the ideas was provided by him to Ye Lei Ting, only then did A Er Ha Tu was enlightened, however, even if he knows the truth, what does it help? His 50 thousand men, has been left with only 20 thousand, and Da Qi on the other hand, did not lose as many men as he did, and they only lost their land soldiers, how can land soldiers compare to those horse back soldiers!

Suddenly A Er Ha Tu has a thought of retreating.

No! He has already brought out so many people, he cannot retreat so easily just because he has a little disadvantage, how will he face the people if he returns? How can he still be looked up upon? His ambition should not be ended so early at this place!

Therefore, A Er Ha Tu ordered for his cousin brother to bring another 20 thousand men and to wait for him somewhere, as for him, he re-evaluated his battle strategies, to think of how he should go against the cunning advisor.

Hearing the report, Ji Wu Jiu know that A Er Ha Tu is getting anxious. Even the smartest person, when they are anxious they will show some weak points. He discussed with a few other high ranked general, A Er Ha Tu was in a rush to fix his problem, the moral of the Nu Zhen tribe is not strong, so it was time to end it once and for all. This final battle will take place 15 miles from the camp at an empty grassland, before the army departs, Ye Lei Ting as usual tied up Ji Wu Jiu and Ye Zhen Zhen and placed them in the tent, and left 6 person to guard them. Because this thing was already a usual happening in the army, so the people that were guarding the tent was at ease, even the secret guards that were hidden

were at ease too.

Inside the tent. Afraid that their arms and legs would turn numb, Ye Lei Ting tied Ye Zhen Zhen and Ji Wu Jiu on a chair. This time, they would not be able to kiss, making Ji Wu Jiu very upset.

Ye Zhen Zhen was wearing a red ruby ring on her finger, currently she was moving the ring around to reveal a small hidden blade. She was moving left and right to cut the strings of her, using the blade.

Ji Wu Jiu did not know what she was doing, and seeing that she kept moving non stop, he asks "Is your body itchy?"

"En, moving around abit more will help" Ye Zhen Zhen answered simply.

"Most probably there is just some type of worm, later I will ask the army doctor to get you some medicine, or to burn some incenses to get rid of them"

"En" Soon.

Ji Wu Jiu saw that her expression was getting anxious, and wanted to order someone in to help her scratch, but once he think of how another men were to touch her, he frowned. When he was still deciding on what to do, Ye Zhen Zhen's body was released, and her hands were free.

"You...!"

"Shhh" Ye Zhen Zhen made a please be quiet gesture to him, "I will free you in a while. Then we shall sneak out together" She said and then proceeded to cut the rope on her legs.

So, Ji Wu Jiu quietly sat and waited for her to untie him, what he received was a white cloth wrapping around his mouth.

"Wu, wu??" Ji Wu Jiu was very surprised.

"Your majesty, how can I let you enter the battlefield" Ye Zhen Zhen smiled, she took the rope that bounded her and added another layer on to him, after that she held his face and gave a quick peck. Ji Wu Jiu blushed from her actions, but also turned pale from what she is about to do, making his expression really interesting.

"Wu, Wu, wu!!!"

Ye Zhen Zhen quickly opened the window, turned around smiled “Wait for me to come back” and she jumped out after.

Ji Wu Jiu was struggling hard, eyes turning red, but still couldn’t get free, and could only sat on the chair and wait, wait for her to come back.

This wait, was the longest wait in Ji Wu Jiu’s life.

Note: Longest chapter ever~!!! 10 pages of Words including part 1 ~

Chapter 57

Ji Wu Jiu waited till evening.

Ye Lei Ting brought good news back, Nu Zhen's army lost and escaped using two different routes, one group headed towards the northwest, and another northeast. When he entered the tent, he saw Ji Wu Jiu sitting there alone, and could not help but ask:

"Where's Zhen Zhen?"

"Where's Zhen Zhen?"

Both their voices were heard at the same time, Ye Lei Ting immediately felt something was not right, and quickly untied Ji Wu Jiu. Not sparing a moment to explain, Ji Wu Jiu rushed out to look for Zhen Zhen, but no one saw her, and she was not in the group of injured soldiers as well.

Ji Wu Jiu was like a headless fly, he asked anyone that he passes by, and his face gets paler each time. Seeing his face was very scarily pale, and forehead full of sweat, Ye Lei Ting went to stop him, and consoled "It is very messy now, perhaps she is just in one of the other groups, she will come and find you in a while"

"No, if she really is here, then the first thing she will do would be to boast in front of me" Ji Wu Jiu answered, left Ye Lei Ting and proceeded to ask others if they have seen General Zhen.

An absent minded soldier answered, "We all have not seen General Zhen, most probably he sacrificed for the country....."

This was actually the most logical guess, it was just that no one wanted to speak it out.

Ji Wu Jiu glared at the soldier, until he got afraid, turned and ran away.

Ye Lei Ting noticed that his body seems a little abnormal, so he decided to call someone to get Lu Li. In the whole camp, the only person that can fight and win Ji Wu Jiu is only Lu Li. Lu Li still haven't change out from his bloodied armour, so when Ji Wu Jiu smelt the blood from him, he nearly went crazy. Lu Li quickly

reacted before Ji Wu Jiu went crazy, with the back of the sword, he made Ji Wu Jiu faint.

Because he was mentally exhausted, Ji Wu Jiu slept till the next afternoon. Ye Lei Ting was sitting next to his bed, saw him opening his eyes, and before he can talk, he quickly say “Zhen Zhen is still alive”

Ji Wu Jiu let out a breath, his eyes much brighter now. Sitting up, and receiving a bowl of water from Ye Lei Ting, he took a big gulp.

Ye Lei Ting saw that he was finally back to normal state, he too felt better now. He ordered for some food to be sent over, but Ji Wu Jiu does not have to appetite to eat, so after taking a few bites, he stopped and look at Ye Lei Ting.

Ye Lei Ting said, “Don’t worry, Zhen Zhen’s skill is still not too bad, she will not be easily injured during the battle. I have ordered men from all the camps to go back to the battlefield yesterday and to search through the bodies, and afraid that it was not clear at night, they went again this morning, they did not find her. It means that she is still alive, just that she did not return, so she either got lost, or got... caught.”

“Even if she got lost, it has been so long, she would be able to come back already” Ji Wu Jiu said.

“So....”

“So, she was captured by the enemy to be servant” Ji Wu Jiu sighed, “Yesterday, I have lost my rationality”

“You are just too anxious”

Ji Wu Jiu pondered for a while and said “Something’s not right. Normally only when you win a war would you capture enemy soldier’s when you win a war, yesterday Nu Zhen lost, and was in a hurry to escape, why would they waste effort to catch an enemy soldier?”

“This is also what I am worried about.” Ye Lei Ting answered

Both of them were smart people, this time there was no need to explain further, because there is only one reason: This captured soldier can be used.

Thinking till here, Ji Wu Jiu felt slightly better, towards a captured soldier that

has use, they would not treat that person too bad. But then, thinking about how a beautiful woman being taken by a group of men, his heart that was relaxed tensed again.

Ji Wu Jiu closed his eyes, and tried to remember Ye Zhen Zhen's outlook yesterday, she was wearing her armor, and wearing a scarf, it should not be too suspicious.

No matter what, you must not let them find out that you are a woman, Zhen Zhen.

Perhaps, they already knew that she was the empress? If so, most probably they wouldn't dare to touch her.

Anyhow, if anything were to happen to Zhen Zhen, I will personally lead the army to flatten the entire Nu Zhen Tribe. Ji Wu Jiu's expression was getting sharper and scarier at each thought.

Ye Lei Ting saw that his expression was not right, and thought that he will go crazy soon, so he quickly reminded him, "Then, what should we do now?"

Ji Wu Jiu turned and look at him "Bring over the map, and tell me what strategies did the Nu Zhen tribe use yesterday, as well as the direction they escaped"

Ye Lei Ting got Lu Li to bring in the map. He opened the map in front of Ji Wu Jiu, and pointed at a place that is not too far from Guang Ning City, said "Nu Zhen's army that met with us were here, here and here, after the battle, the left army escaped towards northwest, the middle army and right army went towards the northeast".

Ji Wu Jiu was looking at the map, he said "Zhen Zhen left from this army camp, and wanted to go to the frontlines to experience there, so most probably the opponent that she met would be the opponents left army, if she were kidnapped, then most probably would be by the left army."

Ye Lei Ting said "I will immediately depart to search for her, I will get her back!"

"No" Ji Wu Jiu shook his head, "You need to bring people to chase after A Er Ha Tu"

Ye Lei Ting did not quite understand.

Ji Wu Jiu explained “Have you ever thought that, A Er Ha Tu, this person has been a general since young, and has been at war for almost 20 years, and never lost before, this type of person, most probably is very proud. This time he has been placed at a very disadvantage point by us, how would he accept it. As per the reports two days ago, A Er Ha Tu’s cousin brother is bringing another 20 thousand men to support, this type of A Er Ha Tu, does it seem like he will surrender anytime soon?”

“What you mean is....”

“What I mean is, he will do what ever it takes to fight back. Furthermore there is also the attack towards Ji Zhou, which is like another opportunity for A Er Ha Tu” Pointing towards the route that A Er Ha Tu escaped, “Look at this area, it is a very good place to set traps. A Er Ha Tu is a clever person, if he is not able to win, he would most probably just set a trap here”

Ye Lei Ting’s eyes brightened “Then we should just break his chance of setting up a trap”

Ji Wu Jiu nodded, “That is why you still need to suffer a little more, I shall await for you to bring me the head of A Er Ha Tu”

“Then as for Zhen Zhen....”

Ji Wu Jiu replied “My woman, naturally I will save her personally”

Ye Lei Ting understands his feelings now, but he does not agree with his actions, but this time Ji Wu Jiu was really stubborn, and no matter how much Ye Lei Ting tried to persuade or stop him, it didn’t have any use, until the end, he brought out an imperial edict, Ye Lei Ting can’t say anything anymore. To be honest, previously his him being able to tie up Ji Wu Jiu, was also because Ji Wu Jiu allowed him to do so, but this time his wife got kidnapped, how would he still be able to give face?

So, Ye Lei Ting could only transfer 20 thousand men to Ji Wu Jiu, but Ji Wu Jiu only wanted 10 thousand. To chase 1000 escaped soldiers 10 thousand should be enough, he cannot harm the Liao Dong’s man power because of Ye Zhen Zhen.

But, Ji Wu Jiu agreed on letting Lu Li follow him. Ye Lei Ting finally let his heart down, and repeatedly reminded Lu Li, to protect Ji Wu Jiu well.

Ji Wu Jiu couldn't wait till the next day, and that night he left with his troop. It was already dark, but the 10 thousand army still followed the leader in a very orderly manner. They did not know what was their purpose, they thought they were following General Wu to chase down the enemy. No one has ever thought that this group of soldiers will be bringing nightmare to the opponent's army.

When Ye Zhen Zhen woke up. The first thing that entered her view was a shining bald head.

In that spur of a moment she did not realize what that was, she blinked her eyes, again and again, then the bald head start to move, towards the back, and a face slowly emerged in front of Ye Zhen Zhen “ You have awoken?”

Ye Zhen Zhen just only realized, that she was being tied up on a wooden stand, and because the wooden stand is abit taller, it made her able to see the other person head. Now he has raised his head to look at her, and his whole face can be seen properly. This person has thick eyebrows and big eyes, garlic nose, with a dark and bushy beard, and with his bald head, it really made people think his head was grown upside down.

“So cleanly shaven” Ye Zhen Zhen praised.

“...” The bald guy didn't know that her first sentence after she wakes up would be that, also not sure if she was praising him or being sarcastic. He laughed coldly, “You are already at the end of your road, let me see how long you can be so proud”

Ye Zhen Zhen was not afraid of him “If you wanted to kill me, why would you waste effort to tie me up?”

The baldy got speechless, and his face started to show anger, he took out a dagger and place it on her neck, “Say! Who are you?”

Ye Zhen Zhen laughed, “If I say I am Sun Wu Kong, do you believe?”

Baldy replied “If you are Sun Wu Kong, then I am Er Lang Shen”

Ye Zhen Zhen continued “If you are Er Lang Shen, then I would be Wang Mu Niang Niang”

Baldy was thinking, Yu Huang Da Di is Er Lang Shen’s Uncle, so Wang Mu Niang Niang would be Er Lang Shen’s aunt, this person really wanted to take advantage of him. So he answered “If you are Wang Mu Niang Niang, then I am Yu Huang Dai Di”.

Ye Zhen Zhen answered “If you are Yu Huang Da Di, then I am would be the mother of Yu Huang Da Di”

Baldy: “.....”

Really too despicable!

Baldy places the dagger at Ye Zhen Zhen’s face, angrily he shouted “You little white faced rabbit! Do you think you are a woman!”

Ye Zhen Zhen just only realized that she was wearing men’s cloths, and what she said earlier nearly gave her out, luckily her she managed to cover her appearance well, and also purposely made her eyebrows thicker than usual, so the other person did not realise who she is.

Ye Zhen Zhen retaliate “You won’t understand, us central plain people uses this method to diss others, the purpose is to humiliate the other.”

No matter how Baldy thinks about it, he still felt that this method is more like scolding oneself, but he himself was not clear about the customs of the central plains, so he did not want to continue arguing with the person in front of him now. Somethings not right, he was interrogating this person, why would it go all the way to Yu Huang Da Di and his mother. So he once again place the dagger on her neck, “Stop playing a fool, say, who are you!”

Ye Zhen Zhen thought of how bad tempered this person is and figured that if she keeps playing with him, he will really use the dagger, so she stopped talking.

Baldy suddenly held the dagger, and aimed towards Ye Zhen Zhen’s stomach and stabbed!

Ye Zhen Zhen’s stomach was in pain, so she couldn’t help it but whimpered. The baldy retracted the dagger, indeed there was no blood stain on the blood.

He waved the dagger in front of Ye Zhen Zhen, and said “Young and handsome, wearing the Silk Shirt, you are the emperor of the central plains, correct?” The baldy could not help but be proud of himself. 2 days ago, during the war, he suddenly saw a young general coming out of no where, and both hands carrying a gun, and was moving about carelessly in the mass, although the shots were not very accurate to kill, but still managed to harm a lot of the soldiers. The moment he saw this person, he knew that he was not someone simple, and also he has heard from spy report that the emperor has personally arrived at Liao Dong to take a look at the situation, the more he thinks about it the more it seems to be him, so he ordered his people to surround this person, and capture him alive. After when they are losing, he grabbed this person and escaped together.

Seems like the decision he made earlier was right, this person’s worth is higher than 10 thousand soldiers.

Hearing what Baldy said, she felt quite surprised. Ji Wu Jiu appearing at Liao Dong with the silk shirt, this type of secret, who would have given it out? Could it be that there is a spy in court?

Seeing that Ye Zhen Zhen does not look good, Baldy confirmed his thoughts. So he stopped asking her, and returned his dagger to the waist, and said “Emperor, you would have to follow us, as long as your people is obedient, I will let you off”.

In Ye Zhen Zhen’s heart, his meaning of obedience would most probably be asking for money, luckily she was not Ji Wu Jiu, so there was no need for them to comply to his wishes later. Thinking it through, she decided to not do anything, and first let the foolish fella happy first, when everything is ready, and when he finds out that she is not the emperor, his expression should be very interesting.

Therefore according to his words, Ye Zhen Zhen said “Since you already know who I am, if you were to treat me this way, I don’t think it is the right protocol, why not you let me down first?”

“Seeing that you so quickly already know how to show off your power, you really are from the central plains” Although Baldy was not happy, but really called in a few people to put Ye Zhen Zhen down, and only place a leg chain on her, to avoid her from escaping.

The few people who came in, also shaved their head bald. They are similar to the baldy leader, they kept a braided hair at the back of their heads.

The moment Ye Zhen Zhen was released, she started to request for food and drinks, and baldy towards her actions now were really speechless, as she was not acting like a captured person at all.

“You are really feeling at home” Looking at how Ye Zhen Zhen is enjoying a roasted lamb leg, Baldy could not help but sigh out.

“This is called adapting to situations... since you already know who I am, then can you tell me who you are?”

“Take a guess? I want to test your observation skills”

“Duo Duo Wu La Tu, A Er Ha Tu’s eldest son, also the most doted upon on” Ye Zhen Zhen answered.

Each sentence she said made baldy more surprised. One has to know, this person just woke up not too long ago, how can he be able to guess his identity so quickly? The emperor really shouldn’t be under estimated.

“Duo Duo? This name is quite strong” Ye Zhen Zhen said while looking at his bald head.

Baldy was still surprised and asked “How did you know?”

Ye Zhen Zhen naturally would not tell him that she knows Nu Zhen’s language, earlier on she heard the others called him Eldest Prince. So she just answered “Looks like I guessed correctly, go, get me some sauce”

Duo Duo somehow listened to her obediently, and went to get her sauce, when he gave it to her, his face darkens, “Why should I listen to you!”

“How would I know”

“.....”

“But”, Ye Zhen Zhen consoled him, “If you raise me fat enough, you will get more money”

Duo Duo somehow accepts the logic, so she did not argue anymore, and sat at the side seeing her eat. This emperor is really gentle at eating, even better than those noble woman from his tribe.

After resting for a while, Duo Duo ordered for them to continue moving forward. Ye Zhen Zhen was placed in a cage that allows her head and hands to be out, and was being carried and pulled by 2 horses, quite comfortable. She was observing the route and direction of the army in detail, and listening to the conversations of the Nu Zhen soldiers, and understands the troops heading: Wu Lan Bu.

Looks like Duo Duo wants to meet up with Bo Ri Tie Chi Na, and bringing the hostage along to Ji Zhou city to get some benefits, this was actually a good idea.

In the days to come, Ye Zhen Zhen has shamelessly requested many things, such as asking Duo Duo to remove her leg chain, asked him to get a few soldiers that knows how to speak Chinese language, she can opt to go toilet herself, soldiers cannot peak, and etc etc

When Duo Duo heard the last request, thought that the emperor was really weird, as a normal men, who would bother peeking at another men doing toilet business....

What's weirder was, whatever she requested, somehow or other, Duo Duo will agree.

Ye Zhen Zhen was afraid that they will suspect her, so she purposely request for toilet breaks a few more times, and in between them she will purposely stand afar from them, placing her hands at her crotch area and pretend to pee like how a man would.

Standing at the river side, Ye Zhen Zhen was maintaining this position, and closing her eyes, she starts to go into deep thoughts, while enjoying the wind.

Ji Wu Jiu, would he be able to know which army has taken her and the direction.

No matter if you find out or not, but I still do not wish for you to come her personally.

You are my husband, but first and foremost you are the Emperor of Da Qi.

Her thoughts were going further and further. Not meeting him for a few days, Ji Wu Jiu was appearing in her mind more and more often. His smile, his anger, his lost in thought face, his cunning,

His everything.

Everytime she thinks about him, her heart will somehow turn hot. This type of feeling was very miraculous, she has never experienced it before. It was like, there was a thread between him and her, and this thread will easily be touched, and when its touched, it will bring upon the feeling of her missing him.

Ji Wu Jiu, I miss you, this time its real.

Note: Full chapter ~ torture is over.. hahahahaha.. ;x don't kill me.

Also for those who does not know about Sun Wu Kong

(Using Journey to the west as reference)

Sun Wu Kong = Monkey God

Er Lang Shen = 3 Eyes God that is like a Sky General or something (famous for disliking the monkey god) lol..

Wang Mu Niang Niang = Queen Mother of the west, wife of the Jade Emperor

Yu Huang Da Di = Jade Emperor

Please google if you are unsure.. hahaha

Chapter 58

Recently the capital is in a mess.

The cabinet received the message sent from Ji Zhou, the message was written by Nu Zhen Tribe's Duo Duo Wu La Tu, to notify the Da Qi Court: Your Emperor is currently in my hands, if you want him back alive, then you would have to meet my conditions. I do not want much, 10 thousand liang in Gold, as well as the land beyond Liao Dong, that would be enough.

Ye Xiu Ming was speechless, such a shameless request, it was really rare.

Furthermore, Duo Duo was afraid they will not believe, he purposely made Zhen Zhen print her fingerprint on the letter. It's just that this fingerprint spoiled everything.

— Ye Xiu Ming has never seen Ji Wu Jiu's fingerprint, but as to how his granddaughter's fingerprint look like, he was still able to recognize it.

But, as an old fox; he did not speak out the truth immediately. First was to ensure the safety of Ye Zhen Zhen, to be mistaken as the emperor, then the enemy would not dare to harm her, and second, Ye Xiu Ming wanted to use this chance to settle some annoying people.

The emperor was captured, the nation cannot have no leader, some people will act rashly, and do some stupid things soon.

Therefore these few days, Ye Xiu Ming acted like he was in deep worries, he took the message received from Liao Dong sent by Ye Lei Ting and cut it into half, and only released the part where Ji Wu Jiu was chasing Duo Duo Wu La Tu out to public. When it was released, a lot of people then believed : The Emperor was captured!

Then someone at court, started to make noise about crowning a new emperor. The person behind it was the Minister Xu, supporting the son of Princess Li Yang, Tan Ji to take the post. Xu Family is the maternal family of Ji Wu Jiu, but this time to so anxiously look for people to replace him, Ye Xiu Ming felt sad for Ji Wu Jiu.

Furthermore, even the empress dowager supported this decision. Normally, a

mother's concern towards their son would be endless, but this empress dowager not only wasn't worried about Ji Wu Jiu, but can't wait for him to abdicate his position, it really made people questioned her.

The Xu family has always hated the Ye Family, if Tan Ji managed to be the emperor thanks to the Xu Family, then first thing they will settle of would be to end the Ye Family.

Therefore, someone's attitude in this matter is very important— Fang Xiu Qing

To be honest, for Ye Family to be settled was what Fang Xiu Qing wanted, but he is not willing to see Xu Family that bunch of stupid people and that stupid Tan Ji to govern the country. The duet of foolish emperor and stupid minister will really bring the country down. If Tan Ji really managed to get the throne, then he, Fang Xiu Qing would no longer be useful in court.

Furthermore, it was only a letter, they have not even seen the face, who knows if this Duo Duo Wu La Tu was just bluffing? Not to mention, Ji Wu Jiu has never made any fingerprints since he was born, who knew who's print was those!

And when you look at the fingerprint closely, you will realise that it does not look like the length and size of a grown men would have, it was impossible it belonged to Ji Wu Jiu.

At this part, Fang Xiu Qing thought that he made a very important discovery.

Ye Xiu Ming, this old fox, nearly fooled him as well.

Seeing that Fang Xiu Qing did not hunt him down, towards his reaction, Ye Xiu Ming was both satisfied and disappointed. The both of them decided to called truce, and first confirm the safety of the emperor. No matter what the Xu Family is trying to do, they can just ignore.

What a joke, now the emperor is not here, the court decisions are held half by the Ye Family and another half by the Fang side, you Xu Family are nothing, the empress dowager is who?, Who is afraid of you!

Ye Zhen Zhen was in deep thoughts by the river.

From far, 2 soldiers who were waiting for her, got frustrated and shouted

towards her back “My emperor, are you done yet?”

Ye Zhen Zhen came back to her senses and acted fixing her pants, turned and walked towards them. One of the soldiers than whined, “To pee so long, a river could have came out from you”

“I wanted to dry it abit”

Dry? Dry what?

Do you still need to ask...

The way the two soldiers look at Ye Zhen Zhen changed, which normal person will dry their little brother? In the wilderness? To play..... perhaps this central plains people really have too much time.. what the eldest prince said was true, this emperor is crazy!

Ye Zhen Zhen ignored the changing expressions of the two soldiers, and walked towards her criminal cart, and wanted to get on, but she found someone dress in white, although clothes still tidy, but his expression looks tired. Ye Zhen Zhen was surprised when she saw his face “Li You”

Li You also saw her. He walked towards her “Brother Zhen? Why are you here? Don’t tell me you are Da Qi’s spy?”

“I am not a traitor, I am captured” Ye Zhen Zhen answered, “What about you, how did you appear here?”

“I was also captured, I was following my friend’s group to come out to visit, but was cornered by a group of army, they asked if we knew how to treat injuries, then ... they brought me here”

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded, the military doctors that Duo Duo had, either was lost or dead, looks like this Li You was really unlucky. Seeing that they both have the same luck, she patted his shoulder’s and said “Don’t be afraid, after they finish using you, they will let you go”

“I am not afraid, what about you?”

“Me? I Don’t know”

Then, Duo Duo walked over fuming with anger, and throw Li You to aside. Ignoring Li You, Duo Duo shouted at Zhen Zhen “Speak! Are you the emperor or

not!”

Without even blinking, Ye Zhen Zhen answered, “If I say I am not, would you believe?”

“I don’t believe!” He was turning red from anger, “Most probably they didn’t recognize your fingerprint, right?”

“If you say so”, Then ignoring him Ye Zhen Zhen climbed up to her cart.

Duo Duo kept thinking of ways to proof this emperor’s identity. This damn emperor did not bring any seals with him, and also didn’t bring any close items....

No.... he is wearing the silk shirt! This thing he has long wanted to snatch it over, but that damn emperor said that he will lose the silk shirt soon, so he wants to wear it longer. Looks like, the silk shirt should be sent to Da Qi, when they see the silk shirt, they would definitely know that the emperor is in his hands”

In the middle of the night, Ye Zhen Zhen was tied in her tent, the moment she wanted to fall asleep, someone woke her up. “When she opened her eyes, it was Li You. Now he was wearing the Nu Zhen soldier’s uniform.

Ye Zhen Zhen just only wanted to open her mouth, Li You made a gesture of silence towards her. He untied the ropes from her and pulled her up, passing her a uniform, lowered his voice and said “Follow me”

Ye Zhen Zhen just realized Li You came to save her. She hesitates a little. There were a few thousand people outside, for the both of them; it would be hard to escape. If they were captured, Li You’s life would be on the line.

“Leave yourself, they will not kill me”

Li You did not listen to her, and stared at her stubbornly.

Ye Zhen Zhen did not want to make a fuss so she wore the uniform, and allowed Li You to drag her out of the tent.

Outside the tent, Ye Zhen Zhen found that the surrounding guards has all fainted. Pulling her along they pass through groups and groups of soldiers, and finally they left the camp. After that towards the vast land, the both of them

started to run away, but not too far later, there was a noise behind them.

Many soldiers led by Duo Duo were starting to encircle them. Duo Duo walked towards the both of them, and kicked Li You away. Taking out a curved sword, and wanted to slash him. Ye Zhen Zhen stopped him “Don’t kill him”

“Get lost!” Duo Duo’s sword did not move forward, but did not retract either.

Li You shook her sleeves, “Brother Zhen , don’t bother about me”

“it was because you wanted to save me that’s why you ended here, so I cannot not save you” Ye Zhen Zhen said, and looked at Duo Duo, “so how?”

Duo Duo kept his sword, “It is just a normal Han people’s life, there is nothing about it” He said while ordering to person to drag Li You away. After that he turned to Ye Zhen Zhen, “You, follow me”

Ye Zhen Zhen climbed up and followed Duo Duo back, he brought her back to his own tent.

The moment they entered the tent, Duo Duo immediately started to remove Ye Zhen Zhen’s clothes. Ye Zhen Zhen was shocked, and was struggling to push him away “What are you doing!”

“Take down the silk shirt, I don’t believe that they will still not believe that you are in my hands”

“I will remove them myself, you go out”

Duo Duo was getting impatient, “Why are you acting like a girl” He said while leaving the tent.

The silk shirt was not easy to remove, Ye Zhen Zhen struggled with it for some time, and finally took it out. But before she can wear her armour back, Duo Duo suddenly entered, “I say, you ...”

The remaining words did not come out, Duo Duo’s eyes was huge, with his chin dropped, looking at the person in front of him now. She was only wearing her inner clothes, and there was something off at the front of her chest, that was protruding, being seen by him, she immediately took the silk shirt to cover her chest.

“You!! You are a woman!” Duo Duo shocked

“No No No, it’s just that my chest is big” Ye Zhen Zhen tried to explain.

“You still dare to lie to me! Duo Duo was very angry, Woman? Woman? How can a woman be the emperor, you are not the emperor!” Feeling the hatred of the world, he grabbed her collar, “Say! Who are you!!”

“I, that...”

Duo Duo suddenly took out his dagger wanted to stab her!

Ye Zhen Zhen did not wait and shouted out “I will say!”

“Speak!”

“I, that... although I am not the emperor, but its not too far.”

“What do you mean?”

“I am the emperor’s mother, the empress dowager”

“...” Duo Duo was angered, “You are lying to me again! The emperor’s mom should at least be 40 years old, how would she be as young as you!”

“it’s real” Ye Zhen Zhen looked at him genuinely, “I am good at taking care of my complexion. There are 6 doctors in the palace that only focuses on keeping me young. You should know the skills of the central plain doctors”

Hearing what she said, Duo Duo also thought that what she said made sense. But he was still very suspicious, “you say you are the empress dowager, what is the proof?”

“The proof is this silk shirt” Ye Zhen Zhen threw the silk shirt to him, “My son is a well known filial son, Besides me, in this entire nation, who can still make him forgo his own safety and let that person wear his silk shirt?”

This reason was quite reasonable ,Duo Duo already believed her 50%, but hesitated, “His wife?”

Ye Zhen Zhen laughed coldly, her face changed to a more serious and cruel face, “That little b*tch, how can she compare!

Duo Duo suddenly remembered something else: When he first met her, she has taken advantage of her, and wanted to be his mother, it seems like most probably it was because she really has a son around his age.

This means, she most probably would really be the empress dowager.

Seeing that Duo Duo believed her, she continued “You shouldn’t be sad, although the empress dowager is not as worthy, but still has some use”

There is no other choice. Duo Duo kept the silk shirt, and think that since the emperor is a filial son, with the empress dowager in his hands, to get some money from him should be of no problem.

When Ye Zhen Zhen left the tent, she found out that there was a layer of sweat formed on her forehead. Simply wiping them, she returned to her own tent, all the way thinking back about the scenes earlier, it was lucky that she threw out the empress dowager’s name. Firstly, Duo Duo would not dare to kill her, and secondly he would most probably not have any other thoughts about a forty year old woman.

Her thoughts wandered to Li You, not sure how is his condition now. He knows medicine, most probably he would not be killed, when she gets rescued later, she will bring him along.

Capital.

The cabinet once again received another message, this time Duo Duo Wu La Tu, changed his statement, he says he has the empress dowager. This is even way weirder, the empress dowager is currently sitting in the palace. It seems like this person is a liar, and a very silly one at that.

When the empress dowager heard of this, she was angered speechless. Ye Xiu Ming, however purposely let out news, those with very good imagination, somehow made the story turn into the empress dowager secretly leaving the palace and was caught, making the empress dowager, having no choice but to meet the court ministers at court in the morning.

While teasing the empress dowager, Ye Xiu Ming also sent people to speak with the Nu Zhen’s people but not denying about the empress dowager’s identity, they first go and check out the price, while he delays, and tries to think about a solution.

This side, Ye Zhen Zhen changed from being an emperor to the empress

dowager, being treated well continuously by the Nu Zhen tribe.

Then, there was also the Ji Wu Jiu who was searching for her in the vast grasslands, and not to mention, no idea of what happened in the capital. Everyday he was surviving with “To find Zhen Zhen” this thought. His energy daily seems to be getting weird, and making Lu Li fear that he will suddenly be crazy from any more shocking news, so he was always prepared to faint the emperor if necessary.

Although, Ji Wu Jiu was anxious in his heart, but his control was still very good. He have to maintain calm, only when he is calm will he be able to find Zhen Zhen.

Currently, Ji Wu Jiu was standing by the riverside. Although this river was not wide, but it was flowing freely in this grassland. Ji Wu Jiu looked at the end of the river and sighed, Zhen Zhen a, Zhen Zhen, when will I be able to see you again.

It was only tens of days, it seemed like it was tens of years.

If I am still unable to see you, I am afraid I will become crazy soon.

Lu Li walked towards his side, and stood next to him. After a while, Lu Li said “Your majesty, actually there are somethings that I want to tell you”

“please speak”

“You.. didn’t have to be jealous”

Ji Wu Jiu retracts his gaze, and turned to look at him. The person in front of him was tall, with a masculine appearance, a pair of thick eyebrows, and when he looks at Ye Zhen Zhen, there was always a hint of gentleness that appears subconsciously.

Seeing that he didn’t reply, Lu Li explains “Zhen Zhen already married to you, you are a true married couple, other people would not be able to snatch her away”

“You like her” Ji Wu Jiu suddenly said

Lu Li was stunned, as he didn’t know that he will say that. He looked down, gaze a little lost.

“But what you said is true, she is mine, other people would never be able to snatch her away. Zhen Zhen is so cute, if there are any other men that wants

her, it was normal” Ji Wu Jiu has never thought about first come first serve this problem.

Lu Li smiled bitterly, “I do like her. But it doesn’t matter, my cousin sister, is really a piece of wood. She has most probably never thought about the possibilities of me liking her”

Ji Wu Jiu agrees undeniably to this sentence.

Lu Li, continued “If last time she really had a little feelings for me, even if I were to lose my life, I will still asked for her hand in marriage from uncle Ye. “

Listening till her, Ji Wu Jiu felt lucky that Ye Zhen Zhen is slow towards her feelings. If this woman knew what was love earlier, then most probably he will never be able to get her.

“This life, there is no fate between me and her, so I accepted it. I only treat her as my sister now, that’s why” Lu Li looked up at Ji Wu Jiu, “Now, as her brother, I ask you to treat her better. Zhen Zhen was pampered from young, and not really good tempered, but... she really is a rare girl.”

“I know, she is my wife, it is natural for me to treat her well” Well to the point where Ji Wu Jiu could no longer control, he thinks in his heart.

The both of them quiet down again. Ji Wu Jiu walked along the riverside for a while, looked down, and saw a few stones being placed at a weird position and shape.

“What is this?” Lu Li did not understand as well.

Ji Wu Jiu picked up 2 stones, and place it in the middle of the formation earlier. A simple leaf shaped drawing can be recognized. (The word Ye surname of Zhen Zhen, also means Leaf)

“It’s a leaf, it’s Zhen Zhen” Lu Li was a little anxious, “Your majesty, they indeed pass through here. We did not go the wrong direction, they really did head to Wu Lan Tribe’s place”

“I knew it” Ji Wu Jiu stood up, face filled with vigor “Inform everyone, we depart immediately, and through the night, we must chase up to the Nu Zhen Tribe”

“Yes!”

The group of people rushed the night, the next day, a soldier rode a horse to chase up to Ji Wu Jiu, and said “General Wu, the Tit that you asked me to take care of suddenly got anxious, struggling to get out of it’s cage”

Ji Wu Jiu understood what it meant. He immediately stopped the troops, and to rest there. They have rushed the entire night, so they are tired as well. But Ji Wu Jiu was very energetic. Taking into consideration that if they were to ride horses, the enemy would be able to detect them, so he decided to first bring a few elites with him to confirm the location of Zhen Zhen. The two Tits was tied with a thin thread on their legs, and was attached to Lu Li and Ji Wu Jiu respectively, and another two guards and soldiers were following them.

Indeed, not too far, about 10 miles from where they were, they saw the Nu Zhen Tribe’s camp

Ji Wu Jiu saw the tents from afar, and was very emotional. Zhen zhen is just there....

Cannot go, he cannot go now. He clenched his fists silently, Zhen Zhen, wait a little while more, tonight we will be able to meet again.

Ji Wu Jiu was afraid that if he kept watching, he will not be able to control himself, so he made a decision to return with everyone. In the evening, they started to move again, and carefully followed behind each other’s back.

With 10 thousand men, it was actually simple to win this battle, but considering Ye Zhen Zhen’s safety, they need to properly strategize their plan.

Ji Wu Jiu has previously brought along with him a lot of Man Tuo Luo flower. This type of herb can make a person numb and faint. This time it would be really useful. The wind is currently blowing from northeast, as long as they lit the herb accordingly, even if not all their armies will fall, they could at least make them have wobbly legs.

Then, when the time comes, they will first stealthily enter the camp to save Ye Zhen Zhen, and then allow the rest of the soldiers to flatten the camp.

Zhen Zhen, I will be coming soon to save you

Ji Wu Jiu has never wished for the night to arrive sooner.

Note: busy ~ busy ~ long chapters makes me lazy too... hahahaha =X

Chapter 59

Looooong chapter..... reunion chapter.... everyone blush together chapter....

Disclaimer: Any nosebleed, blushing, screaming, will not be held responsible against me, PLEASE READ ALONE..... especially after the *** partkids dont read after the *** part. tqvm.

Duo Duo was in contemplation.

Ever since he left for this war, it has been two to three months since he last touched a woman.

If there was a woman always bullies you, does not care about her image, and still looks pretty, then this woman is really as pretty as a fairy.

Ye Zhen Zhen was like that.

Towards this type of woman, albeit a 40 years old woman, Duo Duo who has been abstaining for the past few months was starting to find it hard to control himself. That is why ever since he found out Ye Zhen Zhen was a woman, whenever he sees her, he will that he is being hypnotized.

But, his rationality tells him: This woman is the same age as your mother...

When he relates the woman in front of his eyes to his mother, he will somehow feel that if he did anything to her, it would be incest.

Furthermore, she is the empress dowager, the emperor's mother. If he were to ** the emperor's mother, then will the emperor ** him?

But she is really beautiful....

Duo Duo contemplated for a few days. During those days, his rationality and his * was fighting each other in mind, making a mess out of his thoughts, everyday he felt like there was two tiny people fighting in his head.

In the end, the top head couldn't control the bottom head, therefore with his out of the world courage, he made a decision. In order to make sure his decision is safe, he created a reasoning for himself; The woman from central plains always protects their name, even if he did something to the empress dowager, she will

definitely not say anything about it, right?

Tonight, they set up camps to rest, Duo Duo and Ye Zhen Zhen was sitting in front of a roaster eating meat, he passed a bowl of wine to Ye Zhen Zhen. Ye Zhen Zhen, who has enjoyed a few days of comfortable life in the army camp, so her alertness level dropped. She accepted the bowl and took a few sips, and did not notice that beyond the lights, Duo Duo's nervous and anxious expression.

And since Duo Duo's attention was all fully given to Zhen Zhen, he did not notice that his surrounding soldiers looked very tired.

After eating and drinking, Ye Zhen Zhen returned to her tent, and realized Duo Duo was following her. Ye Zhen Zhen raised her hands and pointed at the door, wanting him to go out, but to only find out that it was hard for her to even raise her hands. Her heart dropped, "What did you make me drink?"

"It was just some drugs to help" Duo Duo went towards her and wanted to remove her clothes. He himself was unsure why, once he saw her gaze, his whole body felt weak.

"Get Lost!" Ye Zhen Zhen embarrassed and angry, raising her leg to kick him.

Although her kick was not strong, but Duo Duo did not expect her to kick him, so he fell backwards to the floor. He got angry and gave Ye Zhen Zhen a slap on her face. Seeing her face turning red and swollen almost immediately from his slap, somehow he got more excited.

No longer able to control himself, Duo Duo once again pushed himself on top of Ye Zhen Zhen, holding her down, while leaving kisses on her cheeks, and shoulders, and trying to remove her clothes.

Ye Zhen Zhen was shocked, angry, embarrassed and afraid "Stop, Stop you beast!"

How can Duo Duo stop, he took off his armour and his helmet, her belt was pulled apart, hair messy.

A beauty in a messed up attire, with brimming tears, this scene has made Duo Duo's blood heated up, his hands couldn't help and was on her chest, using strength against them, and also wanting to kiss her mouth.

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly turned her body, and pushed Duo Duo under her, her face was very closed to his, her lips almost touching his.

“You finally accepted it?” Duo Duo was enjoying the pressure from the soft mounds being pressed on him.

Ye Zhen Zhen’s reply was a vomit directly on his face. Although dinner was rather simply, there was only meat, and being mixed with wine, the vomit was not something that smelt nice.

As a person who has unique likings, in Duo Duo’s life, it was not like he has never forced any woman before, more disgusting and gory situations has also been met before by him, but now this type of unique and weird way was truly the first time for him. That was why he was stunned for a while, and took some time to recover his senses.

Ye Zhen Zhen has already left him, and was climbing towards the exit of the tent.

Duo Duo wiped his face and saw that Ye Zhen Zhen was trying to run away, he stretched his hands grabbed her soldiers and dragged her back. Although the strength in his body has reduced but there was still a lot left.

Ye Zhen Zhen cried “Let me go, what you want also I will give you, I guarantee”

“I want you!” Duo Duo said, and started to pull her clothes away again.

However, suddenly a few people rushed in from the tent, and the rather big tent suddenly seemed small, from the entrance of these people. The leader was wearing the Nu Zhen tribe soldier’s uniform, tall, and handsome, the moment he saw what was happening in the tent, his eyes turned red, grabbed onto Duo Duo’s collar and pushed him to the floor. Duo Duo grunted, and before he can react, a kick has already reached his chest, with much strength, making him immobile.

The people behind him saw what happened and they quickly retreated out from the tent.

“You, You, You, You, who are you!”

No one answered him, but only took out a sword, and with a flash, like a silver

dragon moving up. Duo Duo knew that he will not be able to escape, and was scared till he closed his eyes and started to shiver.

The dragon was going to move downwards, Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly said “Don’t kill him!”

The sword stopped 1 inch from his throat.

Ye Zhen Zhen explained “He is A Er Ha Tu’s eldest son, if we catch him back, perhaps he will have some use”.

Duo Duo opened his eyes, and like looking for his last hope, he looked at Ye Zhen Zhen

Ji Wu Jiu turned around to look at Ye Zhen Zhen. Her hair was messy, her cloths half torn, her left cheek was swollen, 5 fingerprints obviously printed on them.

The person he pampers and care for so much, he himself don’t even dare to raise a single finger towards her, but to be bullied till this way.

Duo Duo saw a glimmer of hope, and towards Ye Zhen Zhen he shouted “Empress Dowager, please—-“

Blood splattered. Duo Duo’s head rolled a few times, and headed towards Ye Zhen Zhen, Both the eyes were wide open, as well as the shape of his mouth that was trying to say his last words.

Ye Zhen Zhen stood up with some difficulty, walked towards him, pulled his sleeves, “You have arrived”

Silence.

Ye Zhen Zhen then took the initiative to hug his waist, placing her face on his chest, “Don’t be angry anymore”

Ji Wu Jiu suddenly hugged her, tightly, so tight that Ye Zhen Zhen’s body was starting to feel pain. As though as he was afraid that she will disappear in thin air.

“Zhen Zhen, Zhen Zhen...” his chin was placed on top of her head, while he chants her name non stop.

“I am here” Ye Zhen Zhen allowed him to hug her, when she opened her

mouth, tears started to stream down, “I will never act brashly again”

“Zhen Zhen, Zhen Zhen....” Ji Wu Jiu kept repeating her name. This person, for these past days, he was constantly afraid that she will be bullied, will suffer, and everytime he thinks of the possibilities of her being bullied, he will not be able to sleep well. Now, he finally have her in his arms. He cannot help but be grateful that the gods treat him well enough. The emptiness that he has felt in his heart, was suddenly filled, and to the max, though now he is not sure if he is feeling well or comfortable now.

“Ji Wu Jiu, I miss you” Ye Zhen Zhen cried

Ji Wu Jiu released her, and helped her wipe away her tears, gently he replied “I also miss you too”.

Then, outside there was noises of fight suddenly. Ji Wu Jiu knew it was Da Qi’s army arrival to attack this camp, so he pulled Ye Zhen Zhen to sit inside the tent.

Ye Zhen Zhen saw that Ji Wu Jiu kicked Duo Duo’s head to a side, so she said “He really was A Er Ha Tu’s son”

“So what, daring to touch my woman, even death will not compensate anything” Ji Wu Jiu was looking at Ye Zhen Zhen’s left cheek, feeling bad again.

“If we catch him, we could have exchanged it for something good, To return the favour”

“I do not lack anything” Ji Wu Jiu said, and suddenly asked, “When he died why did he called the empress dowager?”

“He... did not, you heard wrongly” Ye Zhen Zhen felt guilty.

“Really?” Ji Wu Jiu closed his eyes a little.

Ye Zhen Zhen instead pushed herself into his arms, “Ji Wu Jiu, I am feeling uncomfortable”

Ji Wu Jiu knew that she was trying to change the topic purposely, but he still could not help but ask “Where?, are you feeling weak?” If she has no strength , it should be because of the man tuo luo.

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded, and then shook her head. Not only does she feel weak, there was a heat going through her body, a type of indescribable feeling, like

having a fever, but she was more aware then when she has a fever, “i.. am hot”

Not it was nighttime, she was only wearing a layer of clothes, how can she feel hot? Ji Wu Jiu felt weird, and touched her forehead, it was quite warm, but it wasn't fever.

Turning her face over, he took a good look, for her left cheek to be red was understandable, but her right cheek was not slapped, but it was in a deep blush as well. Furthermore, her eyes was glimmering, her cherry lips pouted,

Ji Wu Jiu asks, “What did he give you to eat?”

“I don't know” Ye Zhen Zhen smiled, beautifully, and when she saw Ji Wu Jiu looking at her face, somehow she licked her lips.

“.....” You don't know, I know. Ji Wu Jiu scolded Bast*rd in his heart, he carried Ye Zhen Zhen up, and walked out the tent.

The war outside was won with super speed, since Nu Zhen's army lost their leader, a headless fly made it easier to win over them, and was captured easily. So the war was getting to the end. Lu Li walked towards them, and asks Ji Wu Jiu on how to deal with the people there.

“Kill all of them here”

Ji Wu Jiu was expressionless when he said those words. This place was near to Wu Lan Bu's place, there was no need to bring with them a thousand captured soldiers to war. And if they were to let these people off, they would most probably come back and attack Da Qi again, then it would not be worth it.

Then, Ji Wu Jiu got Wang You Cai to get two sets of clean clothes, while he brings Ye Zhen Zhen to the riverside.

To help Ye Zhen Zhen bath, was a very tough job.

Ji Wu Jiu swore, he did not think too much in the beginning. Ye Zhen Zhen was in a mess, her face swollen, as well as taking in some nonsense drug, although he might want it, but he still wouldn't dare to do anything at this time. He only wanted to bring her to the river, to take a cold bath, to clear some of the drugs away.

However, when he helped her undress, seeing her beautiful body, submerged in the clear river water, under the moonlight, he was able to look at every part of her body. Her skin was white and smooth, body full at where it needs to be, her mounds were in a beautiful shape and on the peak there were two pink dots.....

Ji Wu Jiu suddenly realized that he was too confident with himself. The image that he thought of everyday was placed in front of him now, he was shaking from the excitement, and that was before he even touched them.

“Ji Wu Jiu?” Ye Zhen Zhen questioned. Ji Wu Jiu said she got poisoned, and need to bath to release them, so she listened to him, but why when the moment they entered the river, both his eyes seemed stunned and he is appearing to be foolish?

“En” Ji Wu Jiu looked down, not daring to look at her. He was starting to have a reaction, but he was telling himself not to do anything, Zhen Zhen just only received shocked just now, so she would most probably hate any sort of touching now, therefore he should not add salt to the wound.....

Ye Zhen Zhen also felt that to be aided while bathing was a little embarrassing. So she said, “I have some strength back already, why don’t I bath myself”

Ji Wu Jiu felt that he received freedom, threw the towel at her and left. Ten feet away from her he started to bath himself.

After the both of them completed bathing and wore their clothes, they sat the bank and helped one another to dry their hairs. The moon was currently shining brightly. There was also a layer of mist surrounding the entire grassland.

With the help of the moonlight, Ji Wu Jiu was able to see that the swell on Ye Zhen Zhen’s cheek has reduced a lot, but still both her cheeks were red, most probably the drug’s effect is very strong, so it has not been fully dispersed. But, the him now is very controlled, and was genuinely helping her dry her hair. Ji Wu Jiu saw from her gaze a hint of longingness, his just calmed heart was brought up again, making it beat very fast. He no longer dares to look at her, and continues to help her dry her hair.

When their hairs are half dry, Ye Zhen Zhen shows her intention to fall asleep, Ji Wu Jiu helped her tie up her hair with a jade white ribbon.

After that, Ye Zhen Zhen took the initiative to climb into Ji Wu Jiu's arms, and hugged him. So the both of them were entangled together while looking at the moon. Not too long later, Ji Wu Jiu felt that the person in his arms were shivering lightly, so he asks "Zhen Zhen are you feeling cold?"

"no" Zhen Zhen's voice was carrying a hint of crying tone, "I am still hot..." that type of hot, was streaming in within her blood, although she has taken a cold bath, it was still not dimmed.

"Zhen Zhen, be calm, hold it down, it would be fine soon"

The thing that Ye Zhen Zhen did not manage to learn since young is to be "Patient". Holding on to Ji Wu Jiu's sleeves, she pushed her head further towards him "I am not comfortable". The type of feeling was like something itching in within her bones, like she has to do something specific will only the heat die down.

Ji Wu Jiu did not know what to do, if to say he doesn't want it, then that would be lying. But he don't know if Ye Zhen Zhen is ready for it or not, if he did anything wrong again.....

"Then what do you want to do?" Ji Wu Jiu can only pass the decision for her to make

"I don't know" Ye Zhen Zhen has only experience two times of consummation, and both of the experiences was not counted as good. So the current her has no way of relating her current feeling with those feelings. She only know that she is feeling frustrated now, and there is something that she needs to do in order to calm her feelings down. She does not know exactly what she wants to do, her rationality could no longer be able to provide her with an answer, so she can only follow what her heart really wishes for.... What does she want to do?"

Ye Zhen Zhen was grabbing on to his collar, seeing his collar bone being exposed a little, without thinking she kissed them. Kissing them did not suffice, so she took her tongue out to lightly trace the shape.

Ji Wu Jiu who was originally already in a "not calmed" state, and now to be teased like that. Holding on to Ye Zhen Zhen's shoulder, originally to push her away, but somehow his hands ended at the back of her head, lightly pressing it, he sighed satisfyingly, "Zhen Zhen..."

Receiving motivation, Ye Zhen Zhen looked up, like a little bird waiting to be fed, she straightened up her body a little. Seeing the moving throat in front of her, she moved forwards to kiss it, and slowly suck on it, and also using her tongue to push on it. It seems like that thing really has a flavor, not in the 5 main tastes, but it made a person like it very much still.

Ji Wu Jiu felt the actions be Ye Zhen Zhen made him lost his soul. One hand holding on to her slim waist, another carefully guiding her head, to help her maintain her position. He looked up, and allow her to continue kissing a person's most sensitive place (to being killed). Slowly he closes his eyes.

"Zhen Zhen..." Ji Wu Jiu's voice was slowly becoming coarse. His neck was soft and itchy, and the feeling was being transferred throughout his body, he can longer control himself, turn them around and pushed Ye Zhen Zhen on the ground, and started to kiss her passionately.

Ye Zhen Zhen somehow felt that with every kiss, the feeling of discomfort from her body got weaker, so she was complying very well, and even took the initiative to hook on to his shoulders, opening her mouth to welcome him.

..... !

Ji Wu Jiu was kissing her, while taking off both their clothings, and placing them nicely for Ye Zhen Zhen to lie on.

Ye Zhen Zhen lie down, and the cold win, made her goosebumps, but the cold did not manage to dim the heat within her, but instead under the gaze of Ji Wu Jiu, she seems to be turning even hotter.

At this point, Ye Zhen Zhen already knew what is going to happen next, although she is still a little unwilling in her heart, but she is way more open then before, furthermore her unwillingness is currently being pushed away by the heat in her body now.

Ji Wu Jiu, on top of Ye Zhen Zhen is not kissing all over her face. Although his little brother is currently starting to be in pain, but he wanted Ye Zhen Zhen to be comfortable and accepts him willingly, so he cannot rush.

Ye Zhen Zhen no longer realized what sound she was making, but only knew the blood in her body was getting so hot that it was going to burst through the

veins soon, and was heading towards her skin from within. And the place that was heating up was the places that Ji Wu Jiu touched or kissed before.

This type of feeling was new and miraculous, but it seems to be what she wanted as well.

“Zhen Zhen, I want to enter soon, can I ?” Ji Wu Jiu asked while lowering his voice.

“En” Ye Zhen Zhen closes her eyes tightly, and answered subconsciously.

Ji Wu Jiu entered, and got a shout from Ye Zhen Zhen in exchange, and next came a stream of tears. She was clenching down her teeth, eyes tightly closed, eyelashes twitching, like a butterfly fluttering it’s wings in the wind, as though as she was trying her best to hold something down.

Ji Wu Jiu was scared by her expression.

“So comfortable” Ye Zhen Zhen opened her mouth and said, although she was carrying a hint of crying tone, but it was also very sweet, almost like she was a cat asking to be pampered.

“.....” His heart that was clenched up was released.

“Continue” She urged

Ji Wu Jiu kissed her tears away, and smiled “Yes, your majesty”

Beside the water, there are 2 white fishes enjoying for a long time without stopping. Even the moon can’t watch on any longer, and hide himself behind a cloud.

1

Uhm.... disclaimer worthy, short sweeeeet part. Back to work for me

Early in the morning, Wang You Cai took the initiative to enter the tent, because it has pass the normal time that Ji Wu Jiu will call for him, wanting to help him wake up. The moment he entered, he saw Ye Zhen Zhen and Ji Wu Jiu hugging one another in deep sleep. The both of them were wrapped up in a layer of think blanket, tightly, and only exposed their faces and long black hair.

In Wang You Cai's heart, he thought of how the empress suffered for so many days at the enemy's camp, so it was right for her to get some good sleep. As for the emperor, who has been up for so many hours searching for the empress, he should also be allowed to sleep longer too. He then took another look at the both of them, although wrapped up nicely, but from the contour the empress should be hidden under the emperor's arms. Both of them appeared to be sleeping very peacefully.

So, Wang You Cai did not wake the both of them up, turned around and walked out of the tent.

The moment the tent was closed, Ji Wu Jiu, slowly opened his eyes. Actually when Wang You Cai entered, he has already woken up, but he doesn't feel like talking, afraid of waking Ye Zhen Zhen up. Looking down at the person in his arms now, he felt like his heart was going to burst from the fullness. He thought that this crisis really helped gave him an opportunity to be closer with her. It was just that for Ye Zhen Zhen to be so active yesterday was due to the drug, who knows, what her reaction would be towards making love when she wakes up later.

Ji Wu Jiu can't help but be nervous about that. As an emperor, everything and decision was held in his hands, but who knew in front of Ye Zhen Zhen, he was the one that has to await for her decision.

Under the blanket, Ye Zhen Zhen's smooth and slim back was firmly stuck to Ji Wu Jiu's chest, both her legs was also entangled with his, as though as they are of one body. This thought has made Ji Wu Jiu heated up. He moved his hand that

was on her body, and somehow it ended up on her waist, lightly caressing them. Yesterday night, this waist who appeared to be so fragile, was moving around like an active snake, accepting all his attacks, he nearly went to heaven from the feelings.

While reminiscing, Ji Wu Jiu felt that his blood started to heat up again.

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly turned her body around, facing Ji Wu Jiu now. There was no place for her to place her hands, so it somehow ended on his waist, hooking on to it. Warm breath being released directly on his neck, the fullness of her chest pressing against his chest.

Ji Wu Jiu found that it was hard to even breath.

Ye Zhen Zhen was awoken. When she opened her eyes, she heard some noises, and only realized later that the noises were coming out from her own mouth. She is fully awake now, and felt that there was some tingling feeling coming from her chest, and looking down, she saw Ji Wu Jiu's head working very hard in front of her chest. His hands were also moving around her body.

Ye Zhen Zhen frowned and pushed him away.

After Ji Wu Jiu was pushed away, he thickened his face and moved towards her again. This time his hands and legs were much more calmer, and was only holding on to her, and beside her ears, he smiled "Zhen Zhen, do you want to throw me away after using me?" In his smile, there was also a hint of being rejected, as well as a hint of worry.

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly remembered the things they did yesterday night. The both of them lasted quite a while at the river bank, then they took a refreshing bath again at the river, Ji Wu Jiu carried her back to the tent, which another round happened. All in all, what happened in the beginning she still has some recollection, after a while, her memory starts to be in a mess, but the happiness and feelings that she felt, was remembered clearly by her.

Although her skin is thick, Ye Zhen Zhen blushed when she recalled those, so she decided to hide her face.

Ji Wu Jiu asks in the end of after teasing her "Zhen Zhen, your sickness should be cured?"

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded lightly. Originally she thought that she will dislike that type of thing, but yesterday when she did it with Ji Wu Jiu, although still unwilling, but she did not hate it, and thinking it thoroughly, she was more towards being shy and not disgusted. If so, her sickness should be gone right?

Who knew when it was cured, Ye Zhen Zhen pondered, perhaps it has something to do with Ji Wu Jiu bathing himself in front of her everyday.

Ji Wu Jiu could not help but be happy when he saw her nodding, pulled her towards him and started to kiss her passionately, while kissing he requested for another round. Ye Zhen Zhen on the other hand started to push him away

“Zhen Zhen....”

“I am very tired” Yesterday she drank, as well as got drugged, and also the active sessions, made her body very tired, making her body soft like cotton, it was hard to even turn her body around, so don’t even mention another round.

“Then, you just lay still don’t move” Ji Wu Jiu was very easy to be negotiated with

“....” What type of idea is this!

Anyway, in the end Ji Wu Jiu personally checked that Ye Zhen Zhen is no longer troubled by the sickness, then only did he stop. He cleansed the both of them up, and was helping her dress up carefully. Because they were in a hurry to rescue her, so they did not bring along her clothes. Now, Ye Zhen Zhen was wearing his inner clothes, a small body being wrapped up in a loose inner cloths, the body that just made love looked like a plum blossom flower drenched in dew, Ji Wu Jiu was in a daze looking at her.

Ye Zhen Zhen though suddenly thought of another thing, “Oh No!”

“What happened?” Ji Wu Jiu asked

2

“Li You!”

Upon hearing that name Ji Wu Jiu’s face turned black. This woman, who was just only intimate with him, dared to speak of another man’s name right after, was she not afraid of him getting jealous?!

Ye Zhen Zhen did not really bother about Ji Wu Jiu’s mood, she stood up and wanted to run out the tent, “Hurry, Li You was at the Nu Zhen’s camp as well, nothing will happen to him right!” Yesterday all the enemy army was killed on the spot.

“First, wear your shoes!” Ji Wu Jiu pulled her back, while grabbing on to a pair of shoes and helping her wear them, while calling out for “Wang You Cai!”

Wang You Cai went in, and saw the scene in the tent, his jaw nearly fell to the ground. What did he saw? For someone who allows others to wear shoes for him, the emperor is currently helping the empress wear them!

“Tell Lu Li, to look from someone called Li You amongst the people we captured yesterday” Ji Wu Jiu ordered.

“Yes” Wang You Cai trying to maintain his expression and left.

Ye Zhen Zhen shouted towards his disappearing figure “He is not wearing any armour, wearing normal robes”

Ji Wu Jiu finished wearing her shoes for her, and guided her out the tent, while asking “Why are you so worried over that Li You?”

“He saved me” Ye Zhen Zhen said, while explaining what happened the past few days to Ji Wu Jiu.

Understanding that Ye Zhen Zhen only wanted to repay Li You for saving her life, Ji Wu Jiu felt better, but also thought of why would this Li You treat Ye Zhen Zhen so well, there must be something he wants.

Li You was quickly brought over by Lu Li. Yesterday, they have already found him, and he claimed that he was also captured, so they did not kill him, and was

just placed under guard, while waiting for Ji Wu Jiu's decision.

Although Ji Wu Jiu does not really have positive feelings towards Li You, but seeing that he has saved Ye Zhen Zhen before, he showed that he was thankful. So, Ji Wu Jiu said some courteous words and promised to bring Li You back to the central plains. After thanking Ji Wu Jiu, Li You thanks Ye Zhen Zhen, and their gaze was rather intimate, after seeing that, Ji Wu Jiu pulled Ye Zhen Zhen and left.

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly asks, "Are we going back?"

"En" Ji Wu Jiu answered

"I think that we don't have to return first, and use this opportunity well"

"How so?" Ji Wu Jiu slows down his pace and asked her.

"I heard from Duo Duo Wu La Tu and those people from Nu Zhen tribe, and was able to estimate the location of where the Nu Zhen tribe's royal court location" Ye Zhen Zhen answered.

Ji Wu Jiu's eyes immediately brighten up "Is it accurate?"

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded

After A Er Ha Tu united the Nu Zhen tribe, he build Du City. Not sure if he was afraid of others looking for vengeance or some other reason, but that fella built 2 Du City at the same time, one fake and one real. The royalty and nobles are located at the real Du City, but only the high ranking or personally appointed by A Er Ha Tu knows where the real Du City is. Somehow his method was really good, a lot of Nu Zhen tribe's people also do not know where the real Du City is, not to mention Da Qi.

Furthermore, Da Qi was not interested at where the city was in the first place. Nobody wanted to attack their capital, even Ji Wu Jiu initially only wanted to make A Er Ha Tu retreat only.

But now....

Ye Zhen Zhen opened up a map, and draw a circle on the place that they are staying now, and drew somethings on the east side, found a spot, and marked it "it's over here"

Ji Wu Jiu and Lu Li looked at the spot, facing towards the mountains and guarded by the river at the back, it was easy to guard and hard to be attacked, it really looked like where Du City will be located.

Ye Zhen Zhen drew a line to connect to places together, the line indicated that if they wanted to attack, all they had to do was just keep heading towards the east.

Ji Wu Jiu and Lu Li looked at each other, and both detected a hint of worry from one another.

First, was Zhen Zhen's information accurate? To attack the main place straight is very complicated, it cannot be compared to the normal battles, if they lost, it was hard to runaway, and if they travel so far to find nothing, and if they were attacked later, then it would be pointless.

Besides that, this time around, their main purpose was to save Ye Zhen Zhen, so they did not bring a lot of grains and food, it was only enough to stand for another 30 days or so only. To look for the Du City now, if quick it would be around 20 days, if slow 30 plus days, and if they were to stop near Nu Zhen's territory it would be hard to gather food for a few days, this would make the situation very dangerous.

With these two question in hand, now to return to the main camp would be the most ideal plan.

However, if the information from Ye Zhen Zhen is accurate, if they missed out this opportunity won't it be a waste.

After much thought, Ji Wu Jiu thinks that this was not necessary a bad plan. Because A Er Ha Tu has decided to pull most of his army to the frontlines, so their defense should be weaker, and if Ye Lei Ting can coordinate properly with them, or if A Er Ha Tu was defeated, even if they did not manage to find Du City, they would still be able to leave unscathed.

Ji Wu Jiu told his idea to the other 2. Therefore this 3 youngsters who were oddly brave beyond words, gathered and made a decision that made all the old people back at the court shivered.

Hello ~!!! Sorry for dissapearing, was busy doing this and that, and i am afraid

updates will be less frequent for a while now. At least till the end of November~!

It is the end of the year, so it would be very busy at work.. well December would be better ~!! I will finish translating this story!!!

Chapter 61

Currently the location that they were at, the nearest Da Qi border would be Ji City. Ye Zhen Zhen was worried about Li You returning to Ji City alone, so Ji Wu Jiu sent 50 soldiers to send him back. Actually Ji Wu Jiu felt that Li You is very suspicious— previously his 4 guards that was sent to spy on Li You, actually lost their target sight on Li You, and he somehow appeared in the Nu Zhen army, if to say it was out of coincidence, it really was too hard to believe. Furthermore, currently wars are everywhere, merchants travelling around has been reducing day by day, why would the merchant friend pass by a war zone?

Ji Wu Jiu strongly believed that this Li You has some problem, therefore when Ye Zhen Zhen waved goodbye to Li You, he made a decision. To bring Li You along with them.

Ye Zhen Zhen did not understand why he did that, Li You knew that they were going to go kill some people, so he was very unwilling to follow as well, but no matter what, Ji Wu Jiu did not let him go.

Ye Zhen Zhen was abit angry, “What are you trying to do, our trip this time is still considered very dangerous, why are you implicating the innocent?”

Ji Wu Jiu answered, “What if he is a spy, after he returned he might go look for Nu Zhen tribe to inform them, what would happen then?”

“How can he be a spy?”

“If he wasn’t a spy, I will guarantee his safety, Zhen Zhen, believe me”

Hearing how firm his decisions were, it means that he really felt that there was something wrong with Li You, and not blind jealousy. Anyhow, the suspicious towards other’s trait of Ji Wu Jiu cannot be changed easily. But as the emperor, his words are of finality, saying that he will protect Li You, means he would be able to do it.

Therefore, Ye Zhen Zhen could only console Li You for a bit, saying that to allow him to follow to let him experience the victory as well, to go there to play for a while before returning home, making it sound like they really are going

there to visit as a tourist.

Li You can only laugh bitterly “Brother Zhen, you don’t have to say anymore, Brother Wu is suspicious of me right?”

Ye Zhen Zhen is not good with lying, and was not sure how she should explain.

Li You asks “Then, brother Zhen, what do you think? You also think that I am a spy?”

“How would I” Ye Zhen Zhen replied without thinking.

“Thank you” Li You looked at her seriously, “with your words, no matter how other people look at me it is not important anymore”

Ye Zhen Zhen started to feel uncomfortable from his gaze, rubbed the back of her head and said “I still haven’t thank you, for saving me that day”

Li You laughed “I was too anxious and even dragged you along with me, and still needed you to save me back, now you thanking me, really make me feel embarrassed”

Ye Zhen Zhen felt even more uncomfortable, “I didn’t mean that”

Just when Li You wanted to reply her, he saw Ji Wu Jiu walking towards them quickly, grabbed Ye Zhen Zhen’s back collar, and dragged her out. When he left, he also pass on a gaze of warning towards Li You.

Li You just rubbed his nose and smiled at him.

Ye Zhen Zhen pulled the hands on her collar, “What are you doing!”

Ji Wu Jiu grabbed a hold of her legs, and carried her up, like carrying a struggling rabbit. Seeing that there wasn’t anyone around, he bend down and stole a peck from her cheeks, and then let her go, “Let’s go, we go do some hunting”

Although the war is very important, but to keep the moral of the army high is much more important. Ji Wu Jiu has already brought this group of men non stop to save Zhen Zhen, so now that the mission is over, it wouldn’t hurt to let them rest for a bit.

Therefore, this army’s speed was not very fast, and since there was still time,

they also stopped for some sight seeing and sometimes to hunt. But the tranquil areas of these grasslands were soon affected by the war, with soldiers hunting everywhere, and releasing arrows as they like, lots of animals were easily gathered, and making the other animals fled the scene. While the slower ones are left behind to be hunted, such as the mountain goats.

Ji Wu Jiu was riding a horse, holding his bow, and released three arrows at the same time, like a meteor flying towards the goat herds, three arrows, hit 3 goats, one of them entered the neck and another 2 arrows got the front legs of the goats.

Ye Zhen Zhen could not help but to show her thumbs up to Ji Wu Jiu, She also released some arrows herself, but she got none. Not many people is as capable as him.

Receiving praise from Ye Zhen Zhen, made Ji Wu Jiu feel very proud, he brought his face over to her, awaiting for his award from her.

Under the gaze of many, how would she dare to do it. However, Ji Wu Jiu continued to remain his position not moving, his eyes soft, his lips curved up, looking like a pervert, but a pervert that will make all the ladies fall for him.

Helpless, Ye Zhen Zhen pecked him with the speed of light.

The rest of the people just chose to ignore these two men and their regular show off of love.

Because they managed to hunt the goats, they have managed to save a lot of dry food. The goat meat was very tasty and nutritious too. So, although this group of people were always moving about, but thanks to the meals there are very healthy

Each time they have goat as a meal, Ji Wu Jiu will choose the bone marrow of the goat for Ye Zhen Zhen. It was a substance that was extremely helpful in keeping a woman's beauty, and does not have any bad side effects even if you eat it too much. Ye Zhen Zhen was very well nourished by him, making her cheeks always full of colour, her skin smooth and silky, making her very tempting and suitable to be eaten at night. So every night, Ji Wu Jiu also has high expectations towards his grand meal. Ye Zhen Zhen was young, and thin skinned, although she is not very good at being romantic, but she was very

straightforward and honest, when she wants it, she will never deny it, when it felt nice, she would not suppress it either, and will subconsciously let out sounds of comfort. Ji Wu Jiu loved her honesty to bits, but also did not want her voice to be heard by other men, so whenever they reach their climax, he will kiss her mouth, in order to reduce the sounds.

With such a honest relationship, thrilling and closed loved sessions, in comparison with what Ji Wu Jiu was used to last time, it really made the past dark and boring. No wonder the relationship between a man and woman is always compared to the happiest thing in the mankind, he finally knew what is the reason behind it.

Because he always has good sleep at night, Ji Wu Jiu will steal Ye Zhen Zhen's lips every night, although Ye Zhen Zhen would regain her energy in the morning, but at night it would be fully used, and in the end her body will be soft and tired, allowing him to do as he like. The next day, when she wakes up she will feel her body ache, especially at the waist area, but Ji Wu Jiu will always be with her, making sure she is in his arms. Ye Zhen Zhen will just lay on his chest while admiring the grasslands and sceneries.

The rest of the people will continue to ignore the lovey dovey acts of this two men.

After they have moved for more than 10 days, the geographical landscape starts to change, no longer a flat grass surround lands, but to be able to see the thick forest in front, no longer the yellow roads, but the floor starts to turn black.

Ji Wu Jiu ordered for the troop to stop. On the way they will encounter Nu Zhen tribe's people, but what's funny was, these casual citizens of Nu Zhen although met a troop of stranger army, none of them went to report. Because of this, it meant that they are not under the direct control of A Er Ha Tu, A Er Ha Tu places more concern on his army, and ignored that his citizens are living in a dreaded state, so the citizens does not have good feelings towards their government, but... as well as not being able to find where their main court is...

En, for a tribal citizen, to suddenly be governed and changed their way of life, and to have a centralized government, and not willing to learn from the rest, so

to have this type of loophole, it is understandable.

Though, even if they were to report it, Ji Wu Jiu was not afraid. Nu Zhen's elite armies all left to fight at Liao Dong, and the remaining 20 thousand armies was also forced to surrender to Du Chang, what's left to defend was only the weak armies, what can they do?

Even if you want to defend Du City, it doesn't mean that you will be able to.

HIIIIIII!!!!~! hehehehe, I am not fully back yet.. but a short chapter to fill in the people that were missing the story so far

No major happenings here yet so far ~~

Next week, I will try to post another chapter... Sorry for the long wait peoples !



Chapter 62

A Er Ha Tu fled to Wu Lan Tribe, Ye Zhen Zhen thought that it wasn't the last of him, why not uproot him entirely, in fear that he might instill another war in the future. So she decided to personally lead her troops to catch him.

Ji Wu Jiu thought that it was not necessary, "A Er Ha Tu is no longer the unbeatable god of war, now he is like a homeless person, which tribe would be willing to accept him?" He said with conformity, while playing with Ye Zhen Zhen's hair. Black and shining hair, felt really comfortable in his hands.

His words made sense. Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly thought of another problem, "Emperor, I am afraid that there will be a spy in the capital"

"O?" Ji Wu Jiu's hand stop, and he looked down at her, "Did you find out about something?"

Ye Zhen Zhen answered "To be honest, that Duo Duo Wu La Tu, originally thought I was you, because of the silk shirt that I was wearing. The silk shirt was given to you by my grandfather, this type of information, there shouldn't be many people that knows about it"

Ji Wu Jiu was a little surprised, "This makes things interesting" Ye Xiu Ming has a very high position, and would not need to tell the whole world if he wants to give a treasure to the emperor, and it also involves the safety of the emperor, so the people that Ye Xiu Ming would notify would most probably be people that he trusts in only.

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly realized that would make her grandfather be the prime suspect, therefore she quickly added , "My grandfather is definitely innocent"

"Mr Ye's loyalty, I definitely know" Ji Wu Jiu closed his eyes, and then turned and look at Ye Zhen Zhen cautiously, "Its just that there is something I could not understand. I received news from the capital yesterday, saying that Duo Duo Wu La Tu has written a letter to the capital, saying that he kidnapped me, which conceded with what you said just now, but why did he changed his statement saying that he kidnapped the empress dowager, what happened then?"

“that.....” Ye Zhen Zhen looked down, showing her dark and black head to Ji Wu Jiu.

Ji Wu Jiu pulled her chin up, forcing her to look at him, “That day, right before Duo Duo Wu La Tu died ,he cried out Please spare my life, empress dowager, don’t tell me his eyesight was so bad that he thought you really were to the empress dowager?”

Ye Zhen Zhen turning her gaze away, “His.. eyesight really was bad. When I say I wasn’t, he didn’t believe me”. Since there is no proof now...

She really dared to act as the empress dowager, Ji Wu Jiu was speechless. This woman, she really dares to do anything. He shook his head, “you.....” after you-
ing for a while, seeing that she kept looking down not daring to look at him, looking very pitiful, so the scolding that he wanted to say was swallowed down, and can’t help but let out a breath, “Do you admit your wrongdoings?”

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded diligently.

Ji Wu Jiu pinched her cheeks, feeling her soft and firm skins, his heart itched. He purposely showed her an angry face, “Tell me, how should I punish you?”

Ye Zhen Zhen was hesitating, and made a tough decision, “Why not you let me address you as Father once, that way we will be even”

“.....” Ji Wu Jiu nearly coughed out blood, “Who wants to be your father, I am your husband!” Seeing that Ye Zhen Zhen wanted to open her mouth again, afraid that she will say anymore weird things, he instead, pulled her into his arms, captured her lips and kissed her passionately.

Ye Zhen Zhen was kissed till her breathing was not even, cheeks red, and watery eyed. Moving back a little, she looked up, while holding her chest, “Are you still angry?”

Seeing how she looks like now, Ji Wu Jiu can’t help but felt that the heat in his heart, is transferring to his body. He raises his hands, his thumb slowly caressing Ye Zhen Zhen’s moist lips, his action was super flirtatious. His gaze slowly darkens, and said “Angry, how can I not. I am going to be angered to death”

Ye Zhen Zhen thought that it was understandable, it really was a matter that would hurt the pride of a man, especially Ji Wu Jiu as an emperor, pride would be

at up most importance. She wants to dissipate his anger, with a swirl of her eyes, her gaze stopped at his crotch. Therefore, without hesitating her hands has landed on his little brother, lightly moving them, she said “Don’t be angry anymore”

“.....” To suddenly receive such an attack, Ji Wu Jiu took a deep breath. He couldn’t help but to close his eyes and to enjoy the feeling while thinking about, she really is my wife, even the way she makes me happy is so..... unique”

However.... It’s not bad, can be further expanded.

Although Ye Zhen Zhen managed to calm Ji Wu Jiu, but in the end she still received her punishment. The result of the punishment was, in the bright daylight, her legs was weak, she was naked wrapped in a blanket, and left without energy to even move.

Ji Wu Jiu once again was correct.

A Er Ha Tu was afraid Da Qi would send troops to hunt him down, so he has rushed to Wu Lan Tribe. The leader of Wu Lan Tribe, Bo Ri Tie Chi Na, accepted him well, and claimed that A Er Ha Tu is his brother, and ordered a feast that night. Although A Er Ha Tu wasn’t used to being claimed as brother with someone who once lost to him, but now he is in no condition to reject it.

That night, A Er Ha Tu was fed lots of wine by Bo Ri Tie Chi Na, and was sent back to the tent personally by him, and later his head was chopped off by a smiling Bo Ri Tie Chi Na.

This head, arrived infront of Ji Wu Jiu five days later. Bo Ri Tie Chi Na was a very thoughtful person, now it was close to summer, he was afraid the head would rot, so he make sure that there was ice under the head before it was sent over.

Ye Zhen Zhen could not help but sweat, when she thought of the reason why he would order for the ice in the first place.

Alliance is indeed not dependable, people would always bow to power, what Ye Zhen Zhen was curious about was, that this Bo Ri Tie Chi Na was really acting according to the situation too well... from the beginning he did not act according to the orders of A Er Ha Tu to attack Ji City.

“Do you still remember the time we met the spies in Ji City, most probably they went and told something to Bo Ri Tie Chi Na” Ji Wu Jiu said. Not only that, originally Bo Ri Tie Chi Na was forced to surrender to Nu Zhen Tribe, and to put his troops forward was also because that there would be benefits. Since he will no longer benefit anything, and instead might court death, then he would of course think for a better plan.

“I still think that there is something wrong” Ye Zhen Zhen frowned.

“What are you thinking off?”

“I felt that, although Nu Zhen had a strong power, but I do not think that they can influence the other tribes so well to attack Da Qi together. So if the by force they can’t persuade them, and if to say they used money also it does not make sense as they are a poor tribe as well, what can they use to tempt Da Da tribe and Tu Lu Fan? Furthermore, although Nu Zhen has a strong army, but Da Qi was not a vegetarian, how did A Er Ha Tu find the courage and to bet everything he has for this war?”

Ji Wu Jiu did not answer, instead held on to Ye Zhen Zhen’s hands and smiled “My Zhen Zhen is really smart”

“Tell me, what is happening?”

“there is only one explanation” He placed Zhen Zhen’s hands to his lips and pecked it lightly, slowly he answered “There is an internal spy”

Ye Zhen Zhen was shocked “Someone is planning to rebel?”

Ji Wu Jiu shook his head, “I don’t know, I hope I guess wrongly too”

“But if they want to rebel, why is there no action so far”?

“Most probably something unexpected occurred to their plan”

—————UPDATE—————

With A Er Ha Tu dead, the war is coming to an end, Da Da and Tu Lu Dan has long been defeated.

The rest of the it would be easily settled, therefore without rush, Ji Wu Jiu decided to bring all the captured enemy and departs back to the capital.

The day before returning to the capital, Ji Wu Jiu was standing at a high place, looking at the green and wide grassland on the northwest as well as the desert on the northeast, feeling the wind blowing through his clothes.

Suddenly he has a type charisma being unleashed.

What's under his foot was the lands of Da Qi. As the emperor of a nation, he has personally head to the battlefield and fought against the enemy not giving any chances. He has used his own hands, to protect his own country, protect his citizens. He used a drop of his own blood to pay tribute to the thousands of souls that helped fight for the country.

In his heart, Ji Wu Jiu thought that he will be able to face his ancestors when he leaves for the after world in the future.

"General Wu, this place's wind is strong, don't stand here too long, be careful of catching the cold". A voice suddenly broke the thoughts of Ji Wu Jiu.

Ji Wu Jiu turned around and saw a young lady, around 15 or 16, a pair of big eyes, she was wearing the Nu Zhen's tribe attire, a few places being scraped apart, but wearing a chain on her leg, making noises when she moves.

Ji Wu Jiu does not remember who this person was, but knew that she is one of the captured enemy.

The lady knew what the look on Ji Wu Jiu's face meant and answered "I am Princess Suo La of Nu Zhen tribe, General Wu.. you saved me before" She said while looking at the ground subconsciously, hands playing around with her cloths out of nervousness.

Ji Wu Jiu remembered something. When they entered Nu Zhen capital, the Da Qi's army managed to capture many enemies, that time, he saw a soldier harassing a young lady, so he stopped him, later on did he know that that lady was a princess, but he didn't really take notice of it that time. It seems like it really was here now.

Ji Wu Jiu does not really have much to say to her, so he simply answered "Your Han language is quite good"

Being complimented, Suo La turned red, "I.... have always like the Central Plain's culture since young"

What does that have to do with me.. Ji Wu Jiu thought in his heart.

What he didn't know was that Su Luo has other thoughts in her mind. Although she is still young, but she is rather smart. After the news of A Er Ha Tu losing the war was known by her, she knew that her fate would not be very good in the future, knowing what finally happen to her father, she confirms that her future will be bad. For a person to drop from a phoenix all the way to the bottom, can happen in such a short period of time. Now at this stage, also with a little beauty, most probably her fate would end up as a play thing for some men. Therefore, instead of ending like that, it would be best for her to look for a support instead. Although still living under others, but at least she could still like like human. After her observations during this period, she found this General Wu, handsome and talented, with a good temper, as well not a pervert, therefore most probably there would not be much ladies or concubines he would have at home. Such good conditions, made her intentions grew even further. With her intentions, no matter how she looked at General Wu, the more attractive he becomes, therefore she has always observed him around in the army camp.

Today, Suo La finally felt that the chance for her has arrive, as he was at this place alone. She knew she was pretty, previously when she was still a princess, there were many people waiting in line to court her, but those people all added up together is also not as handsome as General Wu. For the central plains men to have multiple wives were normal, in her heart, she felt that with her pretty face, and taking initiative to approach General Wu herself, he would most probably agree.

Therefore, Suo La managed to walk forward with courage.

"General Wu, is heroic throughout the lands, surely you must have alot of people by your side" Suo La said shyly while looking at Ji Wu Jiu.

There are quite a few, but there is only one truly by my side. But, what has this got to do with you? Ji Wu Jiu looked at her weirdly.

"Don't think too much General Wu, Suo La was just asking randomly. If you felt it was too straightforward, Suo La asks for forgiveness" She said while bowing to him a little.

“No worries, is there anything?”

Initially Suo La wanted to first build up some relationship with this person first, however he appears to be very cold, and does not like to talk, as a captured person herself, there was not much chances for her to meet him personally too. Furthermore, they will be reaching the capital soon, there isn't much time left... therefore without further ado, she rushed into the arms of Ji Wu Jiu and hugged him tightly.

Ji Wu Jiu did not expect her to do this, and was stunned.

While he was still stunned, Suo La said “General Wu, I have admired you for a long time, and has always been thinking about being with you. I know, as a captured enemy, I am in no position to ask for much, therefore I am willing to be your servant, only hoping to help you cover your blankets and warm your bed”

Ji Wu Jiu finally understood, that she was sending herself to him. Holding on to her shoulders, wanting to push her away, but who knew that this little lady has such strength, hugging him ever so tightly.

Ji Wu Jiu can only further increase his effort in pushing her, before he could succeed, he realised that Ye Zhen Zhen was standing not too far away, staring at the both of them.

“....” This situation, how to explain ah....

Though, Suo La did not realise that something was wrong, and was mentioning about her wishes, not forgetting to dig her head towards his chest.

Although there was some distance, but Ji Wu Jiu can see that Ye Zhen Zhen's face has turned black. Under this circumstances, Ji Wu Jiu had no choice but holding both his hands up, and shouted “Zhen Zhen, Save me!”

Suo La: “.....”

Ye Zhen Zhen : “.....”

UPDATED TO FULL CHAPTER ~ SORRY FOR THE DELAY

Chapter 63

Chapter warning: Above 18.... eheheheheheh... also includes of what Zhen Zhen is worried about..

With a thick face Ji Wu Jiu was maintaining an innocent look, until Ye Zhen Zhen who was walking towards him pushed away Suo La who was clinging on to Ji Wu Jiu.

Looking at Ye Zhen Zhen's face, Ji Wu Jiu although was showing a face full of worry, but in his heart he was snickering, look at my wife, she cares about me so much.

Suo La was also a bit innocent, and abit lost, she was discussing about the matters of a male and female with General Wu, ... you.. who are you!, a man being so rough towards a woman, not cool at all.

Ye Zhen Zhen frowned, while grabbing a sword that are normally carried by the soldier's in the army, and faced the tip of the sword towards Suo La's chest, expressionless she said "if you dare to get close to him again, I will take your life"

Indeed she is my wife, such a cute way of showing her jealousy. Ji Wu Jiu's gaze turned gentle while looking at the scene in front of him.

Suo La's face changed, but still trying to maintain a smile, she said "General Zhen, you must be joking, Suo La admires General Wu that is all, and there is no bad intention"

Ye Zhen Zhen laughed coldly, "there are many people that admires him, take a number"

The things that person said, are really painful to the ears, Suo La thought in her heart.

The things my wife said is getting more and more pleasing to my ears, Ji Wu Jiu thought in his heart.

This time round, Suo La didn't even force out a smile, and answered loudly, "Of course I know I am not worthy of General Wu, but whether or not I can get close to General Wu is decided by him," she said while purposely passing him a glance,

“General Wu is not yours, I don’t think he needs to listen to you” In another words, it was between me and General Wu, discussing about the matters of a male and female, what does it matter to you. Her words carry abit of fuel, if it were just two normal friends, then what she said was quite accurate.

Ye Zhen Zhen sharpened her gaze and just only wanted to think of how to reply her. Ji Wu Jiu heard what she said, and was abit unhappy. Without waiting for Ye Zhen Zhen to reply, he held on to her shoulders lightly and told Suo La, “What you said is not right” he looked down at Ye Zhen Zhen, and saw that her expression is turning cold, her gaze very scary, he subconsciously curved up his lips, looking straight at Ye Zhen Zhen “I do belong to him”

Suo La was stunned, two men.....hmm?

It wouldn’t be what she is thinking about right?

In the midst of Suo La showing all sorts of expression, shocked, surprised, disappointed,... held on to Ye Zhen Zhen’s hands turned and left.

Ye Zhen Zhen was quiet after that. Ji Wu Jiu felt that he is not very kind, somehow the more angry Ye Zhen Zhen was, the more happy he got.

Actually, the reason why Ye Zhen Zhen was not in a good mood, was not because of this matter. Tomorrow they are going to return to the capital, going back would also mean that Ji Wu Jiu would have a lot of other women, then she and him... Thinking about how Ji Wu Jiu will be intimate with the other women, made Ye Zhen Zhen feel very uncomfortable. If it was possible, she wanted them to never return.

But, that was impossible, he is the emperor, it was not possible for him to have only 1 woman. To be loyal to only one woman, can be done by any man in this world, but only something that cannot be done by Ji Wu Jiu.

What to do?

Ye Zhen Zhen don’t know what to do. To not allow Ji Wu Jiu to visit the other women, sounds unrealistic, but to let him climb up to her bed after he is intimate with other woman made her feel unacceptable as well.

If not, to return to the starting point. But the Ji Wu Jiu now is no longer hateful, to part from him, or to push him to other women, how would she be

willing.

The more she thinks about the more confused she gets. Coincidentally she saw Ji Wu Jiu and Suo La being all clingy, the scene was like fuel being thrown into a fire barrel, making her think about all her worries again.

When the both of them returned to the tent, Ye Zhen Zhen's expression was still not good, and actually got even darker. Ji Wu Jiu thought that she was still being jealous, so he pulled her along to the bed, smiled and said "little vinegar pot, are you still angry? Me and that Suo La really has no relationship what so ever"

You are not related to her, but women that you are related to are a plenty. Ye Zhen Zhen thought unhappily.

Ji Wu Jiu gently consoled her "I have already said, I belong to you"

Today you are mine, tomorrow who knows who you will belong to. Ye Zhen Zhen's heart was suddenly uncomfortable, this man, only today he will belong to her wholely, after today, who knows what will happen to the both of them.

Ji Wu Jiu lightly lifted up Ye Zhen Zhen's chin, smiling at her, "What ever you want me to do, I will follow, don't be angry anymore, okay?"

Ye Zhen Zhen held on to his collar, and pulled towards herself, following her pull, he fell on top of her, and left only inches in between them.

Ji Wu Jiu's expression was as though as the spring flowers just bloomed, he looked into the eyes of Zhen Zhen, and lightly breathed out "Zhen Zhen, what are you trying to do?"

Ye Zhen Zhen used her actions to answer him. She took the initiative to kiss him.

Feeling the moist lips on his, Ji Wu Jiu's heart felt like its going to melt. He was holding on to Ye Zhen Zhen's waist, to entice her to deepen the kiss. In the midst of the kiss, a sense of rush can be felt from her. As though as she was not satisfied with this type of kiss, she slowly knelt on the bed, holding on to his face, she kissed him again passionately.

Ji Wu Jiu looked up to receive the kiss from Ye Zhen Zhen. His Zhen Zhen

needed him. This thinking made Ji Wu Jiu's heart beat even faster, his blood heated up even more.

While kissing, Ye Zhen Zhen opened her lips, and went towards the side of his face. Learning from how he kisses her, she stopped at his earlobes, slowly sucking on to them. Ji Wu Jiu's was already panting, while his eyes was as black as could be, as well as showing signs of being intoxicated. So for the ears to be kissed, feels like this, as though as a feather was lightly teasing his ears, the numb and ticklish feelings goes straight to his cheeks, and then towards his chest. Unexplainable comfort, and unexplainable wants.

"Zhen Zhen..." Ji Wu Jiu held on to her head, to ask her to hurry.

Most probably Ye Zhen Zhen understood. She released his ears, her lips going downwards following his shoulders, and stopped in front of his throat, and she was sucking his adam's apple shortly.

Ji Wu Jiu's heart nearly jumped out from his throat. He was closing his eyes from the feeling, the feeling of comfort, yet also eager to proceed to the next step, he couldn't help but to keep chanting "Zhen Zhen.. Zhen Zhen..."

Ye Zhen Zhen lip's continued to move downwards, stopped at his collar bone this time. His collar bone has a very nice shape and was very well liked by Ye Zhen Zhen. So she was slowly nibbling his collar bone, not willing to let go.

Ji Wu Jiu was enjoying all this, while taking off their clothes, taking off his outer clothes. Ji Wu Jiu lean backwards, and laid on the bed, pulling Ye Zhen Zhen along on to his body, "Come here, Zhen Zhen"

Ye Zhen Zhen let go of his collar bone. Her hands slowly caressing his chest, occasionally teasing him, or to lightly pinch his red beans, enjoying herself as well.

Ji Wu Jiu was going crazy from her torment, "Zhen Zhen, why don't you kiss them, kiss them a bit..."

Chapter 64



Image Credit –

vincenteknight.com/page/14/

SURPRISE!!! HAPPY READING ~~~~ Since you guys wanted to see how life back at the palace would be like~~ hahahahaa ^^

Double update today, please read chapter 63 if you haven't ^^

The emperor going out to war personally and winning the war. Ye Xiu Ming lead the rest of the ministers to await for his arrival at the Yong Ding Gate. Ji Wu Jiu has already changed his outfit to the gold emperor robes, riding on a white horse free from any impurities, showing off a very cold and handsome expression, allowing the citizens to admire him. It was not convenient for Ye Zhen Zhen to show off her face, so she was just wearing a normal soldier outfit in between the troops behind Ji Wu Jiu.

This time, his popularity has increased tremendously thanks to winning the war, almost everyone from the capital also came to take a look, all the way from Yong Ding Gate to the Palace, it was filled with people, some even climbed up the roof. Initially Ye Xiu Ming was worried about Ji Wu Jiu's safety, and wanted to stop the citizens from gathering, but Fang Xiu Qing on the other hand thought that this was the citizen's way of showing their gratefulness, so it was not good to stop them. Ye Xiu Ming decided to follow him this time, and decided to have more people guard Ji Wu Jiu instead.

Anywhere Ji Wu Jiu pass by, the citizens all kneeled down and bowed without

being instructed.

With so many people around, it wasn't nice to rush back, so he slowed down abit, and returned to the palace slowly.

Once he returned to the palace, Ji Wu Jiu brought Ye Zhen Zhen along to greet the empress dowager, and then went to Yang Xin Hall, to greet his ministers.

The ministers took turns to say good words "The emperor is so brave and smart in leading the troops, really making us Da Qi proud", while he replies with "while I was not around, all of you did a great job in running the nation"

After saying all this useless words without changing their expression, they finally came to the real matters. There was many things awaiting Ji Wu Jiu to go through, but the ministers all did a good job in handling them so far.

But there was only 1 thing, that no one dares to mention, Ye Xiu Ming also didn't mention, but only kept glancing at Fang Xiu Qing.

It was about the stupid thing the empress dowager did, Ye Xiu Ming's identity is abit sensitive, so it was not right for him to mention it, others was also not suitable to accuse the emperor's mother in front of the emperor. Only Fang Xiu Qing, he is one of the leaders of the cabinet, wearing the same pants with the emperor is well known by everyone, what others find hard to say, or don't dare to say, to be given to him, would be less troublesome to say.

Actually, Fang Xiu Qing didn't really want to mention this matter to Ji Wu Jiu as well. Since the empress dowager has been treating his daughter well in the back palace, and if they want to bring the empress down, then they will need a lot of power to do so. That is why Fang Xiu Qing initially wanted to partner up with the empress dowager. But now, after such a thing happened, he found out that the empress dowager appears to be smart, but is actually another foolish person, for his daughter to follow her, most probably the empress dowager would just drag her down.

Therefore. Fang Xiu Qing decided to keep some distances with the empress dowager, so facing Ji Wu Jiu now, he no longer hesitates and said what he both should have and shouldn't have said.

After listening, Ji Wu Jiu didn't have much expression, and then allowed his

ministers to first return.

No expression equals to be the biggest expression, they are all clever people, in their heart they start to calculate who and what matters they should and should not meet.

This side, Ji Wu Jiu was unhappy, on the other hand Ye Zhen Zhen was even more unhappy. The moment she and Ji Wu Jiu left the palace, the empress dowager called Xian Concubine back, not only bringing her back, she also allowed her to take care of the back palace alone, and not only letting her take control of the back palace, she also allowed her to replace the empress in the Silk Ceremony.

The emperor prays to the god, and the empress prays to the silk, this was the rule that should not be changed. If there was no empress or if the empress was not healthy, then the Silk Ceremony can be cancelled, there was no such thing as using any concubine leading the noble ladies to hold the ceremony, has anyone heard of any Dukes praying to the gods on behalf of the emperor?

This empress dowager has really overdid it this time.

And then there is Xian Concubine, not sure if it was because she was together with the empress dowager for too long, that her brains started to rot too, this type of matter that will incur wrath also she dared to do. If this year the silk harvest is good, then it's fine, but if it is not good, then Xian Concubine will have to wait for what's to come, who knows how many people will push the matter on the fact that she did the ceremony instead. Furthermore, her father is a leader in the cabinet, and his reputation has always been good so far, but to have educated such a daughter, who knows what will do scholars have to say now.

Thinking till here, Ye Zhen Zhen is not angry anymore, and can only left with waiting for the good show later.

To be honest, although Ye Zhen Zhen is not as bright as Xian Concubine, or as stable as she is, however in terms of thinking about the mass, she is better than Xian Concubine.

That day, after Xian Concubine returned to her palace, she realized that her reputation has indeed dropped. The empress dowager asked her to substitute Ye Zhen Zhen to perform the Silk Ceremony, and all she thought off using this

opportunity to build her reputation and improved her influence in the noble ladies, so she agreed to the matter. After Fang Xiu Qing heard about it, he couldn't do much about it, but only send news into the palace quietly for Xian Concubine to stay away from the empress dowager.

Xian Concubine thought her father think too much, and decided to went through the silk ceremony happily. Only after a few days there are people who starts to say that Xian Concubine was not qualified to perform the ceremony. As for men, it was not appropriate to reprimand a woman, so they talked about her father instead. Facing tremendous stress, Fang Xiu Qing can only send news into the palace again for Xian concubine to keep her distance with the empress dowager.

After that, when the empress dowager did that type of thing, Xian Concubine also detected her drop in intelligence. Actually Xian Concubine was someone smart, in her heart, she knew although the empress dowager is a little foolish, but to use her against Ye Zhen Zhen, was still convenient. She just has to be extra careful, and not to allow others to catch her wrong doings, then it would be fine. Therefore, she did not listen to what her father said.

Back to Ji Wu Jiu, he stayed at Yang Xin Hall till dark, and went through the matters brought forward by his ministers, and seeing that all the matters have been properly done by the cabinet, his mood turned slightly better.

Feng You De came in to ask Ji Wu Jiu, if he wanted dinner, Ji Wu Jiu places the document in his hands down, "no need, let's go to Kun Ning Palace' he stood up, and stretched a little, thinking about it again, he said to Feng You De, "Forget that, we go visit Xian Concubine first"

Ji Wu Jiu already knew that Xian Concubine was brought back by the empress dowager, and also knew what she did, although he was not very pleased with her, he still wanted to give her another chance, not for anything, but for her father. To settle a concubine, Ji Wu Jiu don't need to waste time, but Fang Xiu Qing was a worthy minister. This person was talented, and has good reputation, smart and cautious, flexible as well, not like that Ye Xiu Ming. Although he does not agree with everything he said, but he was truly loyal.

This type of people would truly be beneficial towards the country. So towards,

Xian Concubine, Ji Wu Jiu didn't want to act too harsh, and turn his minister's heart cold.

Xian Concubine had a feeling Ji Wu Jiu would visit her today, as the proverbs say, a small break wins over a new marriage. For two persons to be separated for a few months, and he was facing Ye Zhen Zhen everyday, most probably he has started to grow bored.

Therefore, she has properly dressed herself up, and at night just when Yao Yue Palace started dinner, Ji Wu Jiu arrived, therefore they had a dinner together. In her heart, she thought the emperor really missed her, that is why he rushed to her place before dinner, so it made her happy, her face can't help but to feel proud.

Just that, before servicing him later, Xian Concubine must first do something.

"Beloved Concubine, what are you doing?" Ji Wu Jiu asked while looking at the kneeling Xian Concubine.

When Xian Concubine lifted her head, her eyes were red, and tears were threatening to fall from her eyes, "I have done something wrong, please punish me"

Ji Wu Jiu places his cup down and said "What have you done wrong?" Although he said so, but he still hasn't ask her to stand up.

Xian Concubine knew that her kneeling, was a right choice. On her face, a blush of red can be seen, she answered "When the empress was not in the palace, the empress dowager has requested me many times to conduct the silk ceremony, I was temporarily muddle headed and accepted. What I have done was really not the right conduct, I hope your majesty will punish me!"

In a few sentences she has managed to explain how the empress dowager asked her to do it, and she did not push away the responsibility as well. Ji Wu Jiu still remained calmed, but Xian Concubine could feel that his mood has turned slightly better, therefore she secretly let out a sigh.

Ji Wu Jiu remained quiet for a while, and seeing that Xian Concubine was tired from kneeling, her body kept moving around, he said "You stand up first"

"My mistakes are unforgivable, if you don't punish me, I will not stand up"

“How do you want me to punish you?” Ji Wu Jiu looked at her half smiling.

Xian Concubine blushed and look down, not saying anything.

Ji Wu Jiu moved forward and pulled her up.

Xian Concubine let him helped her up, and she slowly moved up. Most probably she has kneeled too long, her knees were abit soft, so she fell again, luckily she was caught by Ji Wu Jiu.

Xian Concubine was in his arms, she looked down, not daring to look at him.

Ji Wu Jiu frowned slightly. For a beauty to be in his arms, if to say that he was not slightly itched, then he would not be considered a man. But he suddenly thought of Ye Zhen Zhen, that vinegar pot, he found it funny, if he really did anything with Xian Concubine, god knows how much effort he will need to make in order to climb up her bed again. Although he likes to see Ye Zhen Zhen get jealous, but everything must have a bottom line, it should not be crossed over.

The moment he thought of Ye Zhen Zhen, Ji Wu Jiu’s gaze would turn gentle.

Xian Concubine looked up, because there was no action made by Ji Wu Jiu, and when she saw his gentle gaze, her mind turned hot, and initiated to kiss him.

As though as he got scared by her actions, Ji Wu Jiu suddenly let go, and stood up....

Xian Concubine “.....” He threw me back to the floor?

“The person whom you offended is the empress, if to punish, it should be by her. Tomorrow morning, go ask for your punishment from her” Ji Wu Jiu quickly left, after leaving those words, without looking at her reaction.

Xian Concubine was shocked, and embarrassed, as well as a little afraid. Ye Zhen Zhen that woman, is filled with weird ideas, to let her punish.....

After leaving Yao Yue Palace, Ji Wu Jiu headed towards Kun Ning Palace, and stopped the announcement outside, and shamelessly he stood outside her window listening to what’s happening inside.

Ye Zhen Zhen was playing with a talking Mynah. The mynah was brought in by

Su Feng, quite costly, but thinking that the empress will surely like it when she returns, she has kept it at Kun Ning Palace.

Ye Zhen Zhen “Say, really courageous”

Mynah: “Really pretty”

Ye Zhen Zhen : “The empress is really courageous”

Mynah: “The empress is really pretty”

Ye Zhen Zhen: “Stupid Bird”

Mynah: “You are the stupid one”

Ye Zhen Zhen : Hong Feng Huang, Fen Feng Huang, Hong Fen Feng Huang, Fen Hong Feng Huang” (Chinese tongue twister... translator too lazy to find out what it means.. lalalalala `~)

Mynah: “.....”

Ye Zhen Zhen: “Stupid bird”

Mynah: “.....”

Ji Wu Jiu who was outside, his head had three black lines, to teach a mynah to say tongue twisters, was really unfair, only she can think of such an idea.

As though as the mynah was angered, it decided to raise his neck and shouted “The emperor has arrive...”

Ye Zhen Zhen laughed “He wouldn’t come”

Her words made Ji Wu Jiu’s heart jumped, an unexplainable and weird feeling was bursting from his chest. He shouted back “Who said that I wouldn’t come?” While walking in to the room.

Chapter 65

Seeing him, Ye Zhen Zhen got stunned for a bit, then she bowed to him, “Your majesty, why are you here at Kun Ning Palace?”

“What are you saying, if I don’t come to Kun Ning Palace, where else can I go to?” Ji Wu Jiu answered

“Weren’t you at Yao Yue Palace?” Ye Zhen Zhen looks down.

Ji Wu Jiu walks towards her and held on to her waist, and another hand holding on to her chin, lifting them up, he raises his eyebrows and laughed “Jealous? Hmm?”

The palace maids immediately left when they saw the scene.

Ye Zhen Zhen pushed him away gently, sat back down on her chair and said “Your majesty, I want to speak with you with regards to one matter”

Ji Wu Jiu walked in front of her, caught her hand with both of his hands and said “Empress, please speak”

Ye Zhen Zhen pulled her hand back, “I know that you are the leader of the nation, and you should not lack the imperial harem, if you happen to have visited any other women, please remember to tell me”

“After telling you, what would you do?”

Ye Zhen Zhen looked into his eyes, “that time, we will separate our hands, you continue with your ladies, and can stop coming here to look for me”

Ji Wu Jiu pinched her face, “I only went to Xian Concubine’s place to sit for a while, how did it anger you so much”

“I am not angry, I am serious”

“I am also serious” Suddenly he bend down his waist, and holds on to her face, looking at her, “You should listen well, and be obedient, don’t make me angry, I will only be good to you, okay?”

Ye Zhen Zhen blinked “I don’t believe you”

Ji Wu Jiu teased her “Even if you don’t believe me, you need to believe him” he said while pointing towards his lower part of his body, “he only recognizes you now”

Ye Zhen Zhen really seriously looked at it, her face serious.

To be stared at so intensely by her, Ji Wu Jiu felt that her gaze was like a pair of hands, gently touching it, so his throat started to get dry.

“If only I could put a lock there, wouldn’t that be great” Ye Zhen Zhen sighed.

Ji Wu Jiu answered “It has been locked from a long time ago, only you will be able to open it” He said while carrying her up from the chair.

Ye Zhen Zhen thought about it, and decided, if anything happen only she will think about it again, no matter what happens tomorrow, she will first enjoy what she has now. Allowing herself to indulge in this decision, she was a bit carefree and couldn’t get enough that night. Therefore, on Ji Wu Jiu’s body, the old teeth marks, were covered by new teeth marks. Although for Ji Wu Jiu it was painful, but more than often it was comfort. Looking at the marks on his body, and how it was Zhen Zhen that purposely left them there, he has a very sweet and satisfied feeling.

All in all, his Zhen Zhen is getting more and more delicious, making it hard to control his wants anymore.

The next day, the concubines came to greet Ye Zhen Zhen, and she told them a bit about the happenings of the borders, with the main point focusing on the Nu Zhen Tribe’s hairstyle. When Xian Concubine heard about how they are all shaved bald, she could not help but hearing her heart beat increasing and getting louder.

In the afternoon, Xian Concubine let down her ego and went to Ye Zhen Zhen to ask for forgiveness. Actually on this case, it would not be easy for Ye Zhen Zhen to punish her. First of all, the case has happen many days ago, to suddenly dig up the old news now might not be appropriate, second, the person who made the decision was the empress dowager not Xian Concubine, if Ye Zhen Zhen punished Xian Concubine, it would be as though as disagreeing with the

empress dowager, and third Ye Zhen Zhen knew that she has made some mistake as well, and since the empress dowager did not say anything...

Therefore Ye Zhen Zhen acted like she was very big hearted, and only reprimanded her in words a little, and sent her away.

Xian Concubine thought that the reason why the empress let her off so easily was because the emperor only stayed for a while at Yao Yue palace, and went to Kun Ning Palace after, so the empress thought that she was not a threat, that is why she is so kind now.

Thinking along the route, Xian Concubine thought of the emperor. Why did the emperor leave in a rush yesterday? This question, she found out the answer yesterday night. The emperor couldn't wait after dinner and went to Yao Yue Palace to eat with her, showing that he actually misses her, for the both of them to be reunited after so long, and to have the slight skinship, which he hurried away after, it was very unusual. There is only one reason, the emperor is still not able in bed, and was afraid that other people might found out.

It was already a few months, the emperor is still ill, will it be cured in the future?

Xian Concubine thought that this was a very hard sickness to cure, and now the emperor still has no heir, and if he really cannot be cured, then in the future will the nation really fall to that Foolish Tan. So in order words, she needs to maintain a good relationship with the empress dowager still, in case if there are any changes in the monarchy. But the emperor is still young now, so maybe his sickness can be cured, also even if he cannot be cured, even if there is any change, it would still be a few decades later, there was no need to rush now, observe first would be better.

It's just that, if she wants to partner up with the empress dowager, why not use this matter to show my loyalty to her.

Therefore Xian Concubine did not return to Yao Yue palace, but instead went to Ci Ning Palace, and secretly discussed with the empress dowager. Originally the empress dowager did not really believe about Ji Wu Jiu's sickness, but now hearing what Xian Concubine said, she started to believe it, though her rationality still did not believe it fully. The emperor is growing up, and has been

leaving her grasp of control, so she wanted to control his son for a little, but now it seems like it was rather impossible, how can she bear with this.

So in the end the empress dowager decided to test it out, if it was real or not, if he really cannot.. then only think of other ideas.

After lunch, Ji Wu Jiu went out to take a walk, and ended at Kun Ning Palace somehow.

Ye Zhen Zhen was in a dilemma, on deciding on whether or not to braise the Mynah.

Ji Wu Jiu saw a her and the bird, staring at each other, the scene was very funny. But when he walked closer, and heard the conversation, he can no longer laugh.

Perhaps in order to proof that it was not a stupid bird, the mynah has properly learned what Ji Wu Jiu and Ye Zhen Zhen said on the bed, not only that he somehow can copy the voices of males and females, and not to mention it was actually very similar.....

Those words, at night when they were at the peak of their intimacy, it doesn't seem to matter when they spoke it, but listening it now, it really was..... even the Ji Wu Jiu could not help but blushed...

"So how?" Ye Zhen Zhen looked at him helplessly.

Ji Wu Jiu thought about it for a while, "Why don't we teach it something else, to make him forget about yesterday's?"

Although it was not really trustable, but it still seemed better than her own idea. Ye Zhen Zhen nods.

Therefore, the emperor and empress spend 4 hours teaching new words to the mynah, like two psychos, and in the end it seems like they manage to control the bird's talking and both of them was full of sweat on the forehead.

Ji Wu Jiu chatted with Ye Zhen Zhen for a bit more before leaving Kun Ning Palace, and proceeded to Ci Ning Palace to pay a visit to the empress dowager.

To be honest, what the empress dowager did previously really made his heart

turned cold. Not mentioning the fact that she wanted to change the emperor when he was captured by the enemy, but even as his mother, to get news about his son being caught, she did not ask about his safety nor the ransom, but first thing that came to mind was to find someone else to replace him, was she really his birth mother...

To be born in the royalty, if the relationship with their mother was not very strong, it was common, but to be so weak, to the point of not even caring about their relationship, was really rare.

When Ji Wu Jiu arrived at Ci Ning Palace, there was a new unseen palace maid that told him, that the empress dowager was at the temple praying, and can only come out later, and asked the emperor to wait for a while. Ji Wu Jiu was fine with it and waited for a while, suddenly he felt a little hazy, and his body started to heat up. He took a sniff, frowned and ask the palace maid “what fragrance is lit here?”

“Replying to your majesty, this is the normal fragrance that is lit her at Ci Ning Palace”

Ji Wu Jiu took another sniff, and found that there was something weird with this fragrance. After a while more, he found that his consciousness was getting weaker, and his body even warmer, and even some sort of reaction.

Then, the new palace maid from just now came again, and bowed towards Ji Wu Jiu saying, “Your majesty, is your body feeling unwell?”

On his face there was a weird hint of red that was not subsiding. He lifted his head up and glanced through the area, and indeed there was only the two of them left there. Imperial mother, ah... imperial mother, what are you trying to do!

The palace maid now got up and wanted to help Ji Wu Jiu, but who knew he will raise his leg and kick her chest. With a shout of pain the palace maid was on the ground.

“Get Lost!” Ji Wu Jiu’s eyes was showing extreme rage, his eyes starting to turn red as well.

The palace maid was stunned and too afraid to move, shivering on the floor.

Ji Wu Jiu stood up, without looking at her, he left Ci Ning Palace. Feng You De saw Ji Wu Jiu coming out, wobbly, with a pale face, he quickly went over to help him.

“Go to Kun Ning Palace” Ji Wu Jiu ordered.

Ye Zhen Zhen did not know why Ji Wu Jiu returned so quickly, and also didn't know why the moment he came back he requested to make love. In this broad daylight, it was rather embarrassing to do those stuff, but it seemed like Ji Wu Jiu's mood was very bad, he appeared to be angry, disappointed, and sad. Looking at his complicated feelings, Ye Zhen Zhen felt her heartache, she kissed his eyes, and patted his back.

“Zhen Zhen, Zhen Zhen....” Ji Wu Jiu called her again and again in a hurry.

“En.. I am here, I am here”..

Ye Zhen Zhen did not know what happened to Ji Wu Jiu just now, but it should not have been anything good. Hugging his shoulders, she took the initiative to kiss him gently, this gentle kiss made Ji Wu Jiu's heart filled with warmth, and also he felt much more secured. So what if all the women in the inner palace wants to use him, so what if his birth mother wants to use him, he still had Zhen Zhen, his wife would not harm him, she will be there for him, forever.

This two person was linked together, till they past dinner time. Ye Zhen Zhen was leaning on him, without energy left she said “Your majesty, you are too obsessed with sex, it is not good”

“en” Ji Wu Jiu answered, eyes half open, kissing her hair.

“So, next time if there is anything, we can talk about it.” Without saying anything and to mess around, it was rather weird.

“En” He was caressing her mounts.

Ye Zhen Zhen does not have any energy left to stop him, but only said “Are you feeling better now?”

“Better” As long as you are here, everything is good.

Ye Zhen Zhen felt better, “Let's have dinner now”

Ji Wu Jiu moved towards her ears, and whispered “First, let me eat one more

time, okay?”

Then, from the window a Yi Yi Ya Ya sound from be heard, and what followed was a very weird conversation, “ Zhen Zhen....en, please be gentle.... Zhen zhen, call my name... ji, ji, a, a.....”

Ye Zhen Zhen: “.....”

Ji Wu Jiu: “.....”

How did they manage to forget this blardy bird.....

Chapter 66

These few days, after the return of the winning soldiers, the borders were quiet, and the enemy who lost were also quiet. The citizens in the capital however are getting more and more engrossed with the topics with regards to the war. About how clever the emperor was, how cautious General Ye was, as well the recent hot news about Small General Lu. In the midst of these topics, somehow a rumour about the empress was involved, and was spread quickly and the rumour became more absurd along the way.

The rumour was not very good, it goes something like, the empress was once kidnapped by the enemy army, although she was saved later, but her body has been tarnished. Rumours, are very scary, they are able to ignite the creative imaginations of people, and the more information that were added, the more realistic it becomes. The more it got spread around, the more it seemed like they personally witness the scene where the empress was dirtied.

The lives of a normal citizen is not very happening, so this time around with a royalty rumour/gossip around, they made an issue out of the topic, by trying to snoop around for new informations and then retelling their own version of the story.

The people who talks about it, as well as the people who listens to them, has never really considered the feelings of the person involved or the consequences behind it. Furthermore they weren't talking about their own wives or daughters.

After the discussions between the citizens, the rumour about the empress being sullied got worst and worst. The rumour also very quickly got into the ears of the noble families, recently when Ye Xiu Ming attends or leaves the morning court, he was always receiving weird gazes.

There was some ministers that wanted to inform him, but it was not an easy thing to say as well. The empress is the granddaughter of Mr Ye, and Mr Ye is someone famous in the court. Furthermore, whether or not this rumour is true is

yet to be confirmed, even though it could be true, the exact details of how the empress was captured was unclear, and if to look at it from another point of view, although the empress may be sullied, but she is still the victim here, to talk about a victimized person, it doesn't seem very befitting to their post.

Not to mention, this type of thing, half is considered work related, another half private matters. If the emperor does not mind his wife being sullied before by another person, then they could only shut their mouths.

That is why, the emperor's reaction must first be observed.

It was just that, it seemed like the emperor had no reaction. So everyone thought that he was angry, but actually... he just wasn't aware of the rumour.

That's right, who would be daring enough to talk bad about the empress in front of the emperor, they still value their lives very much.

After a few days of fear, Ye Xiu Ming couldn't take it anymore. To have been in the court for so many years, he has never messed up in any bigger commotions, but this time it affected his beloved granddaughter's name and honor, if he did not handle it well, someone could die.

Therefore, on this day, Ye Xiu Ming requested to meet Ji Wu Jiu at Yang Xin Hall, after reporting a few court matters, he suddenly knelt down, and said "Your majesty, I failed at educating, allowing the empress to attract such rumours, and harmed the name of the royal family, I ask for punishment!"

Ji Wu Jiu was stunned. He personally helped Ye Xiu Ming up, and said "Sir, please tell me what is wrong... what happened to the empress?"

It looks like the emperor has not heard those rumours. Ye Xiu Ming calmed himself down and answered "Recently the citizens have been gossiping something about the empress, something very negative. Although rumours are not trustworthy, but this involves the honor of the empress. Besides going to the war, she was indeed kidnapped, however this was not something the normal citizens would know, therefore there should be someone that started this rumour on purpose, the person who did this is trying to ruin the royal family's name"

The way Ye Xiu Ming reported this was very good, not mentioning how it will harm Ye Zhen Zhen personally but to mention about how it will be bad against Ji Wu Jiu instead.

Ji Wu Jiu frowned “What does the rumour speak about?”

Ye Xiu Ming mumbled some out, although not very clear, but Ji Wu Jiu also understood very well. His expression turned very black “Sir, you don’t have to worry, this matter, i will definitely investigate it properly and to protect the reputation of the empress”

Ye Xiu Ming was relieved when hearing him say that, he still cares about their husband and wife relationship. He added on “Your majesty, I want to ask for a favour”

“Sir, please speak”

Ye Xiu Ming suddenly took a step back, and both knees were on the floor again, and when he looked up again, his face was full of tears.

Shocked, Ji Wu Jiu used both his hands to help him up, “Sir, please quickly stand up”

“Your majesty” Ye Xiu Ming did not stand up, “Zhen Zhen has always had a bad personality, because our whole family dotes on her, as she was the only female in the family. She has become someone uncontrollable, i am in the wrong. Your minister here now, although may not have contributed alot, but i still have worked for a long time, begs the emperor, if the empress really did any mistakes, please do not kill her” He said while bowing down.

Although he did not believe the rumours, but it was really true, he was afraid Ji Wu Jiu will not let Ye Zhen Zhen off.

To let this stubborn and stern Ye Xiu Ming to say this type of words, in this world, it could only have been for Ye Zhen Zhen this one person. Ji Wu Jiu sighed, and forcefully pulled up Ye Xiu Ming from the floor, “Sir, please do not worry too much, nothing will happen to Zhen Zhen, I will also not let anything happen to her”

After Ye Xiu Ming left, Ji Wu Jiu made Feng You De to gather all the rumours with regards to the empress, he wants to listen to the full version.

Feng You De was a smart person, he was afraid that the underlings might say something that could anger the emperor so he chose a few that can properly depict the story without anything too over, before they were sent to Ji Wu Jiu.

Even these controlled rumours has successful made Ji Wu Jiu burst with anger.

Who exactly is this imbecile that has lived too long, and dared to say this type of things!

For a woman, their reputation are the most important, Zhen Zhen was also the empress, this type of damaging hat, if worn on to her, not even mentioning her position as the empress, even the entire Ye Family will be looked down upon. That time, it would be impossible for Zhen Zhen to even live in this nation. Such vicious plan!

If it was a spirited female, towards this type of things, most probably they will choose to end their lives to protect their reputation. Ji Wu Jiu's heart dropped, he immediately ordered Feng You De, to make sure everyone's mouth is tight, if anyone dared to inform this news to the empress.... Death by splitting into 5 parts...

Feng You De was shocked by those words. Even death by splitting into 5 parts has come out, it seems like the emperor is really mad.

But, Ji Wu Jiu's ordered was still too late. Because Ye Xiu Ming has already earlier on sent news to Ye Zhen Zhen, to tell her about her being accused, and to ask her to properly explain to the emperor, also no matter what happens, she should not think too much and living is the most important.

Actually both Ye Xiu Ming and Ji Wu Jiu thought too much. Ye Zhen Zhen was most afraid to die, why would she consider killing herself, she will only make other people feel like killing themselves.

Ji Wu Jiu went to Kun Ning Palace to look for Ye Zhen Zhen, although he was not feeling good, but he was afraid Ye Zhen Zhen will find out, so he pretended to be fine.

Ye Zhen Zhen's one sentence managed to break his pretense, "You also heard about those rumours already right?"

Ji Wu Jiu can no longer continue acting, his face turning green from anger, "Zhen Zhen, who told you those! Let me know!" I definitely want to split that person into 5 parts!

Ye Zhen Zhen did not answer but instead asked "Are you doubting me?"

"How is that possible!" Ji Wu Jiu answered

The most anxious he got, the more suspicious Ye Zhen Zhen thought he was, so she added “You seem so angry, it seems like it came from you not believing me”

Ji Wu Jiu quickly grabbed her into his arms, “How will i not believe you.. i.. i..”

“Tell me honestly, have you not thought of this problem before? I really did get capture, what if...”

Ji Wu Jiu closes his eyes, sighed and said “How can i not thought about it before, when you were just captured, i thought about it everyday, and everytime i thought about it, i feel the pain of being stabbed right in the heart. Its just that i know, according to your personality, if you were really sullied, you would feel 100 no 1000 times worst then me. So that time I told myself, no matter what happened, i must treat you well, and not let you suffer. Luckily the heaven was kind, i arrived in time. That is why, the thing that you are worried about, i have already thought it over many times. Zhen Zhen, i believe you, that is why you should also believe me, ok?”

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded in his arms, “Naturally i believe in you”

Ji Wu Jiu let out breath of relieve, and calmed down. He pulled Ye Zhen Zhen to sit, and said “This time, it was obvious the rumours are directed towards you personally, that person wants to destroy your reputation. I will definitely investigate properly and return you your innocence. Before that, you have to be calm and not let it get to you”

“ I am more than fine” Ye Zhen Zhen answered, “But i am just curious, who on earth let out this rumour”

From the part where the empress left the palace, the emperor going to war personally, Duo Duo’s letters, some people would most probably be able to match up that the empress was once captured, so the people that knows about it should not be little, but should be in within the nobles.

Furthermore this type of thing involves the various party’s benefits, before the matter was confirmed, it should not be simply spreaded. Although there were many people who knew about it, but those that can obtain something from it is not many. The two most suspicious family would be Xu Family and Fang Family. The first has always has hatred towards the Ye Family,

and the latter has a heart to replace the position.

Although the suspects has been selected, but it was still troublesome. Because of the the families is very large, it was not possible to catch all of them and to chop of their heads, the best was just to capture the person who spread the news out. But rumours is something that does not need any fact or proof, and can be floated around easily. Wanting to confirm the exact person would not be an easy job.

“No matter how hard it would be, I will not let this matter off!” Ji Wu Jiu’s gaze was dark, “This time, besides capturing the main culprit, there is something that is urgent now.... we must stop the rumour from being spreaded some more” The rumour is still currently talked about in the capital only, if it is not stopped, then in a few days perhaps the entire nation would know.

Ye Zhen Zhen asks, “How do you plan to stop the rumours from spreading?”

To control rumours was a really troublesome matter, but this time around Ji Wu Jiu decided to be ruthless, “Worst come to worst, I will just kill off a few people, to scare the rest. Then they will realise a few words is not worth their lives”

“Not good’ Ye Zhen Zhen shook her head, “it might make matters worst”
“O?, You have an idea?”

“Indeed i have a plan. Your majesty you are in charge of looking for the person behind the rumours, the rest leave it to me”

Ji Wu Jiu saw that she seems to be very confident, the anger in him also subsided alot. He asks “Zhen Zhen, what plan do you have? Teach me”

Ye Zhen Zhen laughed “People from the mountain would know the answer”
(山人自有妙计)

X’mas is coming~~ is everyone prepared?? hehehehe

Chapter 67

Ye Zhen Zhen was someone that loves to read, but she was no scholar. Because all the books that she read was those pictorial books that were popular in the capital, such as ‘Dong Zuo Lie Guo Zhi’, ‘Feng Shen Yan Yi’, “Journey to the west’ that sort of books. the book genre that she likes are very similar to what the common citizens would like to read.

There was a book that recorded the picture books that has been found so far, Ye Zhen Zhen searched for it, and after going through the book, she found out that there in within the different genres, stories about gods and demons, history and romance were the most published. In within the history stories, there were many about how they fought the barbarians and heroes that comes emerged.

That night, Ye Zhen Zhen’s inspiration got a boost, and within a night she completed a picture novel. Ji Wu Jiu accompanied her the whole night, sitting by her side, every page she wrote, he will read it, and organize her work properly, holding a thick stack in his hands.

The story from Ji Wu Jiu’s point of view was not very attractive, goddess visiting the earth, and then somehow war is involved, and what not. However, since Ye Zhen Zhen was writting it diligently, Ji Wu Jiu does not have the heart to hurt her, and in the end he stopped reading the novel, and focused on looking at her face— which was way more attractive then the novel.

The serious Ye Zhen Zhen, has a very focused gaze, her black eye brows was tensed, sometimes appearing to be deep in thoughts, and sometimes realizing somethings. And because she did not sleep the whole night, her eye bags are starting to show, and bloodshots are starting to form as well, this made Ji Wu Jiu felt heartache.

As time passes by, the stack of paper got even thicker. Feng You De came in, and told Ji Wu Jiu “Your Majesty, it is time to attend court”

Ji Wu Jiu stood up, stretched and allowed the maid servants to help him change. Gently he patted Ye Zhen Zhen’s head and said “Zhen Zhen, I will leave first, after court i will come see you again”

Ye Zhen Zhen was too focused with her writing, so she did not paid attention to what he said.

Feng You De looked from the side, thinking that the empress was really a bit too brave, to have this sort of attitude towards the emperor, in the entire inner palace, there would be no one who would dare to do so.

Seeing her reaction, Ji Wu Jiu also did not find anything bad about it, he bend down and peck her cheeks, and left.

Ye Zhen Zhen only found out Ji Wu Jiu left, when she finally finished the story. When Su Feng saw that she finally placed her pen down, did she carry in some snacks, "Niang niang, you must be tired? Why don't you first refresh yourself and eat some snacks. While I ask someone to set up breakfast"

"No need" Ye Zhen Zhen yawned, and shook her head, "I want to sleep"

You finally remembered about sleep, Su Feng thought in her heart, while helping Ye Zhen Zhen to lay down on the bed, and left the room quietly.

It seems like the little Mynah also has a little compassion, it has not spoken a word ever since it woke up, and quietly stood at his own place trying to lower his existence, until Su Feng forget to take him out.

Ye Zhen Zhen slept till afternoon. Ji Wu Jiu dropped by earlier, but seeing that she was sound asleep, he didnt wake her up, turned and went back to Yang Xin Hall.

The moment Ye Zhen Zhen woke up, she felt very hungry, and was looking for food. It was coincident that this morning when Zhuang Concubine heard that the morning greetings towards the empress was cancelled, and thought that the empress was feeling unwell, so she visited in the afternoon along with some snacks and pastries that she prepared.

With regards to making pastries, if Zhuang Concubine admits to being number 2, no one dares to be number 1. Now it was early summer, the whole inner palace was filled with flower, and this provided her with many ingredients. Ever since she knew that Ye Zhen Zhen likes to eat her pastries, Zhuang Concubine has been doing her best to treat her well, even better than the emperor. She knew that the emperor was someone that was hard to boot lick, but the empress was different. The fate of the women in the inner palace halfly lies in the hands of the empress, furthermore Ye Zhen Zhen has always treated everyone kindly, so she can be considered a rather generous empress, therefore, as long as you treat her well, you would definitely not be disadvantaged.

After eating a few pieces of the pastries, Ye Zhen Zhen's mood was very good.

Then, knowing that Ye Zhen Zhen has woken up, Ji Wu Jiu went to visit her, after sitting down, seeing how appetizing she was eating the pastries, it made him kinda hungry as well, so he ate a few pieces as well.

Looking at Ye Zhen Zhen's lips, there was crumbs around them, not at all how the mother of the nation should appear. Ji Wu Jiu could not help but to joke "Zhuang Concubine's pastries were made for me, not it seems like it had all entered your stomach"

Hearing what he said Zhuang Concubine quickly said "Your majesty if you like to eat them, I will make more and send them to you"

"There is no need" Ji Wu Jiu answered "Eating them at Kun Ning Palace is the same, there is no need to create extra trouble"

Doesn't his words imply that the relationship between the emperor and empress was so good that they are of one? Zhuang Concubine thought that she has made a very good decision.

After eating enough of the pastries, she took a handkerchief to clean her mouth, drank a mouthful of tea, cleared her throat and said "Alright, it is time to listen to a story"

Zhuang Concubine was confused, and can only look at Ye Zhen Zhen calling over a few maid servants and eunuchs and proceeded to the main hall.

In the middle of the hall there was a platform, Ye Zhen Zhen sat on top of it and pointed towards the front of her, a row of stools, "If anyone is going to watch, please have a sit"

Seeing that the eunuchs and maid servants all grabbed a stool Zhuang Concubine also found a stool for herself and sat down with her personal maid.

Ji Wu Jiu, also sat on the stool.

Zhuang Concubine immediately stood up, "Your majesty—". She has never seen this way of seating arrangements, the empress sitting on top and the emperor sitting below, together with a group of maid servants and eunuchs.

"Don't worry, this has been discussed by me and the empress, sit down ~"

Hearing his words, Zhuang Concubine sat back down slowly.

And thus Ye Zhen Zhen started her story telling, "Today the story that i will be telling, is based on what really happened recently. It was like this..." (Attracting the attention of everyone there, looking forward to her story)

The entire afternoon, Ji Wu Jiu lead Zhuang Concubine, Feng You De, Wang You

Cai, Su Yue, Su Feng, Zhuang Concubine's maid servants as well as a mynah, to seriously listen to Zhen Zhen's entire story telling. The 7 of them plus a bird was really immersed with the story, as though as there themselves were in the story, but only Ji Wu Jiu was listening how Ye Zhen Zhen's silly face look like when she was trying to portray the story and characters in detail.

The story was about how the jade emperor, sending the 9th fairy down to earth to help a benevolent emperor in governing the nation. The human body of the 9th fairy married the emperor and became his empress, and went to war together, because the 9th fairy was clever in the arts of war, that is why she followed the emperor. The 9th fairy purposely changed her appearance and slipped into the enemy's camp and lead the leader into wrong directions, as well as giving the important informations to the emperor to help him win the war. After that, the enemy found out the real identity of the 9th fairy, with a ill intention they purposely spread negative rumours to release their anger. After the Emperor found out, he thoroughly investigated the news and brought them forward to the 9th fairy.

That was roughly the main plot of the story, but of course in between there were more details. Such as, in order to portray the courage of the 9th fairy, a more powerful opponent will be provided, as well as providing a detailed background story of the opponent; and which many stories regarding their battle of wits and courage are included, but of course in the end the winner would be the 9th fairy; as well as arranging a battle for the 9th fairy that helps portray the thoughts of the common citizen.

The entire story was well written, with the necessary climax and plots, as well as the ups and downs, including the most recent word usage of the common citizens. Making the story close to the hearts of the citizens of Da Qi.

After Ye Zhen Zhen completed her story, she picked up a cup of tea and drank. Ji Wu Jiu looked left and right, looking at how the people around him was full of expressions, that does not seemed to be faked, then only he found out, perhaps he was the odd one there.

The people finally clapped hard after they came to a realization that the story has ended.

Feng You De was curious and asked "Empress, you have purposely stated that this story happened in our dynasty, can I ask who is this 9th fairy?"

Wang You Cai answered, "Do you still need to ask, of course it is our Empress" To beautify oneself to this extent, the empress really is shameless. Feng You De thought in his heart, but it was shameless yet..creative..

His thought represented almost everyone there.

The reaction received from the story was quite good, Ji Wu Jiu immediately ordered Feng You De to look for the most famous story teller in the capital, to meet him tomorrow.

Feng You De went to do his job. Now it was near dinner time, Ye Zhen Zhen asked Zhuang Concubine to stay for dinner, but Zhuang Concubine kept thinking that Ji Wu Jiu will feel that she is bothering them, so she didn't dare to eat dinner at Kun Ning Palace and ask to leave.

After dinner, and drinking some tea, Ji Wu Jiu did not return to Yang Xin Hall. He pulled Ye Zhen Zhen to sit on the bed, and smiled mischievously "Student heard that the 9th fairy is very well versed in the art of chamber, will she be able to help me answer a few questions?"

Ye Zhen Zhen frowned and answered "You did not sleep at all last night, it would be better for you to sleep earlier tonight"

"This was exactly student's question" Ji Wu Jiu suddenly went closer, smiled and looked at her, "although I have not slept a whole night, but looking at the 9th fairy made me very awake, the whole body feels awake. What should I do now?" His voice ended roughly, filled with teasing and flirting. Lifting up her chin, he kissed the corner of her lips, and continued "Do you have any way to solve it, to use up my energy a little, so that I would be able to sleep well?"

After a little thought, Ye Zhen Zhen realised that everytime it was her energy that is used up? So she was a little not willing to lose, but today since he did not sleep the whole night, then this time there would be a chance that she will win him.....

Ji Wu Jiu places Ye Zhen Zhen on the bed, stood up and closes the door properly. Before he could remove his clothes, he suddenly looked up and said "Wait for a while"

"What's wrong?" Ye Zhen Zhen asks.

Ji Wu Jiu did not answer her. He left the bed and walked towards the window, lifting up the leg of the mynah, he opened the window and threw him out.

Ye Zhen Zhen heard a sound of "ai yo" coming from the window. "Nothing would

happen to it right?" She asks.

"Don't bother about the bird now" Ji Wu Jiu returned to the bed, holding on to her, biting her lips and slyly asks "Think of what to do with this bird first", while brushing his body against Ye Zhen Zhen's thigh.

Feng You De was very dependable, today, after court, he was able to see the story teller. This person was called Liu Jun Xian, 40 odd years old, slim faced and thin lips, it seems like he has talent with speaking.

A story teller's status in the society was not very high, and was only able to be at best make some sort of friendships with the small local magistrates or rich merchants. Liu Jun Xian was the capital's most famous story teller, and the highest ranked minister he knew was a 5th ranked one, but now to be suddenly been called upon by the emperor himself, he was so nervous until he no longer knows where to put his hands, even his words came out stuttering.

Ji Wu Jiu was a person who talks little, so he only took the story book and showed it to Liu Jun Xian. To see something of his trade, Liu Jun Xian's eyes glowed, and read through the book in a glimspe, after that complimented the person who wrote the book.

Then, Ji Wu Jiu notified his purpose. Hearing that the emperor requires his service, Liu Jun Xian can't help but to feel dizzy, furthermore it was to help the empress rid off the negative rumours, to be able to complete his task properly would of course be able to bring him honour, so he quickly agreed.

Ji Wu Jiu then further discuss a little details with him, and made sure he does not tell others about this matter, and also asks him to add a few blissful moments of the emperor and empress inside the story before letting him go.

After that, Ji Wu Jiu went to Kun Ning Palace.

At Kun Ning palace, Ye Zhen Zhen was in a daze. Ji Wu Jiu threw the mynah out yesterday, and has not return till now, perhaps he really fell to death.

Ji Wu Jiu consoled her after hearing this, "His wings was not used to swim, how can he die so easily. Furthermore, even if he died, there would still be a corspe, asks anyone, if they have seen the corspe."

Ye Zhen Zhen asked around, and no one saw it.

Then, Wang You Cai came back from outside. On his shoulders was that pitiful bird.

“When i found it, he was standing at the imperial garden, singing!” Wang You Cai said, well lifting his shoulders, the mynah then flew back to his perch.

Ye Zhen Zhen then lightly and gently patted its head.

The little mynah suddenly stretched his head and said “The empress is pregnant!
The empress is pregnant!”

Chapter 68

The little mynah was shouting again and again “The empress is pregnant”. Ye Zhen Zhen on the other hand was treating it as though as it learnt something while he was away, and did not bother too much about it, Ji Wu Jiu however invited the imperial doctor to take a look at Ye Zhen Zhen.

Initially Ye Zhen Zhen wanted to tell him that few days ago the doctor has already done their routine visit and everything was normal, but seeing how excited Ji Wu Jiu was, she did not say anything and obediently waited for the doctor’s arrival.

After the doctor finished checking Ye Zhen Zhen’s pulse, with a happy face he kneeled on the floor and announced “Congratulations Your Majesty, The empress, niang niang really is pregnant!”

All the eunuchs and maid servants that heard him all started to kneel on the floor, “Congratulations to your majesty, to the empress!”

Ye Zhen Zhen was stunned, and looked at Ji Wu Jiu. On his face, the expression was no longer the worried and anxious looked he had just a little earlier, but instead a smile that looks like the sun that appeared after the rain, shining so bright.

Ye Zhen Zhen pulled his sleeves “Your Majesty?” Snap out of it, a whole room of people is still kneeling.

Ji Wu Jiu came back to his sense, laughed and saw “Award!”

All the people there were very happy. Ji Wu Jiu folded his arms and walk in rounds in the room, happy till he can’t stop and don’t know what else he could do, making Ye Zhen Zhen dizzy. The imperial doctor was at the side speaking with Su Yue with regards of what they need to be aware of, and in the end faced Ji Wu Jiu and said “The empress’s body is strong, as long as properly cared for, giving birth would be smooth, with mother and child safe”

That would be of course. Ji Wu Jiu stopped walking, looked at the Ye Zhen Zhen who was in a daze, then told the doctor to first leave. But before the doctor can leave the room, he called him back and said “With regards to the empress being pregnant, do not let anyone know”

“Understood”

Ji Wu Jiu then glanced at the rest of the people, “You guys as well, speak nothing of this matter to anyone”

Ye Zhen Zhen was currently being talked about in the rumours, if news of her being pregnant was spread, in the mouth of others, who knew what it would become. This big news, shall have to wait till they settle the problem in front of them first, and then after that to receive sincere congratulations would be better.

After the doctor left, Ji Wu Jiu dismissed everyone, and was left alone with Ye Zhen Zhen. He sat on the bed and carefully places his hands on her stomach, with a layer of clothings in between, feeling the warmth that was being released. The feeling was very miraculous, it was as though as he was forming a bond with his unborn child, although it was still a fetus, almost a month old.

“Zhen Zhen, you are really commendable” Ji Wu Jiu laughed. Leaning shoulder against shoulder, reaching out to pull her head towards himself.

Ye Zhen Zhen also places her hand on her stomach, on top on Ji Wu Jiu’s hands, and asks “Your majesty, do you like children?”

“Like, of course i like” Ji Wu Jiu said, while turning his hands over to hold Ye Zhen Zhen’s hand.

“But i felt like you don’t like” Ye Zhen Zhen said, “Previously when Wang Zhao Yi miscarried, it seemed like you weren’t sad about it”

“How can you still not understand, Wang Zhao Yi, is Wang Zhao Yi, you are you. How can i not like any children from you?”

“Then how come you have no children all this time?” As an emperor, with so many women, but without a child, it does not fit.

Ji Wu Jiu sighed, and said “Zhen Zhen, you wouldn’t know.. to be born in the royal family, seems so glorious, but only they will know the troubles within. As a princess it was still fine, reaching off age, they can choose a man and marry off. But for a prince, if there were many brothers, eventually their relationship would not be as good as the likes of the common people”

Although he didn’t state it too clearly, but Ye Zhen Zhen understood in her heart. If there were too many prince, and with the emperor spot being only one, when these kids grow up, and when the emperor gets old, then of course the competition would be vicious. It was really too common for princes to get rid of one another, Ji Wu Jiu’s father was a good example....

“That is why, it was not that I wasn’t worried, but I don’t dare worry over it. Last time, imperial father had many concubines, but only had one child, most probably it was because of this as well”

It would be that case, although his father was capable of killing of his own brothers, but definitely he would not want his sons to be the same.

But to do that, would be a bit over confident, to only have one son, what if when he gets older, and something happens to his son.....

Ye Zhen Zhen sighed, “Then what do you plan to do?”

“I want my children to be from the main wife, and has no difference in ranks. It would be best if I would get 1 son and others daughters.” Ji Wu Jiu answered, and pinched her cheeks lightly, “Give birth to a few more daughters, that would be as cute as you”

Ye Zhen Zhen looked down, a little speechless, “This type of thing, how can I control.. if i accidentally gave birth to 2 sons, then what happens then?”

“Then I would write my will earlier, and let it be known earlier, to avoid any fights in the future”

Ye Zhen Zhen played with Ji Wu Jiu’s fingers, “But, your majesty, I still think that there is something weird with what happened today”

Ji Wu Jiu let her continue playing with his fingers, laughed “O? Is it because Zhen Zhen knows that she will be a mother soon, and is starting to get nervous? Don’t be afraid I am the same as you”

“No”, Ye Zhen Zhen shook her head lightly, “I just felt weird, why would the mynah know about me being pregnant? Even the imperial doctor needs to check my pulse before confirming, but it can tell by just opening his mouth?”

“Most probably he just guessed it, you have prosperity, so naturally the animal that you own would have it too, to inform you earlier, shouldn’t be weird”

“I still think something is not right”

Ji Wu Jiu lightly rubbed her head, “So what, the doctor has confirmed, don’t think too much, and properly take care of yourself” In a second thought, knowing that he would not be able to be intimate with Ye Zhen Zhen really makes his mood down.

“Your Majesty”

“What’s wrong?”

Ye Zhen Zhen havent managed to reply, when the mynah by the window

suddenly opened its mouth, “The emperor is not capable in bed, The emperor is not capable in bed!”

“.....” Ji Wu Jiu stood up, and walked towards it, and once again grabbed on to the legs of the bird, and threw him out the window.

Ye Zhen Zhen’s face turned black, while trying to control her laughter, and said “This little thing, after going one round in the inner palace, it seems like it learnt alot”

Ji Wu Jiu was speechless. He knew that the people in the inner palace was talking about him. Saying that he was not capable in bed, now not to mention human, even the bird knows. But can or cannot this problem, it was not easy to proof, it was not like he can sleep with all the woman in the inner palace in sequence? If so, Zhen Zhen will kill him....

Ji Wu Jiu saw Ye Zhen Zhen’s face looking abit gloomy, so he walked back to her, and spoke to her ears, “Whether I can or not, others might not know, but you should know right?”

Ye Zhen Zhen’s cheek flushed red, and did not answer him.

Seeing her blushing, Ji Wu Jiu’s heart felt itchy, he stretched his arms and places it on her stomach, “This is the proof, don’t tell me you don’t want to admit?”

Ye Zhen Zhen looked at his hands with her red cheeks.

Ji Wu Jiu bend down and pecked her cheeks, after kissing them, it was not enough, so he turned her face over and attacked the lips.

Too bad, such a waste, can touch cannot eat. Not sure if this type of feeling was sweet or sad..

The next day, the spy Ji Wu Jiu sent out has returned with some useful information, about the case of the rumours.

Although the Xu family and Fang family are in the list of the suspects, but Ji Wu Jiu still took out the Fang family. Fang Xiu Qing was not too be mess with, with him here, the Fang family would not be so foolish. Although Xian Concubine was smart, but now she was siding with the empress dowager, if she wants to do anything, most probably she would use the empress dowager’s sword and would not do it herself.

That is why this matter should have been done by the Xu family.

For someone in the palace to spread rumours out to the common citizens, was

not something easy to plan, so this time, no matter if the empress dowager was involved or not, it would still involve the planning of the Xu family.

Noble families would definitely not lower themselves to spread the rumours personally, so that's why they would obviously find someone to spread it.

In order to make sure it was done properly, they would choose the closest amongst the closest to spread the rumour.

Therefore the suspects kept shrinking and in the end it ended with Xu family's Head Butlers.

From the report, the suspects were more precise, they were all pointed towards the known head butlers of Xu Family.

In order to avoid the case being dragged on any longer, Ji Wu Jiu immediately ordered for the capture of those people that night and to be investigated, if necessary he will order for the entire family to be brought along. It would be best if they can get the answer in one night, and to get the mastermind behind it all.

After giving his orders, an imperial doctor arrived to take the routine pulse.

This time the doctor that came was Doctor Sun, he was a 20 over years old fella, Doctor Tie's disciple. According to Doctor Tie, although Doctor Sun might appear to be a little slow, but he was honest and kept to his principles. Ji Wu Jiu heard him mentioning, and knew that it meant that Doctor Tie wanted to help Doctor Sun in his career, so he personally ordered for him to come take his routine pulse.

Doctor Sun was a quiet person, after bowing to Ji Wu Jiu, then he started to do his work, placing his hands on Ji Wu Jiu's wrist.

Suddenly his face changed, and looked at Ji Wu Jiu weirdly.

Ji Wu Jiu retrieved his hands and asks, "So how is it?"

Doctor Sun opened his mouth, but no voice came out. Struggling for a while internally, but still nothing came out from his mouth.

Ji Wu Jiu then asks while frowning "How is my pulse like?"

Doctor Sun kneeled down in front of Ji Wu Jiu, "I... I don't dare to say..."

"Just be honest, I will not punish you" Seeing how Doctor Sun reacted, Ji Wu Jiu felt very uncomfortable, he wouldn't have caught any terminal diseases right? Calm down, calm down. No matter what happens, he must accept it. Ji Wu Jiu took a deep breath, and continued to psych himself.

Doctor Sun clenched his teeth, and said "Your majesty, you could be..." after

thinking, it shouldnt be a good news, “You could be pregnant.....”

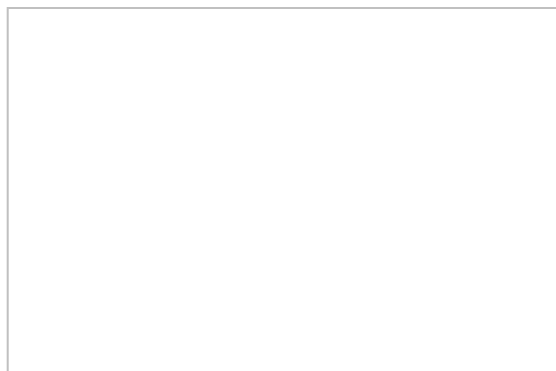
Note: Last chapter for the year!!! Happy new year people!!! Cliff Hanger till at least 4th or 5th of January ^^ hahahahahaha

Chapter 69

Happy New Year Everyone!! I wish everyone will have a blessed and prosperous new year ahead ~~~~

Sorry to keep you guys by the cliff for so long

Answers ahead!! And I must say, some of you were detectives or something.. I was resisting so much not to answer to your comments from the previous chapters.. hehehe!!



Credits – [Link](#)

It was impossible to use words to explain what Ji Wu jiu is feeling right now. Holding on to his willpower to not strangle Doctor Sun, he called Doctor Tie over.

The moment Doctor Tie entered, he saw his own disciple kneeling in front of the emperor, sweating non-stop, the dark blue robe that he is wearing has been thoroughly drenched by the sweat, not to mention the layer of sweat formed on his forehead.

Doctor Sun was Doctor Tie's primary disciple, although this disciple was not so bright, but he was a very good person, so he likes him very much. After giving his greetings to Ji Wu Jiu, he took a look at the paled face Doctor Sun, and another look at Ji Wu Jiu, who also does not seem to be in a good mood.

Who knew what that little rascal said that made the situation so tense.

"Your good disciple here" Ji Wu Jiu gave a look at Doctor Sun and turn back to Doctor Tie to continue "Just now claimed that my pulse indicates pregnancy"

Doctor Tie was just only standing up, but upon hearing those words, his knees immediately fell back to the ground, "I did not teach properly, I deserve to die!"

“Not being able to differentiate between a guy and a girl, has everyone in the imperial clinic died? Even this type of blind person can be sent out from there?”

“Your majesty you are right, this type of person should not be allowed in the imperial clinic, after this I will send him back to his hometown to farm!”

Doctor Sun remains quiet, but his sweat did not stop, the layer of sweats are now forming large drops, dripping down one by one to the floor, slowly forming a pool of sweat by his knees.

Looking at his reaction, Doctor Tie could not help but to shout at him “Quickly bid your appreciation towards the emperor for not killing you!”

With a depressed face, Doctor Sun can’t help but murmurs, “but.. the emperor’s pulse really shows that he is pregnant....”

“You!” If they weren’t in front of the emperor now, Doctor Tie really wanted to knock his head. He raised his head and took a look at Ji Wu Jiu, and found his face as dark as ink. Doctor Tie still wanted to help ask for forgiveness for Doctor Sun, then he have a sudden thought, even though Doctor Sun might not be bright, but his skills is still good, actually the best amongst his disciples, a simple pregnancy pulse, he won’t mistook it so easily right?

Forget it, let’s see how, strengthening his heat, Doctor Tie said “Your majesty, I am sorry to offend, but allow me to personally check your pulse”

Ji Wu Jiu patiently, stretched his arms forward.

Doctor Tie checked both his wrist in detail, frowned and said, “It really is the pregnant pulse,” and seeing Ji Wu Jiu showing signs of bursting soon, he immediately said, “Your majesty, recently did you eat anything different?”

Ji Wu Jiu’s anger dissipated, “I really want to know, what type of food can make a person pregnant upon eating”

“What I meant was, perhaps your majesty ate something, that could have caused the pregnancy pulse, but not actually pregnant”

Ji Wu Jiu closes his eyes in thought.

Doctor Tie started to sweat himself, while waiting for his reply.

Ji Wu Jiu suddenly said “If you want to confirm someone.. a women, on

whether they are pregnant or not, besides taking the pulse, is there any other methods?”

“There is”

“Follow me to Kun Ning Palace”

“Understood”

“This is Chuan Xiong powder made from Ai Grass, if Niang Niang is really pregnant, after drinking it, she might feel a little uncomfortable, however please don’t worry, I have controlled the portion properly”. Doctor Tie asked Doctor Sun to bring over a medicine bowl.

Su Yue took the medicine bowl, and stirred a little with a silver spoon, Ye Zhen Zhen looked at the medicine and asks “After drinking this, how do you confirm whether or not I am pregnant?”

“Niang Niang, after drinking it, try to feel your lower stomach area, if there is some sort of movement, then it means that there is a fetus, if there is not, it means that there were just some irregularity with your menstrual.”

Ye Zhen Zhen followed his instructions.

Ji Wu Jiu was looking from the side, anxiously. After a while seeing Doctor Tie nodding, he quickly asks Ye Zhen Zhen, “how is it?”

Ye Zhen Zhen shook her head “No feeling”

Ji Wu Jiu felt his body relaxed.

Doctor Tie knew that the both of them would need to talk after this, so he pulled Doctor Sun and left. After leaving Kun Ning Palace, the both of them did exactly the same thing, which was pulling their sleeves to wipe their sweat.

Inside Kun Ning Palace, Ji Wu Jiu was sitting next to Ye Zhen Zhen, not speaking a word.

Ye Zhen Zhen places her head on his shoulders, and holds his hands.

Ji Wu Jiu returns the hold, and said “Zhen Zhen , I thought I was going to be a father” Yesterday night, he was so happy that he couldn’t sleep properly,

thinking about names after names for the baby.

“Your Majesty, how did you find out? Ye Zhen Zhen asks.

“.....” He will never tell the truth.

“But, it seems like all this happenings can be linked together” Ye Zhen Zhen sat up straight, “first, rumours about me getting sullied by the enemy, then rumours about me being pregnant, it would then mean that this baby’s origin would not be clear, even if it was yours, and if everyone says that it isn’t then it would be adding salt to the wound, making it seemed like I was really raped and got pregnant by other men. That time, no matter what I say, it would be useless. If not another scenario would be saying I purposely delay the pregnancy matter to lie to the royal family, claiming that the baby is yours. Then that time, it would be linked to me lying to the emperor, and even worst implications will come out. Everyone would be afraid if the next emperor would not be of royal blood and in the end the emperor would put the blame all on me.”

As though as to reply to her, the mynah who was sitting on it’s perch suddenly said “The empress is not pregnant with the dragon seed, but a bastard seed!”

“See, even it knows” Ye Zhen Zhen laughed, “I guess that night when he went out, it could have heard some great things. As well you, not being able to perform in bed, was also said by him, looks like this point was also calculated by them. You can’t, and the empress is pregnant, if really pregnant, then it must be a bastard’s child, if fake pregnancy, then it would be slapping your face, no matter real or fake, it will still make you lose face, then you will definitely not forgive me easily. That would be the third scenario”

Ji Wu Jiu did not say anything, but his hands were clenching harder and harder, making Ye Zhen Zhen pain.

Ye Zhen Zhen finally concluded with a smirk “Each step is clever, and cruel. Such a big act, it was just a waste that no matter how they calculated in the end they still overestimated themselves”

Ji Wu Jiu looked at her seriously “Zhen Zhen, no matter what happens, I will not betray you”

Ye Zhen Zhen who was suddenly looked up by him with such serious and

intense gaze, she could not help but to look down.

“Zhen Zhen, think back properly, in this recent day, was there anything suspicious that you have eaten?”

Ye Zhen Zhen thought for a while, and shook her head, “I only eat and drink in my own palace, even at the Empress Dowager’s place, I wouldn’t even drink a sip of tea. Kun Ning Palace’s kitchen is very clean, there should not be any mistakes”

“Then have you eaten things gifted by other people?”

“Only eaten the pastries sent by Zhuang Concubine’

Ji Wu Jiu thinks inside, Right!, He has also eaten Zhuang Concubine’s pastries, “Looks like the problem came from the pastries”

“It shouldn’t be” Ye Zhen Zhen felt it was weird “ Zhuang Concubine lacks the motive... furthermore, how can you be so sure, your majesty? Also, how did you find out that my pregnancy was not real?”

Ji Wu Jiu however, did not answer, and ordered Feng You De to summon Zhuang Concubine.

“I will only give you one chance, to tell us personally, what did you do wrong towards the empress!” Ji Wu Jiu said the moment Zhuang Concubine reached.

Zhuang Concubine did not understand what happened, but seeing Ji Wu Jiu’s face, and the empress looking at her calmly, she was still very unsure. Zhuang Concubine was not stupid, and seeing that the environment was quiet, then most probably she was framed by someone, so she answered “Replying to your majesty, to the empress, the heaven and earth can be my witness, I have not been rude to the empress at all, most probably there is some sort of misunderstanding, I beg your majesty and empress to investigate properly”

Ye Zhen Zhen said “Has anything abnormal happened in your palace recently?”

Zhuang Concubine gave it a thought, and answered “Empress, there was nothing abnormal in my palace, but only one thing. A palace maid from Han Guang Palace, passed away 2 days ago, for accidentally dropping into the Tai Ye Lake, there was someone that already checked the corpse, and the corpse has been buried. But because it was not something big, so I did not report it to you, I

beg for forgiveness”

“The person who passed away, what was her main job?”

“She was the head palace maid in my kitchen, because she was nimble, so I will let her help me while making pastries...” when she spoke till here, suddenly she stopped, and her eyes opened wide to look at Ye Zhen Zhen, unconsciously she covers her mouth and said shockly, “niang niang, are you saying.. the pastries I made...”

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded.

Zhuang Concubine’s face changed, she immediately went to Ye Zhen Zhen, holding on to her legs, “Your majesty, and empress please investigate properly! I swear, both your majesty and empress treats me very well, I will never and have never done anything against the empress!” Tears rolling down while she was speaking, “the pastries were made by me, that is true, but I really don’t know anything!” She paused for a while, seeing that the both of them still did not speak, she continued crying “Though the pastries was indeed carried over by me, I have place my trust on the wrong person, to have harm the empress, I deserve to die!”

Ye Zhen Zhen held her arm, “First, stand up, I did not say I do not believe you”

Zhuang Concubine stood up and used her handkerchief to dry her tears, “Thank you niang-niang for your trust, I will definitely investigate and find out the mastermind behind this, and to properly give you an answer”

Ye Zhen Zhen and Ji Wu Jiu looked at each other, and found out the same intention from this gaze.

Zhuang Concubine was the number 1 person under the empress, no matter from which angle, there was no reason for her to harm the empress, it does not benefit her at all.

Unless she chose to help another party, but at this point of time, to suddenly betray the empress and to choose another side, would be something that would be done by a blind person.

This time Zhuang Concubine is used by someone else, that is also because that person could not find any loopholes in Kun Ning Palace, and could only use other

people.

As for who was the mastermind behind all of this.... Hehe..

Although Xian Concubine was smart, but whatever she does, it will still have a hint of her personality, allowing others to know easily who did it, like bamboo scaffoldings, although it appears to be well built , however each intersection is it's weakness, once one part is damaged, the entire thing will collapse.

She thought that she has calculated very well, however, to compare her intelligence with Ji Wu Jiu's, the difference can be told easily.

But of course, the empress dowager was a good sword, so as long as she is there to block the front, Xian Concubine will only need to provide the idea. Even if anything were to happen, it will not fall onto her.

This pair of person really makes people headache. Ye Zhen Zhen thinks inside, one was the birth mother of Ji Wu Jiu, another was the daughter of his most trusted and loyal minister, both was not possible to be punished heavily. But if not even a little punishment was given to them, this 2 person might come back to bite when they feel like it.

"Zhen Zhen, how do you think we should settle this matter?" Ji Wu Jiu asks

As the direct victim of this case, Ye Zhen Zhen would of course love to punish them severely, but this was not realistic. No matter how much she wants to put those two person on the floor and to be bashed by her shoes, she still has to consider Ji Wu Jiu's feelings, he shouldn't be placed in between. To be the emperor it was not easy, if even the inner palace was not peaceful, then it would be worst for him.

Therefore Ye Zhen Zhen sighed, and answered "You decide yourself, there is no need to consider me. I am a hard stone, not afraid of these small matters"

Ji Wu Jiu pulled her into an embrace tightly and said "There are some people, thinking that I don't understand them, but it is because I can't understand them. Tell me, with this type of people, how can I place importance in that relationship?"

Ye Zhen Zhen felt the sadness and helplessness tone from his sentence, she hugged him back and consoled him, " You.. don't be sad.."

“I am not sad, I still have you.” Only you.

Note: I want a Ji Wu Jiu in my life... anyone want to line up? Hahahahhaha

Chapter 70

Although to interrogate someone with the involvement of torture might seem inhumane, but sometimes this methods are necessary for certain types of people. After a night of torture, the head housekeeper from the Xu Family finally admitted his crimes. This Housekeeper Fang works for Xu Shang Yong as the head housekeeper, while his wife is the Madam's right hand person.

Xu Shang Yong is the father of Xu Wei Rong, the empress dowager's younger brother, he is always involved with cases of bullying woman and causing them to suicide, which after Ji Wu Jiu has settled the case, and sent him to his death. Now, the person in charge of the family is the eldest son of Xu Shang Yong, Xu Ling, the brother of Xu Wei Rong. Within his many children, Xu Shang Yong only has this son from the main wife. So the Madam also treats the son like her life, with the addition of his useless father, the result is that the son grew up to be the same type of person his father was. Not only that he is a well known player, with an empress dowager aunt, and a bunch of useless friends, which praises him up to the sky as a usual routine, it made him a person that cannot accept defeat.

According to the housekeeping couple, they did receive orders from their master, to spread the rumours about the empress. The officer who interrogated them was very detailed, not only that the both of them admitted that the Madam Xu gave out the orders, but they also said that the Eldest son was also involved, ordering them to do so.

Putting down the report, Ji Wu Jiu looked towards the kneeling officer and ordered "Capture the entire Xu Family, no matter male or female, young or old. Xu Ling is to be interrogated alone, while the rest are to be remained captive first, and await for orders"

"Understood"

Feng You De walked in the hall, and politely said "Your majesty, Minister Fang has arrived from your orders"

"Let him in"

Fang Xiu Qing works in the nearby office, which was not too far from Yang Xin Hall, so he was often called upon by Ji Wu Jiu, therefore he did not feel anything was wrong, and thought it was the normal office business. However, ever since he stepped into the hall, Ji Wu Jiu has not mentioned a single word about work, and only discussed with him about Xian Concubine.

Although Ji Wu Jiu was speaking about it calmly, but the more Fang Xiu Qing listens, the more scared he becomes, after a few sentences, cold sweat starts to form, threatening to drop down. Although the emperor did not mention explicitly, but somehow or other, he can hear his dissatisfied tone about Xian Concubine, although he seems to be praising her, with the skin alone smiling, gritting his teeth speaking about the good things about her, in another person's ears, it was much more scary than scolding.

Xian Concubine has already entered the palace, the emperor's woman, according to the rules, if she has done anything wrong, the emperor can punish her accordingly, why would he call in this minister to say this type of things?

It was to notify him, to warn him, to settle his own daughter? Or was it to tell him, that he will spare her this time, to give face

No matter which case was it, there was one thing that can be confirmed: This time my daughter has created too big of a trouble, crossing the emperor's bottom line.

Fang Xiu Qing does not know what Ji Wu Jiu was thinking, so he can only say "I did not teach my daughter properly, making the emperor troubled, it really makes me shameful"

"I was not really troubled, the person who was really troubled was the empress" Ji Wu Jiu answered.

Seems like the case involves the empress, Fang Xiu Qing thought. The Ye Family's daughter really cannot be underestimated, last time she was treated as though as the emperor's enemy, now their relationship has turned so good.

Ji Wu Jiu said "Since you did not teach properly, then teach her well again"

Not to mention the royal family, even the normal citizen, for a married daughter to be reeducated by the father, was not common. As a woman from

the inner palace, to return home to their maternal home was something impossible, and it was almost not possible for him to see his own daughter again as well, even if they were to meet, they have to go through the differences of master and servant, so who is to educate who now?

Although it seems like something weird, but Fang Xiu Qing was not a common person, ever since he came out from Yang Xin Hall, and returned to his office, he returned to his normal composure and reign over his ministry.

His own daughter, seems like she has sided the wrong side!

All along, what an emperor is most offended by was that someone trying to climb over his head and to take his powers, therefore for families to kill one another was something common, not to mention to get rid of a mere side family. Xu family is the maternal family of the empress dowager, but so what? Previously Ji Wu Jiu's father even killed off his own brother, for him to face his uncle and grandfather now is just a small case. The empress dowager has always thought that she being the birth mother of Ji Wu Jiu meant that she can do anything she wants, and was not afraid of anything, but ever since she had the intention to raise a new monarch, it has caused the relationship between the mother and child to be broken.

To have faced this type of event, that supposedly clever daughter of his actually openly sided the empress dowager's side.

If this was not looking for death, then what is?

Fang Xiu Qing's heart dropped, and cursed Xian Concubine for being foolish. Previously she was chosen amongst her sisters to be wedded to the emperor because she was smart and cautious, and was a little like him. He himself was rather regretful that this daughter was not a son, and could not continue his legacy. When she was finally sent to the palace, although a little worried, but he was still confident, as the rumors said that Ye Xiu Ming's granddaughter was a stubborn and willful person, so she shouldn't be hard to deal with.

But it seems like, Ye family's granddaughter has properly secured the empress's seat, as for his own daughter seems to be heading towards the end of the road, step by step.

Not sure if this happens because of her ownself, or because it was destiny.

When Fang Xiu Qing returned to the office, with a down face, Ye Xiu Ming saw him and was shocked. To be in the world of politics, one must be able to maintain poker face very well, and Fang Xiu Qing who was very good at it, is not appearing so now, which was rare.

Ye Xiu Ming, although is troubled with the rumours surrounding the empress, but looking at Fang Xiu Qing now, it seems like his troubles are worse than his, so feeling better, he smiled and asks “Minister Fang, did you meet with any tough problems? Why don’t you tell me, so I can help you solve it together?”

Fang Xiu Qing raises his hands to bow tiredly, “I was just reprimanded by the emperor for not capable in performing in one of my duties”

The emperor would not have reprimanded you, Ye Xiu Ming thought, but did not say it out, “O? What was it regarding? I will speak for you in front of the emperor, maybe he will give me some face”

Fang Xiu Qing was too lazy to continue with him, “No need to trouble you”

Ye Xiu Ming looked at his back figure, that fella actually did not even have to mood to fake pleasantries, it seems like something serious really happened?

On the other hand, Fang Xiu Qing was already at his desk holding a brush, eyes full of vigor. Thinking back carefully about what Ji Wu Jiu said earlier, to reeducate your daughter?

Could what the emperor meant was to give him another chance to help Xian Concubine ?

If it was really so, then the emperor really gave enough face for Fang Family. To be honest, no matter how the emperor wants to deal with Xian Concubine, Fang Xiu Qing actually has no say at all. But no matter what, they were still father and daughter, if anything were to happen to Xian Concubine, then Fang Xiu Qing will not get any benefits as well. Now that the emperor did not deal with Xian Concubine himself, but to first notify him, and to give another chance to his daughter, this was truly the emperor being kind and giving him face.

Fang Xiu Qing sighed, and started to draft his report. This report was then delivered to Ji Wu Jiu’s table, after Ji Wu Jiu read it, using a pen, he wrote “Allowed”

Xian Concubine thought that it was a success, Ye Zhen Zhen is going to go down soon.

Fang Xiu Qing's report stated that Madam Fang was sick, and misses her daughter, and hoped that the emperor would allow Xian Concubine to go home. Ji Wu Jiu agreed without much thought and allowed Xian Concubine to return home the next day.

Such a big honor was given, meaning that the emperor was being good to her.

It must be Ye Zhen Zhen getting confirmed pregnant, that made the emperor angry, but because this type of thing was shameful, so he did not dare to openly do anything about it.

After this case, it would be impossible for the empress to make a comeback.

For the emperor to take the initiative to be good to her, the day the empress steps down would be near. Thinking about these makes Xian Concubine very happy. She went to Ci Ning Palace, and said many good things to the empress dowager making her happy, and the both of them was too happy and started talking about how to step Ye Zhen Zhen under their feet.

The next day, Xian Concubine went back home. Originally thinking that her mother was really sick, but although she seems a bit pale, but there seems to be nothing wrong with her body.

After a few words with her mother, Xian Concubine felt that her mother was somehow not in a good mood, and not long after, she said "Your father wants to meet you"

Fang Xiu Qing was waiting since earlier. When Xian Concubine knows that her father wants to speak to her, she sent all the servants away, and leaving only her with her father alone, and ordered someone to guard the door outside.

Because they were alone, Fang Xiu Qing also forgoes the greetings, and asks Xian Concubine "Liu Yue, did you do anything that offended the empress recently?"

Xian Concubine was stunned, and answered “it was just only the silk ceremony previously, I have already apologized to the empress, and she also said she will not punish me. There is no need to worry about this anymore Father”

Fang Xiu Qing shook his head, “No, did you do anything else? Think some more”

Xian Concubine shook her head “I have been avoiding her, why are you asking about this father? Did someone say something to you ?”

Fang Xiu Qing can only say, “The emperor asks me to reeducate you”

Xian Concubine was stunned “This.. what does that mean?”

“What else can it mean, it means you did something that made him unhappy, and taking care of my feeling, was the only reason he let you come back. You better tell me honestly, if there is any link between you and the rumours regarding the empress that is being spread around now?”

Xian Concubine immediately answered “No, that was ordered by the empress dowager”

Fang Xiu Qing’s expression got even more serious, “If it was ordered by the empress dowager, how did you know about it?”

“I.....”

Fang Xiu Qing asked again “Did you or did you not use this opportunity to do other things?”

“I.....”

“At this point you are still not willing to tell me the truth!?”

Note: Busy busy ~~

On a side note: anyone wants to sponsor me a new keyboard? My backspace key failed on me.. life is tough when when you can’t erase the mistakes you have done...(UPDATE: touched by donations offers haha.. but i bought a new one already.. can’t stand it anymore .. ehehe.. u can look forward more updates ...

though..... the next few chapters.. i need to do it somewhere discreet)

Hahahahaha happy reading

Chapter 71

Seeing that her father is getting truly angry, she looked down and answered, “I only gave some ideas, the one who lead was the Empress Dowager and her people, and not related to me. Even if to punish, it would not reach me”

“How can it not be related to you, how will it not reach you!” Fang Xiu Qing was so angry that he started to point at her, “You think that what you did was unknown by the emperor? What type of person is he! Even if it was me, when I speak to him, I still have to thread the water carefully, you trying to act smart in front of him, you really don’t know where you stand!”

Xian Concubine has not been scolded by anyone for a long time, so she is getting frustrated so she answered angrily “Father, did you forget that it was you who sent me into the palace, as well as asking me to try to get rid of the empress. Now, I am just following your orders, but hearing you say these now, what do you want me to do now?”

Fang Xiu Qing retracted back his hands, shook his head and sighed, “Forget it, it was me who was muddled headed previously, till I made that sort of decision. Now, you should not even think of ways to get rid of the empress, first settle your own problem”

To make Ji Wu Jiu say those type of words, the chances of Xian Concubine getting any attention next time would be very slim, now all he hopes is that his daughter will not make the same type of mistake again, and to risk her life at it. It was him who wanted to send his daughter into the palace last time, in the end the fault is with him.

Hearing what he said, it made Xian Concubine laughed coldly, “Now, it cannot depend on me alone, even if I will not fight with the empress, the empress might not let me off”

“Liu Yue, don’t you realize, you did not only anger the empress alone, you angered the emperor as well. The emperor is going to settle Xu family sooner or later, if you are so close with the empress dowager, it would be looking for death. Not only you, but even the whole Fang family might be implicated. Do you

understand?”

“I do not understand” The empress dowager is the birth mother of Ji Wu Jiu, what can he do to her?

Fang Xiu Qing, got a bit tired, “It’s fine even if you don’t understand, you only have to remember one thing: Stay away from the empress dowager, as far as you can. This, you will be able to do it right?”

Xian Concubine nodded.

Fang Xiu Qing, suddenly kneeled down, “I represent the entire Fang family’s name and beg you to be able to do that”

Xian Concubine immediately went and help him up, “Father, please stand up, how can I accept this”

Fang Xiu Qing’s line of sight was towards the front, and did not look at her, and did not stand up either, “You are an imperial concubine, I am a minister, to kneel is my duty”

“Father! If you speak like that, what would it make me?”

“Since you still admit that I am your father, then I beg of you, that you must be able to keep your words, alright?” He said while finally looking at Xian Concubine

Xian Concubine can only said “I will promise you, please stand up”

Fang Xiu Qing, then stood up, tidied his attire and said “I am doing this, for your own good only”

Xian Concubine nodded “I know”

“As for the empress.... I know that you are ambitious, but now it is definitely not the right time. The empress is currently holding a very important place in the emperor’s heart, you have already receive warning from the emperor. If you were to do anything now, it will only increase his dislike towards you. If there is a chance in the future, then only we will think about it. A person’s life is very long, there is still chance, there is no need to rush. Also, although being the empress seems attractive, but it is also not something truly good, if you can have it, it’s fine, but if you can’t then don’t think too much about it. Previously I wanted to fight with Ye Xiu Ming, that is why I sent you in to the palace in a spur of a

moment. But it seems like, it would have been better if I have allowed you to be the head of someone's family instead, at least you would be respected more. This was my mistake. Now I can only hope that you would be able to live well and safely in the palace"

That speech has made Xian Concubine's tears flow down, while wiping her tears she said "Father, don't worry, I will be extra careful. As for entering the inner palace, was also what I intended, I do not blame you nor regret it"

After letting out their feelings, the father and daughter felt better and started to chat. While chatting, Xian Concubine let out the biggest secret in history to Fang Xiu Qing : The emperor is not capable in bed"

Fang Xiu Qing got shocked "Is what you saying the truth?"

"How would I dare to use this type of thing to joke around, now the entire inner palace knows about it, but because it is linked to the nation, and that most people don't know the reason behind, that is why they don't dare to spread out. If not why did you think these months, the emperor has only been visiting the empress alone? The empress dowager did not talk to him, because she also knows he.... Earlier on I was close to the empress dowager was because I felt that it was necessary for us Fang family to have a plan B later, if anything were to happen to the Ji empire, and not to be a fish on the chopping board like the Ye Family"

"you... You.." Fang Xiu Qing shook his head helplessly. "Your thinking is really too short. What you need to focus now is the present. The matter of the monarch is not something people like us should interfere nor think about. Even if the emperor really cannot produce an heir, it is still a few decades from this ruling. The emperor is only 21 years old this year, with a strong body, who can live longer than him? The empress dowager, Ye Xiu Ming or me? Even if we might live longer, but once the word monarch is mentioned, do you think the emperor will let you off? You have to remember, to work for the king is like working for the tiger, no matter how high your position is, you must first know your own position, things that you shouldn't touch, don't even think about it"

Xian Concubine nodded. Fang Xiu Qing was not sure how much she understood. He is very regretful of sending his daughter to the inner palace now.

Not sure if it was because she stayed with the empress dowager too long, that made her less intelligent, he has a feeling his daughter is no longer as smart as last time, especially with regards to the bigger picture, like life and death of the entire family. Furthermore, she seems to be more and more temperamental, not like the calm self previously.

But then again, it is understandable, the inner palace is a place to train people, if my own daughter is not matured enough, then a few trials and errors would be necessary.

Then again, Fang Xiu Qing started to feel frustrated, why did Ye Xiu Ming's granddaughter, on the other hand becomes more and more successful in the inner palace? Shouldn't she be disliked by the emperor, to be bullied by the empress dowager, and to be constantly troubled by others, but who knew in less than a year, she has actually managed to make the inner palace calm and stable. Looks like this lady is quite a character herself.

As for my own daughter.. Let's not talk about it anymore....

For Xian Concubine to be allowed home to visit, was a grace beyond words, everyone treated this news like a sign, along with the negative rumors surrounding the empress, they thought they could understand what the emperor is thinking. It seems like Fang family is treated really well by the emperor... People all around started to think about ways to be on friendly terms with the Fang family. Making them popular in a short time.

However, this honor has only maintain a day.

The next day when Xian Concubine return back to the inner palace, the moment she stepped out from her carriage, she received a royal edict from the emperor, with the reason of her stepping above her own authority, her ranking was decreased by 3 levels, as well as deduction of salary for 1 year.

Originally, after listening to her father's warning, Xian Concubine thought that it will end at that, and he will not do much to her. Cause, she thought that she did not do anything directly in this case, even if the empress wants to do anything to her, there was no proof. But who knew that the emperor will use the mistake she has done previously and not let her off, and said that she ignored

the rules, making her unable to fight back.

To suddenly be good and then to be cruel the next, really made everyone thought that the emperor was bipolar.

O, besides being bipolar, he also let the beast in him....

Earlier on, when Ji Wu Jiu ordered for the capture of the entire Xu family, the empress dowager has already met him to plead for her family. The mother and son immediately turned on their charisma, the both of them were educated people, so it was not right to argue using heated discussions. The empress dowager tried to reason with him, using the ways of family, relating it to the nation, from the way the empress works, to the relationship and bond between them mother and son, and in the end tears started to form.

However, when she says 1 sentence, Ji Wu Jiu will refute with another. Her own son has been mingling around with Ye Zhen Zhen too long, he did not manage to learn any good things, but has managed to train his tongue sharper, when refuting someone, it was stable, straight to the point and cruel, every sentence was like an ever expanding noodle stucked in the throat, making one unable to swallow it at all, hard to breath, and heart beat increase, till the point of wanting to kill off some people to release that anger.

Towards the empress dowager, Ji Wu Jiu was starting to lose his patience. He has always been someone that needs to keep everything under his control, if anyone dares to break out from his control, that person really needs to think about it properly. He was also never a person with too much sympathy or feelings, so if anyone wants destroy the little feelings that he has, then that person really has to think again. He has never treat any woman as good as he did to Ye Zhen Zhen, and if anyone dares to again and again hurt her or play tricks on her, then that person really really need to properly think again.

The empress dowager was speaking till her throat was dry, and drank 3 cups of tea, however Ji Wu Jiu was still holding his stance, and not letting her off. In the end , with the appearance of, first cry, second creating problems and third suicide, did only Ji Wu Jiu was forced to agree, to be kinder in his sentences.

And the result of his kinder sentences was, Xu Ling, and his mother as well as the head housekeeper couple, because of spreading out lies about the royalty,

has been sentenced to death. As for the rest of the Xu family, no matter male or female, any above 15 years will be banished to Qiong Zhou. Not only this main family, but those side family that has always used the title of being family with the empress to do bad things has also been settled together, and all been banished together to that far place to fish.

After doing all this, he finally felt that he did something.

The empress dowager was praying when she received this news. Without listening to the end of the news, her face turned, and fainted over in front of the gods that she was praying too.

When she finally came together, the empress dowager immediately rushed over to Gan Qing Palace to look for Ji Wu Jiu.

But she wasted her efforts by going to Gan Qing Palace. Because Ji Wu Jiu went to Kun Ning Palace, to take credit of what he done for Ye Zhen Zhen. The couple has been troubled by the news these few days and has not really been intimate, so when Ji Wu Jiu saw Ye Zhen Zhen, after talking for a while, the more he looked at her, the more attractive she looked, with an itch in his heart, unable to wait till the sky darkens, he started to be naughty in broad daylight.

The little mynah was sitting at its corner taking a nap. Although it was sleeping, Ji Wu Jiu was still not reassured, and once again grab it's leg and wanted to throw it out the window. The moment he opened the window, Ji Wu Jiu saw the empress dowager coming over in a hurry. But because he was in a rush to get the bird out of the room, before his brain can comprehend what is happening, his hands has already let go of the bird, and like a bullet, it shot forward. His skills are also too good, with that one throw, he managed to fly the bird quite far.

Therefore, the angered approaching empress dowager, was hit by an unidentified black object in high speed straight on her face.

“A yo!”

Ye Zhen Zhen heard the noise this time, this little bird's voice is truly loud.

Small Theatre (by the author)

Mynah: Even a bird has pride! Can't you use both hands and carefully let me fly out! Must you use this type of inhumane, and bad way to get rid of me!

Ji Wu Jiu: Cannot. Of Course.

Ye Zhen Zhen: Angry little birdie...

Mynah: A a a! O o O! Zhen Zhen you are so tight! Emperor you are so big!

Ji Wu Jiu:.....

Ye Zhen Zhen:

Note: Bahahahahahahahahahahahahhahahaaha.. oh my god.. that bird....

Btw small theatre (directly translated) is something the author added at the end of the chapter, it is not something that really happened in the main story. something like that. Just for fun. Will be busy till weekend. Will see if i can post the next chapter on Sunday. hehe

1,

Upon hearing the “ai yos” coming from both the mynah and empress dowager, Ji Wu Jiu quickly went out to receive the empress dowager. Ye Zhen Zhen did not see what happened earlier so she did not know why Ji Wu Jiu rushed out, but still she followed him out.

Seems like the little mynah was quite used to being thrown on to other people’s head. After hitting the empress dowager, it dropped to the floor, rolled twice, got up and flew away.

Though it was definitely something new for the empress dowager, she nearly fell down, but luckily her personal maid managed to hold on to her in time, did she only manage to stand properly. Currently she was holding on to her forehead and scolding “Who was so daring!”

Her maid was helping the empress dowager check her injuries as well as saying “Empress dowager, please calm down”

In front of them, Ji Wu Jiu and Ye Zhen Zhen was coming out, the empress dowager smiled coldly and said “ I didn’t know, now that Kun Ning Palace has also becomes somewhere that I am forbidden to enter”

Ye Zhen Zhen just finished greeting the empress dowager and wanted to explain, but Ji Wu Jiu made a move first “Mother, please don’t be angry, just now it was just a muddle headed bird, that does not have eyes, and flew towards you, it seems like mother have received some shock” while ordering someone else “Feng You De, quickly call for the imperial doctor”. Definitely not mentioning who threw the bird out.

Those who followed the empress dowager over, actually managed to see what happened earlier, but since Ji Wu Jiu does not admit, who dares to speak about it?

“No need” The empress dowager stopped Feng you De, “I am fine”

“Although there might be nothing wrong, but we should still get the imperial doctor to take a look, for us to worry less” Ye Zhen Zhen knew that the reason

why the empress dowager is here was to look for trouble, therefore she acted to be very sweet “It’s a rare occasion for mother to come visit Kun Ning Palace, it really makes this place much more benevolent. Please come inside Mother” She said while having the intention to help the empress dowager in.

The empress dowager does not accept her fake pleasantries, and avoided her hand, and went into Kun Ning Palace herself.

Ye Zhen Zhen pouted behind her, but when she looked up she saw Ji Wu Jiu looking at her, so she decided to show him her tongue instead.

The empress dowager was not in the mood to deal with Ye Zhen Zhen today. The moment she sat down, without any small talk, she went straight to the point, “Confucius said, if one does not keep their promises, they will be looked down upon, this sentence even me, an elderly woman would know. The emperor as the leader of the nation, how can you break promises, I don’t think this should be something that an emperor should do?”

Ji Wu Jiu acted blur and replied “Of course I would accept the teachings from Confucius, and not dare act otherwise, what is the reason behind mother’s accusation?”

“You clearly promised me, that you would lighten the punishment towards Xu family, however now both mother and son is getting beheaded, how will you explain this?” The empress dowager was angry.

Ji Wu Jiu answered “For this matter, I was intending to tell you. I really did reduce the punishment, originally I wanted to exterminate the entire clan, but now for me to only kill off 2 masters and 2 servants only, this is really very light punishment already”

Ye Zhen Zhen secretly showed her thumb to him, really despicable!

“It was only a kid saying some rumours, was there a need for such a hassle, that you need to take lives? How are you properly doing your job as a ruler?”

“What some rumours? Today he dares to speak ill of the empress, tomorrow he will dare to speak ill about me. To say that he is trying to challenge the royal and to belittle them, I don’t think there is any wrong in that”

Hearing the word “Challenge the royal” the empress dowager’s anger reduced.

But still not satisfied she answered “Then what about your uncle? To be sent so far away? Do you know what place is this QiongZhou? Such a quiet place, with dangers lurking around everywhere, after going there... will they still be able to survive?”

“This question was also thought over by me. I have always been thinking, when they start to create all this rumours have they ever thought about their own lives”

The empress dowager took a deep breath ,”You....”

“Mother, although you have been staying in the palace all along, but you would have ears everywhere, the things that they have done outside, I am sure you are clearer about it then me, if the cases were to really be calculated clearly, I am sure you know their ending would not just be banishment.”

The empress dowager notice the threat behind his words, therefore after letting out a deep sigh, “However, they are still your family, you should leave some face”

Ji Wu Jiu also sighed “So many years, I have given enough face. This time they dared to throw the face that I have given to them on the ground, then I can only pick it back up, and give the face to those who earns it”

The empress dowager laughed coldly, “It seems like the emperor has really grown, and no longer has a place for his mother in his heart anymore”

Ji Wu Jiu answered “I am the emperor, in my heart there is only the nation. I have always place mother in my eyes, though I am not sure if mother has been doing the same. If mother really thinks that I am purposely troubling the Xu family, then I would not deny. Only one thing, mother thought that I was the one who caused the downfall of the Xu Family, but the real person who has caused them to fall was you.”

Ye Zhen Zhen looked at him as though as he has become a porcupine, every sentence he said was poking the empress dowager till she turns green, somehow she felt very good.

The empress dowager left while crying, since she did not manage to get anything, she can only left a few words about an unfilial son and left. This time

round, Ji Wu Jiu has hardened his heart and would not give way, however they were still mother and son, to come to this point, it shows on his face the disappointment.

Ye Zhen Zhen was a little worried, "This time, your actions were rather brutal, what if they scold you..." The 'they' mentioned was actually referring to the ministers.

Ji Wu Jiu waved his hands, "no worries, since no matter what I do, they will still scold me somehow, I got used to it"

Ye Zhen Zhen grabbed his hands and asks "Then would they scold me, saying that I caused the disparity between you and your mother?"

Ji Wu Jiu patted her hand, and said "After what happened recently, who dares to scold you?"

Ye Zhen Zhen saw that he was still unhappy, so she started another topic, "in another few days, the representatives from the 3 losing enemy would be coming here to send gifts, I wonder what type of treasure would they be bringing along?"

Ji Wu Jiu arrogantly say "What treasures can they have.....but, I have an idea"
"What?"

"I think that the land at Liao Dong, facing towards Nu Zhen tribe is black, seems like it is highly nourished, although it is rather dry there, but who knows if it can grow anything"

Ye Zhen Zhen answered upon listening to him, "If that place can really grow crops, then it would be great. The population over there is little, while the lands are vast, so their crops production would definitely be more than what can be eaten, the extra crops can be sent to Nan Yun, where they can be send over via the land or water way, but no matter which way, it would still be faster than getting crops from Nan Wang. This way, not only the crops can be sent over faster, but it would also reduce the need of logistics. With supplies from both ends, even if any plagues or droughts were to happen, it would not be a problem anymore"

"Clever" Ji Wu Jiu tapped her forehead, in his heart he was thinking, if one to

were to get a wife, her head must be intelligent, that way when speaking he would not need to explain too much. You just have to mention one sentence, then she can think about the rest herself.

What was most important was, she knows how to control her intelligence, never using it to trick others.

Ye Zhen Zhen saw Ji Wu Jiu was in a daze, so she pushed him gently, and asks “Then your majesty, are you planning to have Nu Zhen hand over their land?”

Ji Wu Jiu nodded “That is what I intend to”

“Will they agree?”

“it would not be up to them, “ As the losing team, as well as losing so much arm power, and also daring to attack his Da Qi, they should have expected this type of ending.

“But”, Ye Zhen Zhen frowned, “but still growing crops are still tougher than grass, what if nothing grows there?”

“That’s why we need to do some experiments first. We have so many types of crops in Da Qi, there should be a few that would be suitable” Ji Wu Jiu answered.

Suddenly, Ye Zhen Zhen brightens up, “A few days ago, Matthew sent me some things from his country, there was corn and potatoes, which are from their country. If our own crops are not able to grow, we can try to grow those from Matthew. O, as well as the sweet potatoes from Cong Lu.

Ji Wu Jiu only managed to grasp the word “Matthew” from her entire sentence. His perception towards this person is extremely bad, the way that person looks at Ye Zhen Zhen was as lovestruck as can be, making it hard for him to be not angry. Thinking back, Ji Wu Jiu realized that his feelings of jealousy started from then, was it possible that he has already taken a liking for her since then?

“Yea, that Matthew, the one that got his butt whacked by you” Ye Zhen Zhen hinted him.

Ji Wu Jiu frowned, “You saw him again?”

Ye Zhen Zhen answered, “ Nope, he does not dare to enter the palace, so he

asked Mr Dou to pass it to be”

Ji Wu Jiu’s frowned was released.

At night, Ye Zhen Zhen ordered the kitchen to prepare some dishes using, potatoes, sweet potatoes and corn, wanting to let Ji Wu Jiu try some. Since they have never seen these things before, it made the kitchen create some kind of method to cook the items, but the things that were created was not surprising. Ji Wu Jiu felt that they taste normal, not really tasty, but not to the point that they cannot be eaten, using them to avoid hunger would still be alright. Ye Zhen Zhen however thought that the roasted sweet potatoes, was quite good, and sweet, although the cooking style was abit rustic. So she have quite a few pieces.

The result was, she was going to burst from being full.

This is the longesttttttt chapter i have seen so far. Part 2 is equally long, and 19sx.... so.. its gonna take some time for me to translate.. hehehe! but i guarantee to those that are looking forward to them being intimate would not be dissapointed.. lalalalalallaalalalaa ~~~~~ I try to get both chapter 72 part 2 and 73 fully translated before i post them... cause i need to do it in a secluded place =X

BTW!! Those who noticed that chapter 62 was odd, and did not seem to continue to 63, thanks to a fellow reader, notifying me that there is another part, i have translated that too, and has updated the chapter 62 post, the new parts are beyond the Updated line...

2

This is the full remaining chapter of Chapter 72, which was equivalent to a normal 2 chapters length.. the author is on a roll i tell you... I have combined the sneak peak parts as well.. and to a full part cause i will only link this page to the "Translation" page.

[18 yrs old and above, or read at your own discretion]



Chicken Feather
Game "Jian Zi"

After dinner, she took a bath, where she had to fend off Ji Wu Jiu who wanted to take the opportunity to "attack" her. After that she only finally felt better after drinking a cup of digestive tea made by Su Feng. Ji Wu Jiu who got wet from being thrown out from the bathing room, decided to take a bath there instead of returning to his palace. After his bath, in his inner garments he walked towards Ye Zhen Zhen who was sitting by the window reading. Grabbing on to her book, and smiled "It's time for me to eat right?"

Ye Zhen Zhen was deep engrossed in her book, so she replied "It is still early, give it to me"

"Give what to you?" Ji Wu Jiu raises the book up, not allowing her to grab it, looking at her arms coming over to snatch it.

Ye Zhen Zhen was only thinking about snatching the book back, but she accidentally used too much force and fell straight on to Ji Wu Jiu's body instead, subconsciously she grabbed on to his waist to steady herself, her face landed straight on to his stomach area, her chin resting on a certain part of his body.

Ji Wu Jiu could not resist against such actions, with just a little touch from her chin, his little brother woke up from its slumber with extreme speed.

Ji Wu Jiu held her shoulders, and purposely overreacted with a moan, smiling he added “Zhen Zhen, whats the rush?”

Her cheeks felt hot, and turning her head to the side, she took a bite on his waist. Ji Wu Jiu was a martial artist, his body is fit and toned, and lacking of fats. With a layer of clothing apart, it does not seem like she was biting him, but more like a row of teeth brushing through his skin.

To be grazed over lightly like that, Ji Wu Jiu felt comfort spreading from his waist, his little brother getting even more active. With some movements, he push Ye Zhen Zhen on the bed, and hands going into her clothes, caressing her.

Ye Zhen Zhen was still thinking about the words earlier, so she was not really paying much attention.

Ji Wu Jiu pushed her inner clothes away and saw her red undergarment with a pair of embroidered mandarin ducks, feeling warmer, he bend down to lightly peck those mandarin ducks, moving upwards, he started kissing the mounts on Ye Zhen Zhen’s body. The peak of the mount needs to be extra cared, Ji Wu Jiu was sucking on it, using his tongue to play around, as well as his teeth to lightly nip on it, and back to kissing it. With only a light layer of clothing in between the skins, he was carefully enjoying the figure of the enticer below him, his saliva making the cloth wet. The originally shining and light silk, has turned somewhat warm and damp. Ye Zhen Zhen was feeling the warmth and dampness that was brushing against her skin, in addition to Ji Wu Jiu’s tongue skills, the feeling went straight to her heart, to be tormented, bullied, and loved, the comfort.... She was won over by this type of feeling, and has truly forgotten about the book on the floor now. She closes her eyes, and subconsciously push her body higher, as though as she was asking for more.

After servicing both her beans, looking at her ambiguous facial expression, he removes her clothes, except for the red undergarment. On the highest peak of the undergarment, there appears to be 2 wet patches accordingly.

Ji Wu Jiu was kissing her body downwards. Kissing her white and tender skins, her inner thighs, his anxiousness makes the muscles at the thigh vibrate, moans

coming out from his throat.

Ji Wu Jiu was staring in between her legs, he has never smelled this place before, and has never even thought of trying. But towards Ye Zhen Zhen.... Without thinking, he bends his head down, his lips was already placed at her most private place.

Ye Zhen Zhen's increasing heartbeat suddenly dropped. She immediately got up, moved backwards, and pushed him away. Looking at the person in front of her now, with red lips, as pretty as a flower, his gaze long lost his normal calm and collected ways, but now replaced with a hint of madness.

"Are you mad!" Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly say. As the king of the nation, he actually, actually....

Ji Wu Jiu's lips curved up, but he did not answer. He grabbed on to Ye Zhen Zhen's leg and pulled her back, spreading them open, and continued to do his incomplete task.

Ye Zhen Zhen's soul was taken away by his smirk, and when she regain her senses, his tongue is already performing it's magic. Her entire body was stiff, though her lower body is feeling the upmost ecstasy, which was starting to spread throughout her entire body. She was afraid, but also feeling good, the more afraid she felt, the more she felt good...

"You.. You.. don't... " Ye Zhen Zhen said, while a drop of tear streams down her face, though no one is sure if it was due to being afraid or because it felt too good.

Ji Wu Jiu stopped his movements, lift his heads up and looks at her, with a very gentle and seductive gaze. With a lowered tone of voice, "Who is mad? His voice as smooth as the Milk Tea that was made by the highest quality of Da Hong Tea.

Ye Zhen Zhen was currently holding the bed with both her hands, legs spread wide open, looking at him peeking from her lower body, lips moist with a shimmering liquid. She got embarrassed and turned her head aside, and wanted to close her legs, but was held in position by him, making her unable to move.

Ji Wu Jiu went back down to kiss her, thinking of ways to tease her.

Ye Zhen Zhen was kissed to the point of no return, her brains were starting to

be a blur, like a being visited by a tornado, and was becoming only aware of the increasing feeling that was spreading.

After a while, Ji Wu Jiu once again lifts his head up and asks “Who is mad?”

“N.....” Ye Zhen Zhen looks at him with eyes filled with want.

Ji Wu Jiu did not do anything, but only looked at her and asks her again, “Who is mad?”

Ye Zhen Zhen twists her waist and went all out, “Me! I am mad!”

Ji Wu Jiu smiled, and tease her further “Then what should we do?”

“Give me, quickly give me...” she requested sweetly with a hint of plead.

“Understood” Ji Wu Jiu said, bend down and starts kissing her again, this time much more intense.

Ye Zhen Zhen felt like she was a falling leaf, that was brought up and down by the blowing wind, up and down, up and down.

Ji Wu Jiu likes this Ye Zhen Zhen. Needing him and showing him that she needs him without restraint. To be needed by someone really builds a very satisfying feeling in him, looking at her going crazy from his actions. She was a sail boat in the sea, and he was the big waves, controlling her, bringing her up and down the rough seas.

Ji Wu Jiu has always felt that, he and Ye Zhen Zhen has a type of compatibility in bed that was beyond ordinary. As though as they were meant to meet each other, to be a pair, and to be the perfect pair.

As a person, one will meet many people in their life, but on this world, there would only be one person that will truly be the right one to be linked to you for the entire lives. There are so many people on earth, if you are able to meet that person, then it really was the benevolence granted by the heavens.

The both of them was entangled together for a long time that night, Ye Zhen Zhen was pushed towards the climax by Ji Wu Jiu till she got goosebumps, and because Ji Wu Jiu wants to quickly have a second generation, he made sure all his seeds were all placed into her body, and to make sure it stays there, he blocked the exit. That was why, on the next day when Ye Zhen Zhen woke up, she felt

weird, and when she turned around, his little brother slowly slid out from her body.

Blushing, Ye Zhen Zhen pushes Ji Wu Jiu away, however she was lacking of strength, so it was like he didn't move at all, more like helping him scratch a little

Ji Wu Jiu was awake, and purposely didn't move when he saw her woke up. Seeing that she has turned her body around, he went towards her and spoke to her ears, "No longer the person who is pleading me like yesterday night already? Hmm?" He said with a hint of laziness while smiling. Today there was no court, meaning that there was no rush for him to get up, so he started to chat with Ye Zhen Zhen on the bed instead.

The both of them were not wearing any clothes, skin against skin, although not as heated up as yesterday night, there exists a very sweet and satisfying feeling between them. Ji Wu Jiu made sure Ye Zhen Zhen was tightly in his embrace. Using his chin, he slowly pushes against Ye Zhen Zhen's collar bone, with a low voice, "Zhen Zhen, I don't think I can ever leave you, what should I do?" The scene was like a very ferocious yet very gentle beast meeting his own mate, asking for love.

Ye Zhen Zhen lifted her eyelids — she only has enough energy to lift her eyelids now, "Your majesty, I think you should take care of your body better, you can't always—"

Ji Wu Jiu turned her face over and silenced her. This woman, shouldn't sweet talks be said after being intimate, even if nothing is said, she should also obediently listen to his sweet talk, why is she saying this type of thing to kill the mood.

Ji Wu Jiu felt that what Ye Zhen Zhen said was right, he needs to take care of his body. Therefore on his off day today, he didn't go over his official documents, but to accompany Ye Zhen Zhen to play at the imperial garden.

But of course, towards the chicken feather kicking game, our prestigious emperor would not really join in, so his duties were limited to helping her collect the feather went it got caught up the trees or roofs.

The helper was actually rather useful.

Therefore the many people surrounding them was speechless when they saw the empress ordering the emperor like how she would order a little eunuch to pick up her feather, not only that but the person being ordered does not seem to mind it one bit and also seem to be very very willing. So everyone there was looking at them without blinking, as though as a heavenly god has visited them.

When Fang Liu Yue passed by that area, she looked down and walks away. Zhuang Concubine who was nearby turned around and saw her, so she called her from within the pavilion. Fang Liu Yue was a Zhao Yi only now, a few positions below Zhuang Concubine, to be called over by her now, she will definitely need to come over to greet her. In the imperial palace now, besides the empress, the next highest in position was Zhuang Concubine, the previous her who was at the same rank now needs to kneel down and perform the greetings to her.

Although no one really said anything, but they all knew the rivalry between the two of them was actually the rivalry between the empress and the empress dowager, it seems like the winner was very clear at the moment.

Zhuang Concubine's anger rose when she saw Fang Zhao Yi. The found out about the culprit behind the pastry case, it was that woman's fault, luckily the empress was benevolent and did not punish her for being reckless. Zhuang Concubine's best attribute was not making pastries, but to scold people, to meet Fang Zhao Yi, she could not help but to scold her. Fang Zhao Yi did not dare to rebuke, clenching her teeth and face turning red.

After releasing her anger did Zhuang Concubine let Fang Zhao Yi leave. The moment she walked out the pavilion, she heard many woman praising and laughing with Zhuang Concubine, and mentioning empress here and there. When she raised her head, she saw Ye Zhen Zhen chasing her toy, though a little careless, she fell down, but luckily Ji Wu Jiu was near here, and managed to catch her. He helps her up properly, and rubbed her head, and said something to her while smiling.

That scene was very painful to the eyes, therefore Fang Zhao Yi can only start to think about how Ji Wu Jiu cannot perform in bed, did she only felt better and she then could turn and leave.

In the afternoon, Ji Wu Jiu left Tang Gate, and went to Cui Fang Lou.

He came to bid farewell to Hong Yun, as well as to say his thanks, and to give her more money. Ji Wu Jiu originally wanted to bring Ye Zhen Zhen to meet up with Hong Yun, and also wanted to tell her clearly why he went to the brothel, but thinking back it was best to keep it low, so he did not invite her along.

Not meeting him for some time, Hong Yun was very happy the moment she saw Ji Wu Jiu and can't help but to tease him. It can't be help, he has a very tease able face.

"Gentlemen, not meeting you for a few days, there seems to be some huge changes in you" Hong Yun smiled while waving her handkerchief, sending over a strong fragrance smell.

Ji Wu Jiu moved his noses uncomfortably and asks "Why do you say so?"

"I am not too sure, just that I felt you have changed, like you have changed all your bones and skins, like a whole new person. Its like,... like a woman that popped her cherry, and was ready to comb up her hair to be a daughter in law"

Such a comparison. Ji Wu Jiu frowned, "I came today to bid farewell, and to tell you I would not come anymore"

Hong Yun got interested, "Seems like, you have managed to settle you wife?"

Ji Wu Jiu nodded, although with a emotionless face, but Hong Yun can feel his joy when he was nodding.

Hong Yun can't help but to praise him, "Seems like Gentlemen, you are really something. This type of sickness is not easy to cure, there are some who can't clear it their whole live", she paused and saw that his face was happy, as though as he was remembering something, with a warm smile lingering on his face, Hong Yun continued, "If according to me, I think the reason the sickness was cured was because she has you in her heart"

This sentence was truly too nice to hear, each word entered straight into Ji Wu Jiu's heart. Therefore, Ji Wu Jiu smiled widely, "That is of course"

His smile was too bright, it blinded Hong Yun for a while, she couldn't help but

to sigh, “Ai Yoyo, Gentlement! This is the first time I have seen you smile, such a luck for me. You really came from the heavens, how can a normal person look like you. You should really smile more for your wife, you shouldn’t waste what is given. As for the rest of the women, if you can don’t smile at them, then don’t, if not you will attract unnecessary problems”

Although her bootlicking skills was a little extreme, but Ji Wu Jiu did not find it unpleasing, and nodded honestly to answer her.

Hong Yun asks, “I still have a question.... To be honest it has nothing to do with me, but looking at how far you have gone with your wife, I also feel very happy, that is why I want to ask, what would you do to the rest of your concubines?”

Ji Wu Jiu shook his head, “There is nothing I can do, it is not like I can bury all of them alive”

Hong Yun clenched her shoulders, “your thinking..... hehe”

Ji Wu Jiu said “No worries, they no longer dares to do anything stupid”

“Anyway, the rules in your noble houses are plenty, I would not know them also” Hong Yun said, “That is why I wouldn’t be able to help much on that matter, but as a woman I would advice you, even if next time you happen to argue with your wife, you should think more from your wife’s perspective. It is not easy to be a woman, and certainly not easy to meet with the right pair, don’t harm your relationship with her for some little or unnecessary things.”

Ji Wu Jiu once again nodded, “That would be natural. You have helped me a lot, and since I can’t help you much, these money, you should keep them. “ He said while he place a stack of money on the table.

Hong Yun’s eyes was shining when she saw the money, and laughed, “I also did not want other forms of gratitude, only money. Gentlemen, you are too kind, I helped you, and you helped me, to be honest, the money that I have earned from you, is way more than then money I have earned all together from Cui Fang Lou. I also don’t know how to repay you, I will gift you some other things, these are my personal collection.” She said while turning around to go out, after a while, she was carrying a box when she returns. There was made out of wood, and very intricately designed, with a silver lock.

She opened the lock, and took out two books from the box. She chose one and passed it to Ji Wu Jiu. “Here, take a look”

Ji Wu Jiu receives it and took a look, the front cover was a naked lady. He flipped it once and closes it, and gave it back to her, his face showing a little discomfort, “Why are you giving me these?”

Hong Yun smiled, “Gentlemen, don’t be angry, took a better look at it, this is not a normal adult book. It is more like a guide book for men, to teach men how to please woman, sometimes woman needs to be pleased too. This book, teaches one how to please a woman.”

Ji Wu Jiu once again flips the book after hearing her explanation, and started to look at it in detail, indeed there is something different. When he got to the third page, he saw what he did to Ye Zhen Zhen, with the technique called “Turning the lady drunk”. Thinking back about yesterday night, how her dreamy moans were, his heart went hot, his face turned red.

Hong Yun calls out to him, “Gentlemen? Already addicted to it?”

Ji Wu Jiu regain his sense, and stuffs the book into his chest, and asks “Is there anything else?”

“Yes, the book you were holding was the beginners version, I still have the intermediate and advanced level.” Hong Yun said, and took out another two books.

The higher the level the most intense the flavor was. Ji Wu Jiu’s face was red when he flip through the intermediate book, when he saw the advanced book, he got goosebumps, and passes back the book to her with only one glance, “No need for this one”

Hong Yun can only smiled and keep the book back.

Hong Yun then took out another book, about a men’s anatomy. Ji Wu Jiu saw some were longer, some were shorter, thinner, fatter...there was also some with weird shapes, it was weird and interesting for him, the author of that book was really intriguing, to be able to gather so many types of.....

Looking at him frown, Hong Yun wanted to keep back the book, but Ji Wu Jiu has already started to stuff it into his clothes. It was just that there were too

many things already inside, and it can't fit anymore, so he can only request for a little bag from Hong Yun, to take this few books back.

Besides those books, Ji Wu Jiu also took a blueprint book about things that could be used in the bedroom. Actually those things, Hong Yun have the actual item, but knowing the person in front of her likes to be clean, he would not be willing to use the things used in a brothel before, so she also didn't give him, and let him go get it himself.

Since it was farewell, Ji Wu Jiu chatted a little more with Hong Yun. When he came out, he was holding a little package, face full of vigor and a little happy. Feng You De who saw it as his side, felt a little calmer.

Ji Wu Jiu was a boring man. After he returned, He locks himself up in the room, and was looking and verifying his little brother with the book he got earlier, at the end of the day the verdict was: High Quality.

Therefore he was very satisfied. In the heat of the moment, he took out the blueprint book and look at it properly. After a few pages, he couldn't help but sigh, "The world has things that even I don't know off"

There was plenty of time, so Ji Wu Jiu was not in a hurry to learn everything that was on those books, but instead just chose a few of the initial ones, and decided to try it out on Ye Zhen Zhen that night.

Therefore Ye Zhen Zhen still has not recovered today, so her mind was still not very agile yet. Ji Wu Jiu was very active, with the few techniques he got, he has managed to turned Ye Zhen Zhen into of pile of spring water, allowing him to do as he wish.

Looking at how Ye Zhen Zhen managed to reach climax under his service, Ji Wu Jiu finally understood what was called bed servicing.

From then on, he never looked back on the route of bed servicing, and went ahead further and further.

(The last two sentence kinda meant, he finally understood what was true s*x, and is enjoying more and more.)

Chapter 73

(peeks)....."hi" hehehe ~ short filler chapter.. sorry for my disappearance...

My boss came back with a vengeance after giving me my CNY break.. ahahaha =X won't be able to promise fixed updates... (not that my updates were fixed... but yeah..)

If one to ask what was the most popular topic amongst the citizens, it definitely would not be how Da Qi won over the battles against their enemy, it wasn't about how peaceful times are now, but instead its about the reincarnation of a deity in the empress.

Ding Shun Teahouse is one of the top teahouse in the capital, recently it was packed to the brim, and the people who went there was not for the tea, but for Capital's No 1 Mouth, Liu Jun Xian.

Book reading has always been the same, perhaps sometimes there was a change in the background, the characters or location. Therefore whenever there is a new story and an interesting one at that, with an eloquent reader, then all you have to wait is to collect money.

Somehow this Liu Jun Xian, came out with a story, speaking about how the empress was a reincarnation of a deity, as well as accompanying the emperor to war. His story about the empress was spoke with vigor and attractively about the empress, with the addition of the battle stories, made the listeners blood heat up. His story was separated into 5 parts, each day he will read about one part, and continued with the second part only on the next day and so on. Everytime he finished one part, the next day there would be more people arriving to listen to his story. When the entire tea house was already filled with people, those with martial arts or were stronger actually was listening from beyond the walls, climbing on to trees or pillars. From far, the teahouse looked really funny, from all the hanging people.

When all 5 parts was told, Liu Jun Xian will restart the story again, however the

amount of people listening to it, does not seem to reduce. That is most probably because there were so many people in the capital that did not manage to listen to all 5 parts. Furthermore, when a story is interesting, no matter how many times they have heard it, as long as the person reading it was good at it, the crowd will naturally follow along.

The teahouse owner business's was greatly improved, and Liu Jun Xian also made a fortune himself.

The other story tellers in the capital, listened to Liu Jun Xian's story and went back, changed the story a little bit and started their own story telling. As their skill cannot be compared with him, the amount of people they receive are way lesser in comparison. However, they still get some customers, as Ding Chun teahouse is always full. The stories they created turned the empress into different varieties, from being a hopeless romantic to a charismatic person.

Therefore the current trend of the capital was none other than the empress. No matter old, young, rich or poor, they all seem to have something to say about the empress. The love stories between the emperor and the empress, the empress fighting demons, etc etc..

In a short period, the theatre people started to turn the empress's stories into songs, which also turned into a hit. There are 4 famous theatre houses in the capital, and amongst them, Shuang Xi Theatre house is considered the best. In this theatre house, their best singer was actually a fatty, called Chang Xiao Yuan, that can be said as the number one singer in the capital. His song about the empress was also the most popular, and his sessions are always full. Even Liu Jun Xian went to visit his show. Every time Chang Xiao Yuan were to sing, the applause for him would be almost endless. However, looking at the roundish "Niang niang" on stage really puts one into thought, on whether this act was beautifying the empress or not.

Liu Jun Xian felt abit nervous, because this tasks was given to him by the emperor personally, it was not right to say he himself did a good job. Therefore he went to look for the communication method that Ji Wu Jiu left him to meet with the emperor. After listening to his report, Ji Wu Jiu was very happy, and awarded him with many things, and looked for Nu Zhen slave who was not being good to be sentenced to the jail for causing trouble, in order to reply to the talks

in the capital.

After a few days, Ji Wu Jiu personally written a wooden plaque with the words “Shu Jing Si Zuo” and got it delivered to Ding Shun tea house. Immediately the owner of the teahouse immediately cleared a space for Liu Jun Xian’s storytelling sessions and a place for him to hang his plaque there, the moment it was hanged, the amount of envy was unlimited. To be honest, Ji Wu Jiu was someone who could write very well, but he does not like to boast around, therefore his works are not easily found, a lot of high ranking ministers didn’t even get the honour, but for a normal storyteller to obtain such an honour, was really too much.

After that, Liu Jun Xian officially became the no 1 storyteller nationwide.

Ever since then the empress’s name was carried in high prestige, the emperor however was faced with his first ever scandal.

The case was like this. He has been to Cui Fang Lou for so many times, someone would be bound to see him, it was impossible to cover everyone’s mouth, therefore on his final visit to Cui Fang Lou, to end his relations there, the news of him visiting a brothel was spread out.

For a men to visit the brothel, besides getting scolded from their parents and wife, other people wouldn’t bother much. The case however was different for the emperor, don’t’ even think of avoiding talks, for them to not take records of you when you are with your empress in the bedroom was already considered very lenient. Now, for one to dare to visit a brothel?

Hence, the ministers once again attack Ji Wu Jiu.

Not to mention the case now is vastly different. Earlier we mentioned that the empress was highly respected by the citizens now. So with such a good wife at home, you ignored and actually dared to visit a brothel?

Actually, the emperor’s will cannot be questioned, if it was a normal empress, then the citizens wouldn’t really say anything. But who let this empress was an reincarnation of a deity, to marry the emperor was totally giving him face.

Hearing such comment really made Ji Wu Jiu speechless. Afraid that Ye Zhen Zhen will think too much, so he went to her and came clean, after listening to

him, she was extremely touched and has consoled Ji Wu Jiu that night very well.

Although managed to settle his wife, but he still can't ignore the talks. The citizens are making the gossip worst and worst, and the words they use are more and more ignorant.

But how to settle? To purposely write an edict to explain the entire story to them, stating the real reason he visited the brothel and claiming that he still loves his wife very much? This was not an easy matter to explain after all.

Ji Wu Jiu originally thought that after a few days, the scandal will die down. But with the talks about the empress still going on, whenever she was mentioned, stories about him will be linked somehow or other. Whenever they start to praise the empress, someone will sigh and say why did the emperor went to a brothel.. In the end, Ji Wu Jiu wrote an edict saying, that his actions was not right, and promises to change, did the scandal started to die down.

Someone however came out with an evil idea, trying to get others to catch Hong Yun from Cui Fang Lou out as she was the culprit. When Ji Wu Jiu heard of this he couldn't help but to scold out that the person was stupid, Hong Yun did not even do anything wrong, how can she be taken like that....

But.. Ji Wu Jiu closes his eyes, Hong Yun is innocent, but there is someone else at Cui Fang Lou, that is not so innocent, it's time to catch her.

The next day, Ji Wu Jiu ordered for a secret capture of the Liu Yue.

Because Liu Yue was a heavy criminal, she was given a single jail cell. Considering that she was a lady, the cell was rather clean, and did not put on the leg chain for her. Liu Yue was brought in after being knocked out, the moment she woke up, she started to claim that she was innocent, and will start her wailing sessions every now and then. Her voice was very flirty, making the guards blood heat up outside.

The people guarding her has already received orders to not torture her, but also to ignore her. Although this lady kept saying she was innocent, but she did not really create any troubles, still eating when it was time to eat, seemingly taking care of herself very well.

After staying there for two days, Ji Wu Jiu finally came.

After being in the jail for two days, Liu Yue was already adapting, she was holding on to the bars claiming her innocence, with a healthy face and voice full of vigor.

When Ji Wu Jiu entered the jail, he got someone to get him a round chair for him to sit. The way he sat was really elegant and nice, totally different from the atmosphere in the jail.

Bending, Liu Yue went towards him and said to him, “Gentlemen, it’s you” her voice carrying a hint of sorrow.

“it’s me” Ji Wu Jiu answered.

“Gentlemen, save me...” she said while suddenly kneeling in front of him, looking at him with tears forming at her eyes.

Ji Wu Jiu raises his eyebrows, “It’s no big deal to save you, but first I must see your sincerity”

Liu Yue’s face turned slightly red, and stuttered a little “Gentlemen, as long as you save me, you... I will do what ever you want”

Ji Wu Jiu lightly pushes her hand away, and said “Kang Cheng Lu did not die. If you were to shout out now, most probably he will be able to answer you”

Liu Yue looked down, “Gentlemen, I do not know what you are talking about”

“It does not matter whether you know or not, but if you want to stay alive, you only need to tell me one thing.”

“Gentlemen, what do you want to know?”

“Where is Ji Li You?”

1

HAPPY BIRTHDAY TO ALL LEAP YEAR BABIES! if there are any reading, take this as a birthday present from me? hehehehehe *(though abit short.. seriously no time to translate the entire chapter.. all my translation is posted immediately after i translate them... very fresh from the oven.. so if any typos, or grammar mistakes, please do let me know)*

When Liu Yue heard that Ji Wu Jiu was asking about Ji Li You, she couldn't help but got surprised, “Gentleman, who? I have never heard of a person named Ji Li You”.

“You don't know?” Ji Wu Jiu looked at Liu Yue lazily, making her heart thump, “Perhaps, you would recognize Li You, instead?”

Liu Yue, making a pitiful look, with a weak appearance, said “Gentleman, I do not understand what you are saying, I have always been abiding the law, I think.. you perhaps has caught the wrong person? I can tell that Gentleman, is a good person, I hope you would quickly investigate this matter, and let me out. This place is really scary.”

Her eyes red, with tears threatening to drip down, looking extremely pitiful, if any normal men would to see her, their heart to protect her would definitely increase. Ji Wu Jiu however, does not fall for her tricks. He slowly lifted his calf, and towards Liu Yue who wanted to move towards him, he kicked her away. The latter did not know that he will do that, falling back her butt hitting on the floor hard. This time round, her tears was already down her face.

“If I did not properly investigate, I would not invite you here.” Ji Wu Jiu said slowly, “I have always had something that, I couldn't figure out, for such a prosperous Da Qi, to be attacked by Nu Zhen Tribe, Da Da and Tu Lu Fan, at the same time, wondering what wrong medicine did they eat. No matter how I thought about it, there could only be 1 reason, there should be someone giving them some benefits, and also providing them with the right advantages. This type of person, should not be someone outside, can only be someone internally. Also not definitely not your daily traitor, he would definitely be related to the

royal family, so that he can claim to be the emperor himself. Do you agree with me?”

Liu Yue looked down, “ Gentleman, I don’t understand”

Ji Wu Jiu continued talking to himself, “Previously when there was havoc in the palace, (referring to his father’s generation), the crown prince was only three years old, and was unfortunately killed during the havoc. Actually a small kid would not easily be recognized, except for those that were serving him directly, therefore for a case of exchange to happen would not be hard. That kid’s name was called Ji Li You, after being saved he has been living amongst the mass with a different name, now that he has grown up, he has the thoughts of overthrowing the emperor and claiming it for himself. You guys, first tried your best to bribe the internal guards, or perhaps that guard was originally your person. Then trying to use the opportunity to assassinate the emperor when there was conflict between the concubines, so when Ji Li You was the only heir left from the royal family, he will be easily claim the throne, if it was successful, if it was a failure, then the fault can be pushed on to the concubine, making it undetectable.”

Liu Yue was still looking down, her eyes constantly moving. Ji Wu Jiu took a glance, and continue to speak, “The chances to actually assassinate the emperor is not high. The protection in the palace is very strict and strong, and when the emperor goes anywhere, he will be accompanied by powerful guards, therefore you guys were very cautious. Though, it was no big deal if you guys couldn’t assassinate the emperor, Ji Li You has always been preparing for another plan. He wants to get the aid of the other nations to help him rebel, promising them benefits after it was successful. That was why he would appear in Ji Zhou, and also appearing in the Nu Zhen Tribe’s army. It is just that he underestimated the power of Da Qi’s army, that was why he loss this round.” Ji Wu Jiu thought of Ye Zhen Zhen when he spoke of those words. This time around, the Da Qi army won all thanks to her creation of arm forces, her contributions is to be extremely appreciated. Yeap, later when he goes back, he needs to properly reward her.

“Gentlemen, your story was very entertaining, it is just that I don’t understand why you are telling it to me? I am just a woman, towards this type of news regarding the nation or revenge, am not really interested”

“I will say again, if I wasn’t prepared with evidences, I would not even capture

you. I don't need you to admit to what you have done, all you have to do is let me know where Ji Li You is. If you tell me, I can let you live, if you don't tell me, you wouldn't die too, but I would naturally let you experience something far worst from death." Ji Wu Jiu stood up, and headed out, without looking at her.

Liu Yue was standing behind him, with a movement from her arms, three silver needles flew out from her sleeves, aimed towards Ji Wu Jiu's head and back. Ji Wu Jiu's reaction was very fast, moving and avoiding them. With a blur, he was already in front of her. Hearing ding ding ding, at the back of her ears, the three needles hitting on to the pole.

Ji Wu Jiu, without caring if she was a woman, with a kick straight to her face, sending her backwards. Her head hit the window sill, Ji Wu Jiu moved forward and placed his legs on her neck, raises his voice and calls out, "Someone"

An elder leader and a few jail guards came in, "Sir, is there anything you need?"

"Change her clothes to prison attire, make sure she is cleared of her belongings"

"Yes" the leader answered, and looked at the person on the floor with shining eyes

"Also, make sure you take care of her properly.... Don't kill her"

"Yes yes... that..." the leader asks again, "We can take care of her as we like right?"

"What do you think" Ji Wu Jiu uses his leg to lift her chin.

The leader was not sure to whom he was speaking to, so he didn't reply. Liu Yue's face turned white, she quickly grabbed onto his legs and begged, "I beg you, please don't....."

Ji Wu Jiu's strength increased at his legs, and said "I will only give you three days to consider, I will not wait any longer"

Returning from the prison, Ji Wu Jiu decided to tell Ye Zhen Zhen about the true identify of Ji Li You, but thinking about how this case has not been settled

yet, and that it involves the previous generation, and might implicate a lot of the current minister, so there really wasn't any rush, when the case comes to a closing, then only tell her wouldn't be too late as well.

He and Ye Zhen Zhen was busy with something else these days as well. The 3 nations who lost was going to come and send their tributes. Although there was appointed departments to take care of them, but as the emperor, as well as wanting to understand about Li You's case, he still needs properly investigate.

Da Da and Nu Zhen's envoys reached on the same day, Tu Lu Fan only reached two days later because they were the furthest. When all of the emissaries arrived, Ji Wu Jiu organized a banquet for them. All the ministers and imperial concubines rank 4 and above are allowed to attend the banquet. And of course, the only person allowed to sit next to the emperor was the empress.

Since they were the losing parties, obviously they are here to send presents. All the tributes sent by the 3 nations were carefully documented by the ministry of personnel, its just that things can be recorded, but a live human being can't..

When to nations goes to war, the loser sending over their women, was something common. For this time, all three nations picked pretty ladies to gift to Ji Wu Jiu, and also picked daughters of high ranking families for peace marriage. For the pretty ladies, it was easy to get rid of, but for the two that were sent for peace marriage, it was not good to send away. So without much thought, he accepted the princesses into his palace and gave them the rank of Zhao Yi. The palace was filled with women anyway, adding another one or two was no problem.

Ye Zhen Zhen although felt a bit bitter in her heart, but considering the face of the emperor, she didn't say anything.

(Btw, the pronunciation for Ji Li You, and Li You is different..., in case you guys forgotten about Ji Wu Jiu's love rival?..ahaha)

2

Now it is summer, the lotus flowers at Tai Ye Lake were blossoming well. Ye Zhen Zhen wanted to view the flowers, so Ji Wu Jiu went with her to Bi Xin Pavilion. The lake's surface was peaceful and the warm wind carried the scent of the lotus flowers gently towards them, like a beautiful lady's hand caressing one's face.

Ye Zhen Zhen came out from the pavilion, and seeing the blooming flowers, she wanted to be nearer to them. Ji Wu Jiu also felt that to be intimate with her in the midst of flowers would be interesting, so he ordered a boat over.

After giving his orders, not far from them they saw someone walking towards them, making a pathway out of the flowers. Ji Wu Jiu thought that his eyes has some problem, after concentrating it really was someone walking on the flower. That person was a lady, wearing a pastel gown, face still unclear. Under her feet were lots of lotus flower, assorted colours all around, slowly drifting her towards them.

Ye Zhen Zhen was in a daze, her mouth subconsciously dropping. Ji Wu Jiu found her funny, and helped her to lift her jaws up.

That person was slowly approaching them. Ye Zhen Zhen finally saw the person's face clearly, she is the princess sent from Tu Lu Fan to enter the palace, also known as Hua Zhao Yi in the palace. This person has high eyebrows and deep eyes, high nose, mouth although slightly bigger than the central plain ladies but her lips were very full. What was most precious was her white and clear skin.

All in all it was a beautiful lady, as well as someone with romance in their bones

When the flowers were close enough, Ji Wu Jiu finally found out the trick behind it. There was a floating mechanism under her feet, that was half submerged in the water, with the help of the flowers covering it, and that the Tai Ye Lake is a moving water, with the right current it will move according to the direction, without any help.

So it was like that, how interesting.

Hua Zhao Yi stepped down from the mechanism, and slowly headed towards Ji Wu Jiu and Ye Zhen Zhen to perform her greetings, using her weak Chinese to say “Greetings to your majesty, and empress”

Ji Wu Jiu said” You may rise, raise up your head”

Hua Zhao Yi lifted her head, and looked at Ji Wu Jiu with her big pair of eyes.

Men, although their hearts can be filled, but their eyes will still like to see attractive things. The lady in front of him was pretty and elegant, so Ji Wu Jiu took a few glances, and only asked after “Who are you?”

“Replying to your majesty, I am Hua Zhao Yi.” Although her pronunciation wasn’t too good, but here etiquette was performed properly.

Ji Wu Jiu nodded, “Not bad”

Hua Zhao Yi was not sure what he was referring to, but since she was still praised, so she said “Thank you for your praises your majesty.”

Then, someone was maneuvering a boat over to the side, Ji Wu Jiu got hyped up, called everyone away and pulled Ye Zhen Zhen towards the boat. Ye Zhen Zhen however, pulled her hands away and said “I don’t want to play anymore” and left.

Ji Wu Jiu followed her and held her hands, and asks “why don’t you want to play anymore? Did you want to try the mechanism instead? She is still here, we can try it”.

Ye Zhen Zhen pushes his hands away, “Who wants to play that. I want to go back already”

Ji Wu Jiu was blurred, and could not understand why her behavior can change so fast. Frowning he asks, “Whats wrong with you?”

“I have a headache” Ye Zhen Zhen answered while looking down.

Super short chapter, i am asking myself, why i didnt finish translating this previously..

THEREFORE!!! CHAPTER 75 WILL BE UP TODAY ~~~ hehehehehe

Chapter 75

PEOPLE!! READ CHAPTER 74 PART 2 FIRST!! weeeeeeee mini double update ~ but this chapter is long too ~~ enjoy hehehehee ~ =X bet you didn't know it would be this fast.. wahahaa..

OOH! If anyone is interested in editing the previous chapters, feel free to drop a comment in any of the chapters, but when you submit the comment, include your real email address in the particulars part so that only I can see, and I will in return drop you an email after.

Cheers ~ It's 2016 March already T_T... time flies eh..

When Ye Zhen Zhen returned to Kun Ning Palace, Ji Wu Jiu called a doctor over to check on her, the verdict was that she got a slight heatstroke.

"Most probably you stood under the stand just now, you take a good rest, I will head to Yang Xin Hall to work for a while, I will come visit you at night" Ji Wu Jiu said, while touching Ye Zhen Zhen's forehead, and helping her cover the blanket properly.

Ye Zhen Zhen lazily replied "Farewell your majesty"
The moment Ji Wu Jiu left, she sat up straight, and flipped the blanket away, pulling a long face and not saying anything. Su Yue saw her expression, so she puts the medicine bowl down, "Little Matyr, what are you planning to do now?" She said, while walking towards Ye Zhen Zhen and pushes her back down to bed, and covering her with the blanket.

Ye Zhen Zhen turned her body towards the inner side of the bed, and continue to not say anything.

Su Yue asks, "Empress, whats wrong? Is there something in your heart that is making you unhappy?"

Not unhappy, but very very unhappy

Just now, the way Ji Wu Jiu looked at Hua Zhao Yi, was really painful for her to see. At that moment itself, Ye Zhen Zhen's heart was starting to heat up, and she felt really uncomfortable.

That type of anger, she cannot release it out. No matter what, Ji Wu Jiu was still the emperor, how can she point at the emperor's nose and call him a pervert. To backtrack a bit, not to mention that he can look at her all he wants, even if he wants to eat Hua Zhao Yi up, what can she, the empress say? She will still have to swallow the anger, and look at him climbing on to the other women's bed, and still at the next day she will be required to award items to the women thanking her contributions....

Thinking till here, Ye Zhen Zhen's anger returned, she has already said earlier, marrying a chicken or dog is better than marrying an emperor.

After her anger dissipated a little, Ye Zhen Zhen's heart was then approached by the feeling of uncertainty. Ji Wu Jiu is the emperor, sooner or later he will taste other women!

That feeling has always been around, it was just that she did not know how to solve the problem, so she was avoiding the problem, but seems like it cannot be avoided anymore.

So what can be done? Currently there are so many pretty and young girls twirling in front of him, he will only need to give a glance, and everyone will be willingly jumping into his arms.

Really it is too hateful!

Ye Zhen Zhen was sighing on the bed for a while, and suddenly felt that she really felt that the current her is really unlikeable. Thinking about how to fight over other women just for a man, while that despicable man would just smile at any young and beautiful women, what has she become? Today he can be gentle and thoughtful, tomorrow who knows if he will do the same towards other women.

Not worth it!! Ye Zhen Zhen thought angrily, he is not worth it. She will not be jealous because of him.

On the other side, Ji Wu Jiu who was going through his reports suddenly looked up, eyes brightening up. Putting Feng You De who was by his side on alert, thinking in his heart, who does the emperor want to target this time? In his alert mode, his ears were trying to listen to any movements, he did not hear any complaints coming out from Ji Wu Jiu, but only heard him spoke one sentence.

“Don’t tell me, she is jealous?”

Ji Wu Jiu recalls what happened in the afternoon, Ye Zhen Zhen’s mood changed only after seeing Hua Zhao Yi. Maybe, she felt insecure when she saw how pretty Hua Zhao Yi was? If it was really so, then he will need to properly console her.

Whether or not you are pretty is decided by me, there is nothing to do with what others say. I feel like you are the prettiest woman on earth..... from Yang Xin Hall, till Kun Ning Palace, Ji Wu Jiu was properly planning his script.

Ye Zhen Zhen was still in a mental mess. Initially she knew why she was unhappy, but till the end she ended up thinking about all the unhappy things that is not related. Su Yue wanted to console her, but did not know what happened, so she did not open her mouth. Her master was a kind person, and does not get angry often, although if someone really did make her angry, after playing a few tricks she will be fine, to be in her condition now, pulling such a long face, without speaking a word. Although she was still young, but her angry face was like a tiger, making people stay away from her.

When Ji Wu Jiu saw Ye Zhen Zhen, he smiled “Your anger is making other people happy, why are you doing this to yourself?”

Ye Zhen Zhen answered while looking down, “ I am not angry”

“Still say that you are not angry” Ji Wu Jiu lightly carry up her chin, “take a look at your face, I can scare people away if I put it at the door”

Ye Zhen Zhen was forced to look up, but eye sight was avoiding him.

Ji Wu Jiu took a peck on her nose, and smiled, “If you keep acting like this, wouldn’t you be afraid that I go look for someone else?”

This sentence touched her wound badly, Ye Zhen Zhen turned her face away from his grasp, and answered. “Go ahead, you can go to whoever you want, There are so many women in the palace waiting for your visit, don’t let me stop you.”

Ji Wu Jiu got a little unhappy, he straighten his body, and coldly said “What are you saying now”

Ye Zhen Zhen replied, “The truth”

Calming himself down, Ji Wu Jiu pushed his harsh words away and said “ I know you are jealous”

Ye Zhen Zhen purposely laughed exaggeratingly, “Your majesty you are being funny, how can I be jealous? We are officially married but don’t think too much about it. I would not put my life on such a alittle thing..... I don’t really care about it at all!”

Ji Wu Jiu felt that his heart was in deep pain. Suddenly he stood up, and stared at her. She really was not afraid of him, returning his gaze with her big eyes.

Ji Wu Jiu opened his mouth, but no words come out. Words to appease her could not come out, but harsh words didn’t want to come out either. So after the staring at each other for a while, he turned around and left.

At night, Ji Wu Jiu decided to sleep at Gan Qing Palace. Ever since the war, he has always been at Kun Ning Palace, therefore Gan Qing palace seems more like a temporary living area. The palace was very big and vast, the bigger it was the quieter it was. Laying on his enormous bed, his arms felt empty, his heart felt empty too. The feeling of being lonely was slowly creeping all over his body. Subconsciously his hands started to feel the empty space next to him, this place should have a person, someone that would be easily fit into his arms for him to hug. Only then would he be able to sleep properly.

Ji Wu Jiu got a little anxious. It seems like he really cannot be separated from her.

But she purposely said those words, words that were like knives cutting straight at his heart.

He knew her personality, if she really did not care at all, she would not appear this angry. That was why he cannot let out his temper, but although he knew that she was saying it out of anger but still he felt super sad.

It was time to teach her a little, to break through her strong walls, turning her slightly more gentle and thoughtful.

Although he meant it that way, but he still felt a little unhappy, and was unable to sleep properly at night. Hence, when he got up for court the next day, his concentration was not very good. There was a lot of things for him to handle as well. Ye Mu Fang has returned from Shandong, the water reservoir has been properly concluded, and can be used already. As well as the discussion with Nu Zhen, about sending Liao Dong as part of tribute has been concluded successfully as well.

This was all good news. However Ji Wu Jiu was still not able to fully concentrate so he handled it simply. He wanted to end the court earlier to look for Ye Zhen Zhen, but also felt that he should hold himself better, and have a cool down period from her. While he was in contemplation, the ministers started to fight.

It was none other than the Ye Xiu Ming and Fang Xiu Qing pair.

Fang Xiu Qing was recently working on a proposal to clear off and corruptions in the court, which has been earlier discussed and agreed upon by Ji Wu Jiu, this morning he raises this issue up in the court for everyone to prepare themselves.

Ye Xiu Ming's reason to argue with him was not because he was against the proposal, but it was that Fang Xiu Qing's plans were too aggressive, and might cause disturbance internally, which would be hard to rectify in the future.

The both of them were debating, with points that ended up till personal issues. People who studied before, really is different when scolding people. They were using proverbs only and any outsiders can easily recognize how talented they are in their studies.

Ji Wu Jiu who was originally restless got even more impatient, and ended up slamming the table, "Stop arguing, it makes others angry!"

The both of them stopped, and the rest of the people remained silent, unsure why the emperor is so angry today.

"You all, return to your office and argue there, after you get a verdict then only you come and meet me" Ji Wu Jiu said, while glancing through the ministers, "Is there anything else?"

Everyone took a look at the emperor's expression "Who dares, who dies", so no one dared to speak, and remained silent.

Hence the court is over.

Upon returning to Gan Qing palace, Ji Wu Jiu did not know if he should stand or sit, he knew that it was the best opportunity to teach Ye Zhen Zhen a lesson, but it was hard to fight over his will of wanting to see her.

At Kun Ning Palace, after a night of sleep Ye Zhen Zhen's anger has dissipated more or less. After breakfast, Su Yue saw that her expression was better, she slowly say, "I hope you will forgive me, but according to what I saw, what you said yesterday was really hurtful"

Though Ye Zhen Zhen was slightly regretting what she said yesterday, she also wouldn't let herself accept that she was wrong, so she remained quiet.

"How the emperor treat the empress recently, I know you are clearer about it than me. In my eyes, for him as the emperor to be able to treat you so well, is there anything that you are unhappy about?"

"You don't understand" Ye Zhen Zhen replied

"Yes, indeed I don't understand, but I know about one thing, what you are doing now, is pushing the emperor to another person's bed personally"

Those words hit the right mark in Ye Zhen Zhen's matter, her face flushed, so she looks down.

"Your majesty, even though I have not eaten pork before, I know how pork runs, what type of women does a men like? Of course those that are gentle and thoughtful, caring and dote-able. Infront of the emperor was countless nation problems, and in the inner palace if he were required to put up with your mood, even if he has the patience to console you once or twice, after a long period of time, no matter how deep the feeling was will also incur tiredness, why don't both of you be more considerate of each other, and you can dote on him too?"

Ye Zhen Zhen just only wanted to reply, when Wang You Cai announced "The emperor has arrived"

Ye Zhen Zhen stood up to receive him, after greetings, Ji Wu Jiu pulled her into the room and sat on the bed. When Ye Zhen Zhen looked up, Su Yue has already left the room, and there were only the two of them in the room.

The two of them did argue last night, so the atmosphere was a little awkward.

Ji Wu Jiu found out that what ever intentions or plans he had for Ye Zhen Zhen was long gone, the moment he saw her. He knew that women has thin skins, and would not easily admit, so he took the initiative to hold her hands and said, “Are you still angry?”

Ye Zhen Zhen shook her head, “No”

Ji Wu Jiu pulled her hands to his chest and purposely said, “What you have said yesterday has made my heart hurt for a long while. I know you don’t care, but I truly care a lot”

Ye Zhen Zhen quickly replied, “ No, I care, I care”

Ji Wu Jiu’s heart felt warm, and quickly asks, “Care about who?”

Ye Zhen Zhen answered with a flushed face, “I care about you”

Ji Wu Jiu only felt that a feeling of sweetness was spreading all the way to his whole body, he pulled her into his arms and softly said, “ I know”

“But, I don’t like you looking at other women” Ye Zhen Zhen found out that since she cannot suppress this type of feeling, she decided to let it all out instead, “especially not willing to let you be close to them”

This type of words really made Ji Wu Jiu feel secure, Zhen Zhen cares about him, cares about him so much. Pulling her closer, he smiled, “in the future, I would not look at other women, and would not get close to other women, will that be fine?”

“That is hard to say, in the inner palace there are so many women, trying to get into your grace everyday. Are you sure you can control yourself?”

“Zhen Zhen, do you know, in the inner palace can fit a lot of people, but here, “ he pulled her hands and pushes it against his chest, “can only fit 1 person”. When a person has already been provided with spring water, which is so sweet and suitable, even if there are many types of water, there are merely tasteless and boring. Why would anyone abandon the spring water for something tasteless?

Ye Zhen Zhen, turned red all around upon hearing his words, “Really?”

Ji Wu Jiu smiled, “Ask yourself, if it is true?”

Ye Zhen Zhen replied “ But I still think that they hurt my eyes”

Ji Wu Jiu sighed, “I also think that they are hurting my eyes.”

Ye Zhen Zhen was only letting out her feelings, she knew that no matter how hurtful it was to her eyes, she won't be able to get rid of them, if there was a way she would have done it already. But to be honest, those women are pitiful too, therefore she didn't really want to cause them too much trouble too.

But, Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly thought of another thing, “If I cannot... get pregnant?”

Ji Wu Jiu was happy hearing her getting anxious, “Zhen Zhen, you being so anxious, are you saying that I did not try enough?” He said while starting to kiss her neck, hands moving downwards holding on to her waist, before lightly pinching it.

Ye Zhen Zhen was getting itchy by his actions, stood up, “you.... I was saying.... Something serious..”

Ji Wu Jiu started removing her clothes, while saying, the doctor said, both our bodies has no problems, for you to get pregnant was something that will come sooner or later, you don't have to be anxious, this type of matter would be best if it came naturally.”

Ye Zhen Zhen still wanted to say something, but her mouth was soon blocked.

After their session, Ye Zhen Zhen was laying on Ji Wu Jiu's chest, taking deep breaths..

Ji Wu Jiu lightly touches her hair, and quietly say, “Zhen Zhen lets go see the lotus flowers tomorrow”

Ye Zhen Zhen lightly nodded but asks “Don't tell me you want to go see that flower lady”

Ji Wu Jiu shook his head, “she is not the type I like”

“Why?”

Ji Wu Jiu did not answer, but only looking at her with a smile.

“No, you must like her, if not why would you keep looking at her yesterday?”

“I really don’t like her”

“Why? She looks good”

“When we get intimate, the mechanism might turnover”

Chapter 76

Peeks.... hi

I wanted to do a double update for my lack of well.. updates... but no time...

Sorry for the lack of updates.. due to work... which is still piling up higher than ever before. I seriously cannot guarantee when i will be able to update again. But i shall try my best. (Enjoy and sorry in advance if there is any errors, do let me know.. as I have not really gone through to do the editing yet) ^^

Quick Update: It's official, my pc hates me... lol.. sorry for being dramatic.

Hehe, as some may have noticed, i added a donation (buy me) button at the side, to help myself raise money to buy a new pc, in the mean time while I too am saving up myself, at my snail speed. It is definitely not a donate for a new chapter thing!! Don't misunderstand, whether or not any donation is received i will still post chapters, whenever I can, and June's post is going to come up soon!

PS: I am only accepting 1USD per person! see you guys soon!!

While Ye Xiu Ming was having his usual bickering with Fang Xiu Qing at the court, suddenly something bad happened at his manor: Old Madam fell sick.

Although Ye Xiu Ming appears to be very strict at court, but there is still something that will make him falter, and that would be the Old Madam. The both of them were married since young, climbing up to their current position now. Passing through all the wind and rains, their relationship is very strong. Ye Xiu Ming's career path was never always smooth sailing, when he was young due to his temper, he met a downfall. All the friends and relatives abandoned them, and the only person who was always by his side was his wife. When a person meets the bad times, it is unavoidable that his temperament will change, he frequently blames and nags, but his wife was a fierce one too, when hearing his sighs, she will not be affected but instead will scold him back, make him happy and also took on the responsibility to make the family a happy and happening one.

If the entire world abandoned you, besides the one that helped opened your heart, and places you at upmost importance by insisting to be good to you, then for that person there is no wrong to abandon the entire world.

Later, when Ye Xiu Ming slowly climbed up the ladder, his family also grew bigger. However he has never taken in any concubine, and was loyal to his wife all along, eventhough she has only given birth to one son. Luckily their son was blessed with three sons and a daughter, their family is considered to be complete as well. Old Madam has always been regretful that she did not manage to give birth to a cute daughter, so when her granddaughter arrives, she was treated like a treasure. Everyone at home knew, Ye Xiu Ming was afraid of his wife, therefore if Old Madam dotes on Zhen Zhen unconditionally, no one will dare to say no.

Ye Xiu Ming was a known tempered person, but who knew his wife would be more temperamental than him, no matter how big the Ye family grew, she was still able to take care of them properly, eliminating any worries at home for Ye Xiu Ming.

Towards his wife, Ye Xiu Ming's feelings were very deep, upon hearing that his wife was ill, he no longer bickers with Fang Xiu Qing, and took a few days off to take care of her.

Old Madam's sickness was due to eating the wrong thing during summer, and caught a cold, therefore her whole body was not feeling well. Though the biggest reason for her not getting well quickly is also due to old age.

The news was quickly spread to Ye Zhen Zhen as well. She truly loves her grandmother, when she was young no matter what mistake she made, as long as she cries a little in front of her, her father will no longer dare to punish her, it works everytime, and her brothers does not have such benefits. Although she grew up already, but infront of her grandmother she will always be a little child. This time around, hearing the her grandmother is very ill, Ye Zhen Zhen was feeling very anxious, despite being in the palace, her heart has long gone flew back home.

Ji Wu Jiu noticed her being restless, so he comforted her, "I have already send the best Imperial doctor to visit the Old Madam, she would be alright, don't

worry too much. If one got cured and another gotten sick, what should we do then?”

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded blankly

Ji Wu Jiu sighed “Go back and visit her, don’t say that I am cold hearted” It was not that he was not willing to let Zhen Zhen go home to be filial, its just that he was afraid that this women will forget to miss him, after returning home.

After obtaining Ji Wu Jiu’s approval, that day itself she ordered everyone to get ready and returned to Ye Manor.

Because she left in a rush, she did not manage to inform her family. The moment the Ye family saw the empress arriving, everyone immediately went to greet her. Although she was from Ye family, but she still has to accept the formal greeting.

Before meeting with her grandmother, Ye Zhen Zhen first went to see her grandfather, her tears were already streaming down her face upon seeing him. Grandfather’s energy seems to be low, and lacking the charisma that he always has, his hair seems to be completely white soon too. He wanted to greet Ye Zhen Zhen too, the moment his knees bended, Ye Zhen Zhen immediately held him up, “Sir, there is no need for greetings, how is Old Madam doing?”

“Still having fever, everything that she has eaten this past few days, was all vomited out as well”, Ye Xiu Ming answered while shaking his head, his eyes turning red. “Just now, hearing that the empress arrived she regained some energy, and was struggling to get up from the bed to greet you”

“Quickly bring me to see her”

Ye Xiu Ming immediately led Ye Zhen Zhen to the room, the room was filled with herbal medicine’s smell. On the bed, Old Madam saw the person who arrived, sat up and called “Empress”, Ye Zhen Zhen has already went forward to push her back down to the bed, “Grandma!”

The pair of grandma and grandchild cried the moment they met. Ye Xiu Ming left the both of them to talk, and retreated out. After leaving the room, there was nothing to do so he was left wandering around the garden. Looking upon

the trees, he came to a realization, all this years she has always been by his side, if she left him he really won't know what to do. But thinking back again, if they both can't leave together at the same time, and one person has to stay back to feel the pain, he would rather be the one to stay back.

Thinking till there, he let out a sigh. A human's lifetime is really not that long, no matter how powerful you are, the person whom has always been by your side would be the only thing that you will miss.

Ye Zhen Zhen accompanied her grandmother to conversed for a while and made her laugh a little, seeing that her mood was better, she served her the medicine and laid her to sleep.

From then on, Ye Zhen Zhen continued to stay at Ye Manor. She understood what the imperial doctor said and knew that it was hard to say whether her grandmother will be able to hold on. So her heart did not want to leave at all. Eventhough..... really can't, she should also be by her side until the last moment. Ye Zhen Zhen originally wanted to serve the medicine herself, but Ye Xiu Ming was considering her status and did not allow her, so everyday Ye Zhen Zhen just accompanies by Old Madam's side to make her happy.

Ye Xiu Ming also purposely wrote a report to Ji Wu Jiu about this matter: Your wife is taking care of my wife, she can only go back after a while.

The moment Ji Wu Jiu saw the report, he knew this would happen. For an empress to stay for so long at her maternal family, was not really matching the rules, but looking at the situation now, and that Ye Xiu Ming's face was bigger than the rest of the other people, and he was not willing to let Zhen Zhen sad, therefore no matter what is the rules, he nodded and agreed.

At court, without Ye Xiu Ming's arguments, it made Fang Xiu Qing felt that it was rather boring and down.

Ji Wu Jiu was down too— wife was not beside him, how can he not be down. He was staying at Gan Qing Palace, so lonely and quiet; and when he went to Kun Ning Palace, it was still quiet and cold. At night, he slept at her bed, his heart can't help but to miss that person, to the point that he will call out her name in his sleep. He knew that he loves her, but did not know that he will love her till

this point. It was like the moment she left, his soul got up and followed her.

Everyone says, men likes new and abandons the old, that is because they have never met that person. If there is that one person that matches your appetite, until your entire body's hair also feels comfortable, matches until the point where you will miss that person eventhough you just tasted her lips.. if you have met such a woman, will the other women even enter your eyes?

This type of woman was bliss, but also the end.

Ji Wu Jiu was lying on top of the bed in Kun Ning Palace, with his eyes wide open looking at the ceiling of the bed. He finally realized what it felt like to be a woman waiting for her husband to visit.

Old Madam Ye was sick, not only the emperor allowed the empress to return home to visit, he personally went to Ye Manor to visit as well.

This type of blessings, only Ye Xiu Ming will have this the honor of receiving them, many people were envious though they did not say much.

Ji Wu Jiu sat infront of the Old Madam for awhile before getting called out by Ye Xi Ming. Somehow being the emperor means that you will carry a charisma that will suppress common people, an ill person is weak, and to be visited by the emperor like this, most probably they will feel even worst.

Ye Xiu Ming, invited him to the main hall. Ji Wu Jiu asked about Old Madam's illness in detail, and said a few comforting words and bestowed from medicines. Ye Xiu Ming was very grateful and knew that Ji Wu Jiu came because he missed Ye Zhen Zhen, therefore he wanted to call Ye Zhen Zhen over as well.

Ji Wu Jiu though, said "No Rush, this time, I came because there is something else I want to discuss"

"Yes, your majesty?"

"When I was fighting against Nu Zhen, sir has gifted me a piece of Silk Shirt. Who knew that this shirt has become the clue to kidnap me, when Zhen Zhen was captured by the enemy, because she was wearing that shirt, she was misunderstood as me by Duo Duo Wu La Tu."

Ye Xiu Ming was a smart man, hearing those words his face changed immediately, he knelt down and said, “Your Majesty, my loyalty to you can be seen by the skies and god”

Ji Wu Jiu pulled him up, “Your loyalty, I know well, if not I would not ask you personally as well. I have confirmed that the news of the silk shirt was leaked out from your manor, I hope that Sir would be able to think properly, who was involved in this matter”

“There was only the people who delivered it”, Ye Xiu Ming replied, and suddenly looked up, “No, there is one more person”

“Who?”

“It is my student, Bai Jian Cheng, previously he was always at the borders, but now he is the right assistant of the Minister of Rites. The silk shirt was originally gifted to me by him, that time when he visited me previously, I accidentally told him”

Ji Wu Jiu understood, it was surely not an accident, Ye Xiu Ming wanted to tell someone about it, so next time he can say he made some sort of contribution. The ministry of rites was under Ye Xiu Ming, to place his own student as the right assistant, was a great sign that he was guiding him. Ji Wu Jiu closes his eyes and said “Bai Jian Cheng?”

“Yes, most probably your majesty would not remember him”

“I remember him very well. 5 years ago, due to corruption he was placed at Liao Dong, after I became the emperor, I granted a pardon to the world, that was why he came back. Who knew he would be able to be someone by this 5 years time.

Ye Xiu Ming found it hard to maintain his face. Was the emperor implying that he is not using the right people? This Bai Jian Cheng was his student, previously his entire fortune was taken away. But seeing that he still managed to climb up the ladder slowly, so he gave him another chance. Seems like now he made a mistake.

Its just that... when Bai Jian Cheng was punished previously Ji Wu Jiu was still only the crown prince, how did he know so well about that matter?

Ye Xiu Ming was full of questions, but did not really show, he only said, “I did not meet people correctly, I ask for punishment”

Ji Wu Jiu waved his hands, and said “Nothing is confirmed yet, don’t worry too much first, even if there is something wrong with him it would not reach you.” Seeing that the person in front of him is still frowning, he turned back and asks “I have always heard that Sir is afraid of your wife, I am curious, Sir has always been in a good relationship with your wife, are you really afraid of her?”

Ye Xiu Ming got a little shocked, he didn’t know that Ji Wu Jiu will change the topic so fast, brushing his beard, “Why would I be afraid of her, she is not a tiger. I am only doting on her, and listens to everything she says. This is not being afraid of my wife, this is doting her”.

Chapter 77

Ye Zhen Zhen didn't think that Ji Wu Jiu will visit the Ye Manor.

In the inner house, it was not appropriate for strangers to enter, therefore Ji Wu Jiu could not go near Ye Zhen Zhen's maiden room, and could only wait for her at the flower pavilion. Although he said that there was no rush, but actually he was so anxious that his neck kept stretching to see if she has arrived. Finally Ye Zhen Zhen arrived, not waiting for her to complete her greetings, he has already pulled her into his arms. The people serving them immediately turned away, and left the married couple alone at the pavilion to talk.

Not seeing her for a few days, Ye Zhen Zhen appears to be thinner, Ji Wu Jiu felt his heart in pain. He held on to Ye Zhen Zhen and lead her to the chair, him sitting down and her on his laps.

Ye Zhen Zhen felt that him being so intimate in the daylight was not appropriate, so she wanted to stand up.

Ji Wu Jiu held her back, "Sit properly, we shall chat for a little while"

Ye Zhen Zhen could only sit and say, "Your Majesty, how come you are here."

All because I miss you already, Ji Wu Jiu thought in his heart. He helped her brush her loose hairs, and then was caressing her face, frowning he said, "You lose some weight"

Ye Zhen Zhen dropped into his chest and sighed.

Both of them did not really speak. Before arriving, Ji Wu Jiu had thousands of things that he wanted to tell her, but now with her in his arms, he felt secured, and all those words seems meaningless now. He pecked her forehead, hands at her waist, and legs supporting her well rounded bottoms, he suddenly felt his heart tingling.

But, the timing was not right, the place was not right, Ji Wu Jiu shouldn't make her angry. But the both of them was not able to be intimate for a few days, so he was not happy, therefore he said, "I want to get something from you, I hope you would be willing to give me"

“What do you want?”

Ji Wu Jiu look down, and whispered something to her ears.

Ye Zhen Zhen immediately blushed red, “What do you want to do with that?”

He tightens his grasp on her waist, “Of course to remember someone with her belongings”

Ye Zhen Zhen looked down, avoiding his gaze, “Go and ask the maid servant that stores my clothing from Kun Ning Palace, don’t have to get it from me”

He smooched her cheek “Silly, this type of thing how can I let others know. Furthermore, I want you to remove it yourself and give it to me”

“You...!” Ye Zhen Zhen felt that Ji Wu Jiu is getting more willful, no one can really guess what he is thinking. She wanted to get up, “Don’t play around!”

Ji Wu Jiu held her back down, resting his nose on her collar bones, he said “Zhen Zhen, let me have it. Do you know, these few days that I can’t see you, how much I have missed you”

Ye Zhen Zhen’s heart soften, him saying a few lovey dovey words, made her heart waver. In the end, she can only push his head away, and said ,”I go back to the room and take it for you”

Ji Wu Jiu’s face pushed towards her again, in a low voice he said “Give it to me here”

Ye Zhen Zhen stared at him, “What type of place this is!”

“There won’t be people visiting here, I have ordered people to guard around, no one will dare to come in”

Most probably he has planned this earlier. Ye Zhen Zhen rolled her eyes, seeing that he will not let it go, if he doesn’t get what he wants, so she can only follow along, so that she can quickly send this person away. Therefore, under his fiery gaze, she slowly untied her clothes, and removed the red coloured inner garment she was wearing, then throwing that to him, and then properly wear her clothes again. Her chests was naturally exposed for a short while during her actions, Ji Wu Jiu can’t help but to stare at it, his eyes almost burning with fire.

However, he didn’t dare to do anything, afraid that the moment he starts, he

would not be able to control himself. The entire process was really a sweet torture.

Ye Zhen Zhen however was in a dilemma. In Summer, their cloths are thinner, after properly wearing her clothes, she felt that something was missing and uncomfortable. From the outside, the shape of her chests were also more obvious, how could she return like this?

Naturally Ji Wu Jiu would not want anyone else to see it, therefore he passed her the fan that he has, to be opened and used to block her front. The drawing on the fan was a lotus flower, and was personally drawn by the emperor, if taken out to be sold, certainly it will be a small fortune. The fan is rather big, once open it was larger than her shoulders, to be used to cover herself would be the best item.

Ye Zhen Zhen held on to the fan, looking at him “You are well prepared”

Ji Wu Jiu smiled, “To guard the room at night alone is not easy, you need to be considerate as well”

Ever since then, Ji Wu Jiu will visit Ye Manor every two to three days. Although Ye Xiu Ming has not been attending court for some time now, in the hearts of the other ministers, his reputation has been increased again. Even the blind could tell, Madam Ye was sick and the emperor was so concerned about her, obviously the Ye Family will still be in power for a while.

After a few discussion with Ye Xiu Ming, Ji Wu Jiu and him came to agree to 2 things.

Number 1, to dote on your wife is, “Not fighting back if beaten, not arguing back when scolded”. When a woman is angry, they are not rational, as long as your face is thick enough, and allows her to scold you, when her anger dissipates, they will naturally come to an understanding. When they are approached nicely then, there would not be any problems that cannot be solved. All women are soft hearted, when one needs to act nonchalant, then do so, when one needs to act pitiful then do so, the most important is to never be prideful in front of the wife, it would make matters worse.

Second, according to Ji Wu Jiu’s deduction the matter with the silk shirt is most probably done by Bai Jian Cheng. Previously he was sent to Liao Dong, most

probably he came into contact with Nu Zhen tribe there, meaning he has the right motive and chance to do this. If Bai Jian Cheng is really the traitor, naturally he will be punished severely, it's just that whether there are other ministers in court that are in the same cahoots with him or not is yet to be known, and whether if he has any relation to Li You is yet to be confirmed, therefore the best choice is for him to stay low about this matter. Bai Jian Cheng was Ye Xiu Ming's student, the matter with the silk shirt was also leaked from here, no matter what, Ye Xiu Ming would not be cleared from this matter. But of course, to be frank, the initial purpose of Ye Xiu Ming was of a good one, and has always been loyal to the country, he was also fooled by Bai Jian Cheng only. Therefore he is only asked to keep a surveillance on Bai Jian Cheng.

This promise made Ye Xiu Ming calmer.

Old madam's illness has also turned to the better. Her fever has also subsided. With her children and grandchildren with her, she got more happy and have a better appetite, slowly increasing her food intake amount. No longer bed ridden, she can already take afternoon walks with the aid of Zhen Zhen.

The entire manor, can finally relax.

Because old madam cannot walk far, Ye Xiu Ming ordered for many types of flowers to be placed in her garden, and gotten two swans and a peacock, making her personal garden turn into a main garden. The moment she leaves her room, she will be able to view it all.

It was time for Ye Zhen Zhen to return to the palace.

Ji Wu Jiu said he wanted to come pick her up, she felt that to make such a commotion would not be good, so she wanted to return abit earlier, but the moment she wanted to leave, Ye Xiu Ming came over and told her that Ye Lei Ting wanted to meet her.

She has only met Ye Lei Ting a few times before, and not considered to be closed. Previously at the army, he was the main general, Ji Wu Jiu and Ye Zhen Zhen both had to listen to his orders. Therefore Ye Zhen Zhen was really afraid of him, and was much more docile in front of him then in front of Ji Wu Jiu. Now they have already returned to the palace, was there something that he cannot inform the emperor, and must tell this empress?

Ye Zhen Zhen was a little confused, and asks Ye Xiu Ming, “Grandfather, why is he looking for me?”

Ye Xiu Ming shook his head, “I asked him earlier, he don’t want to say, but only said he must see you. If it was some other people that requested, I will not allow, but Lei Ting is someone who knows boundaries, if he wants to meet you, there must be something he wants to inform, so go meet up with him”

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded. Since they are of a different gender, it was best if they spoke in the open, therefore he was invited to meet at the main garden’s pavilion. She asks Ye Lei Ting, “General Ye, may I know why are you looking for me?”

Ye Lei Ting answered, “ To be honest, I have a secret in my heart, it was best if there is less people in the world that knows of this matter”

“O?” Ye Zhen Zhen looked at him with her brows raised, “Will you be telling me this secret? Don’t rush in telling me the secret, first explain why I should know of this matter?”

“Sir Ye has been kind to me, I want to pay him back”

Ye Zhen Zhen felt even weirder, “Then why didn’t you tell him personally?”

“This matter is big, although not directly related to Sir Ye, but its more related to the royal family.” He lifted his head to look at Ye Zhen Zhen, and smiled, “Forgive me if I am rude, but I have once carried you when you are young, although you are now the empress, guarding over the inner palaces, but I still treat you like my sister, so no matter what I would not want you to be suppressed.”

Ye Zhen Zhen was an easygoing person, his words did not make her upset, but was rather funny, “You must be kidding, you are only a few years elder than me, how could you have carried me, if you have a white beard, maybe some people will believe you”

Ye Lei Ting laughed, “Not only you, I have even carried the emperor before, do you believe?”

Ye Zhen Zhen was even more weirded out, thinking that something is not right. She asks back , “Since this matter is related to the royal family, then why did you

not tell the emperor instead?”

Ye Lei Ting answered, “I tell you, and you decide whether you want to inform the emperor or not”

“If so, then brother Ye please speak”

Ye Lei Ting lowered his volume and spoke

Ye Zhen Zhen’s face immediately changed when she heard what he said, “Brother Ye!, Don’t simply say things”

Ye Lei Ting answered calmly, “Every single thing I said was of the truth”

“How did you find out?”

He took a long sigh, “That would be a long story”

Chapter 78

Not sure why, but i felt like there will be alot of grammar or weird english usage in this chapter.. but..... as usual.. i am too lazy to proof read..

bahahahahahaaaa... enjoy

uhm.. slight 18 rated at the end of the story

Ye Lei Ting told a very long story to Ye Zhen Zhen. After listening to this story, it felt like she has watched a very dramatic theatrical act.

She never knew it could be so tiring to listen to a story, by the end of the story her legs were starting to shiver.

Indeed, life stories are much more interesting then written ones.

“I get it, Brother Ye, please do not mention this matter to another person” Ye Zhen Zhen told him.

“Don’t worry”

After Ye Lei Ting left, Ye Zhen Zhen was left alone at the lotus pond, walking around in circles, her heart not calming down at all. After some time did only her feelings felt better, but then Ye Xiu Ming came and spoke to her “Zhen Zhen, I have somethings to tell you”

“Grandfather, please speak”. With the matter just now, no matter what comes out from his mouth, it shouldn’t be any worst right.

Ye Xiu Ming, moved closer. Due to old age, his straight back is slightly bended, no longer like when he was young. Looking at Ye Zhen Zhen, his eyes turns gentle, and these eyes will only appear when he is infront of his children and grandchildren. His lips lightly moved abit, wanting to say something, but it was as though as his lips was being held close by a thousand kilograms of weight, unable to make any sound. Looking at his granddaughter, she is no longer the mischievous girl but a married lady, an adult. No longer was she the little girl

who will grab on to her grandfather's legs to ask him to help her tie her hair. Times passes by too quickly.

Ye Zhen Zhen noticed that her grandfather was only looking at her, and not speaking, feeling abit weird, "Grandfather, what do you want to tell me?"

Ye Xiu Ming's eyes turn slightly red, sighed and said "Zhen Zhen, I have done you wrong"

Ji Wu Jiu has arrived at Ye Manor, the servant by the door does not dare to make him wait, so he immediately got someone to send words, while he brought him in. Right after he passed the main door, he saw Ye Zhen Zhen and Ye Xiu Ming speaking by the pond. Ji Wu Jiu's eyesight was very good, he still could see the facial expression of Ye Xiu Ming clearly, like wanting to cry, he thought that something bad happened so he ordered the servant to go back to the door, and he himself went to hid behind a pillar to eavesdrop on them.

He heard Ye Xiu Ming say, "Previously, it was me who sent you to the palace for pride reasons. I thought your status was prestige, and should be treated well. But actually to be a married couple, you would have to face your husband for life. Based on your personality, you would not like the rules of the palace. I should not have interfered with the fate of your love life, and ignored your feelings."

When Ji Wu Jiu heard those words, he felt his heart got stuffy. What does this mean, previously when he was so forceful with the marriage, but wanting to regret it now?, Too late!

Ye Xiu Ming continued, " Actually, your father also objects greatly to this marriage. He knows that you and Lu Li has grown up together and have a different type of relationship, and Lu Li himself is a good man, and matched well with you too"

Ji Wu Jiu got even angrier, what well matched! The only person who matches well with Ye Zhen Zhen is only him, Ji Wu Jiu.

"I know when you first entered the palace, your life was not easy, I have already started to regret that time, but what has happened, happened. I can only hope that you will be able to endure and get the fruits at the end. Although you might not necessary be able to get the love from the emperor, but to have

one or two children by your side, and the head of the inner palace, as long as you can endure it then your life would be smooth. However, knowing you, you would still not be able to live happily. My decision still is wrong.”

No matter what he said, it still meant that he is regretful, after hearing those words, Ji Wu Jiu felt unhappy as well as lucky. Lucky you made a wrong decision, really good!

Ye Zhen Zhen answered “ Grandfather, don’t say it like that, fate has always been fixed by the heavens, if without your help, I would not be married to the emperor. He treats me quite good. I am the empress, and if anyone in the inner palace is having bad thoughts, they also need to think of their capabilities first.”

This sentence made Ji Wu Jiu’s heart felt happy. You still know that I am treating you good. Also... you are indeed my Zhen Zhen, the way you look down on others is really matching with me.

Ye Xiu Ming was still worried, “What about the empress dowager? Although Xu Family met with a bad ending, she is still the emperor’s mother, she may be able to harm you, and yet you would not be able to do anything.

“This, you don’t have to worry, I already figured out a way”

Ji Wu Jiu got curious, what is she plotting, therefore was hoping Ye Xiu Ming will ask her.

And of course, Ye Xiu Ming asks, “What type of plan?”

Ye Zhen Zhen answered, “I can’t tell you at the moment, but don’t you worry, I am your granddaughter, I will definitely not make you lose face.”

Ye Xiu Ming took a breath, “If so, I can leave with a calm heart”

Ye Zhen Zhen was surprised, “Leave? Grandfather where are you going?”

“During the days your grandmother is ill, I thought it over. Over these years I was engrossed in the worldly affairs, and has not really accompanied her. Now we are old, and not left with many years, why don’t I let my hands go and properly spend my remaining years. We are half feet in the grave already, every day we get is every day earned.”

“Grandfather!”

“You don’t have to advise me. I was not able to accept this earlier. I did not want to acknowledge that I was old, and was always fighting with them, fighting with Fang Xiu Qing, with the emperor. Actually there was no need, making myself tired. Each generation will come out stronger than the previous. Actually I didn’t need to get worried for others, now that we are old, we should be able to spend our lives together. I want to bring your grandmother back to our old house in Jiangsu, it is calm and peaceful there, the best place to retire. We will grow some flowers, have some birds, isn’t that a beautiful scene.

“But Grandfather, Jiangsu is 1000 miles away from Beijing, both of you are of old age, if there is no one taking care of the both you”

“This you don’t have to worry. Although your grandfather has retired, it doesn’t mean I would not be able to leave my life well. I have discussed with your grandmother, this trip we will bring along your biggest nephew. He is just 3 years old now, the most innocent period, when he grows abit older we will send him back here. With him accompanying us most probably we will not be lonely.”

Ye Zhen Zhen still wanted to change his mind, but he waved his hands and said “You don’t have to say anymore, now go bid farewell to your grandmother, after this we would not be able to meet for at least a few years.”

What he said was humble. What few years, most probably this would be the last time they can meet.

Ye Zhen Zhen went to meet with old madam with her soul lost.

Ji Wu Jiu was left hiding. Ye Xiu Ming was his teacher, although the both of them might quarrel in the matters at court, but there were no hatred between them. But now to find out that he will be leaving soon, Ji Wu Jiu felt a little unwilling, almost like he lost an arm.

In the end, Ye Xiu Ming was able to manage the court for so long, was because he was capable, and talented. Not something easily achieved by anyone.

Ji Wu Jiu did not want to rush Ye Zhen Zhen, so he left Ye Manor alone. The old people will be leaving, there should be more words that is needed to be exchanged.

Sure enough, Ye Zhen Zhen only returned closed to the evening time. When

she returned both her eyes were red. Ji Wu Jiu knew what happened, so he didn't ask and only held in his arms while consoling her.

Ye Zhen Zhen was an optimistic person, she will think about positive things. Grandmother was able to kick away the soul collector by herself, was already very lucky, this time it was not a matter of life and death, her life in the countryside would most probably be enjoyable, as her granddaughter, there is still a chance for her to visit her.

After thinking through, Ye Zhen Zhen's mood felt better. Then she remembered something and looked at Ji Wu Jiu "Emperor, I have something that I am not sure if I should tell you".

Ji Wu Jiu leaned on her forehead and asks, "Is it something you can't say or something you don't want to say?"

"I..... am afraid you will be sad, if I said it".

Ji Wu Jiu's heart felt warm. "Then, let's wait till you want to say it, or tell me when you must say it"

Ye Zhen Zhen nodded.

Ji Wu Jiu, looked at her. Under the candlelight, from her after crying face left marks of redness at her cheeks, making her look like a peach.

This person, was nearly not his.

Ji Wu Jiu felt super lucky. He was someone who never believed in fate, however he suddenly felt that his fate with hers, was really meant to be, no matter who, also will not be able to break their fate.

10 years of doing good deeds will grant you a chance to meet, and 100 years will grant you to share a pillow. They must have been doing good for hundreds of years to be able to be such a loving couple now.

Ye Zhen Zhen found out that Ji Wu Jiu's gaze was glimmering, she knew this gaze very well. They were speaking properly just a while ago, though she did thought about those things. She looked down, and started playing with her own fingers.

Ji Wu Jiu grabbed onto her hands, and placed her slender fingers into his

mouth and was playing with them with his tongue.

The moment Ye Zhen Zhen's finger was touched by his tongue, she shivered. This person's technique is really getting more and more, how can he manage to think about biting her fingers.

While Ji Wu Jiu was biting her fingers, his other hand was caressing her lips. She understood, and accepted his fingers into her mouth.

He was looking at her mouth sucking on to his fingers.. just like.. just like...

He subconsciously moved his fingers, in and out. Ye Zhen Zhen was someone that was smart, she learn from Ji Wu Jiu and used her tongue to caress his finger. To her it was quite fun, like eating a lollipop.

Ji Wu Jiu lost it.

He brought her to the bed, while removing her clothes he said "Zhen Zhen, for you I have kept my body for so long, and not touched any other female, how are you going to reward me?"

Ye Zhen Zhen was giggling from his touch at her ticklish parts, "How would I know if you are telling the truth?"

He laughed a little, sweetly he said, "If so, then I would request my wife to check it for me"

Because, Ji Wu Jiu was not able to be intimate with Ye Zhen Zhen for a while, and he has lost his rationality for a bit now, and rushing, he did not control his strength very well, and made Ye Zhen Zhen a little sore.

After completing the deed, he was looking at her awaiting for his praise, but who knew he heard her say, "Your skills has dropped"

"....."

Men, will never be able to accept those words. He turned her body around, and spoke next to her ears, " You better not regret this"

Chapter 79

Some parts are shorten, some parts are full translated. In the end it was still worth 4 pages... LOL.. Not a good summarizer, but thanks to all the motivation!! It is completed.. 20 plus chapters to go! We will finish this!!! Enjoy

Ye Xiu Ming's retirement was the latest hit news in the capital, no matter how much the emperor tried to stop him, it was useless. The moment the news was leaked out, Ye Manor's door was filled with people that want to visit him, before he leaves. To be able to have people visiting when he is leaving the court, shows that he was someone respected not revered. The day Ye Xiu Ming left the capital, the emperor personal lead the entire court to bid farewell. People also soon realize that the direction in the court would soon change.

Fang Xiu Qing was transferred to the most important department leading the entire court. This also affected Ye Kang Le. Initially with the transfer of Fang Xiu Qing, the minister of finance's position is open, and many thought that Ye Kang Le would be transferred there to replace, however the emperor did not do so, but instead send him to the outskirts. It really made people ponder.

Is the emperor taking this opportunity to suppress the Ye Family?

Ji Wu Jiu does not really bother how people thought of him, he was only afraid that Ye Zhen Zhen would think too much: "Zhen Zhen, believe me"

Ye Zhen Zhen was enjoying her yoghurt, and answered, "I know what you are doing"

"O?" Ji Wu Jiu got curious, "let me hear"

"You want to push forward Fang Xiu Qing's agenda, therefore you cannot have people acting as barriers. Don't worry and go ahead with what you want to do, my family is really just my maternal family, and should not be too over powered, it is also time to be humble. Although my dad was sent to the outskirts, it is not like he is not coming back. Futhermore to enter the inner court, I feel like my second brother is more suitable then my father"

Ji Wu Jiu felt really really good, right into his bones. No matter what he wants to do, she will know. She understands him.

So, he smiled and asks, “Why do you think so?”

Finishing her yoghurt, Ye Zhen Zhen slowly answered, “Your job is the emperor, of course you would know best on how to use people, there is no need for me to interfere”, feeling like having another cup of yoghurt she calls for Su Feng.

“Stop eating” Ji Wu Jiu stops her, “if you eat too much, your stomach will ache again”

Su Feng knew the emperor will stop the empress, so she has never moved.

Ji Wu Jiu took out his handkerchief and helped Ye Zhen Zhen wipe her mouth, after that he smiled and said “Do tell me, why is 2nd Brother Ye more suitable?”

“My father is an honest person, and very soft hearted, without his own thoughts. Although my 2nd brother looks like my father at first glance, but he knows himself very well, his behavior is exactly like my grandfather. Since young, he has always been like that, although eldest brother was the oldest, but he will revere my second brother and whenever there is a problem, 2nd brother would come out with ideas. Look at his effort on building the water damp, it certainly wasn't an easy task”

Ji Wu Jiu nodded and smiled, “indeed, however, you seem to be the smarter one out of them”

Ye Zhen Zhen thickens her face and answered, “That is true, it's just too bad that I am a woman. In my next life, I definitely want to reborn as a man, and have a good career”

“That should not happen, “ He held her hands, “If you become a man, then what would happen to me?”

Ye Zhen Zhen laughed, “Then you be the woman, and marry me” She said while lifting up her hands and holding on the Ji Wu Jiu's chin. “Sure a pretty girl”

Before Ji Wu Jiu could even reply the Mynah couldn't take it anymore, “Aiya, So Embarrassing!” Who knew from where did it learn all this from, to the point

where it was using a very high pitch voice, if you close your eyes and listen, you would have thought that there were really someone flirting in broad daylight.

Ye Zhen Zhen and Ji Wu Jiu was speechless.

“But” Ye Zhen Zhen changed back to the original topic, “I think that Fang Xiu Qing’s actions this time would be rather big, I don’t know what effect his changes will bring, but he will definitely be placed under the limelight”

From the past, it was always difficult to make changes. Though based on circumstances, this Ji Wu Jiu and Fang Xiu Qing pair should be able to come up with something that will change the entire court. Although these changes were highly anticipated, but it would not come easy.

Ji Wu Jiu knew what Ye Zhen Zhen meant, he nodded, “All in all I will treat him well”

Ye Zhen Zhen said, “Let us be clear first, how you want to treat Fang Xiu Qing that is between you and him, that Fang Zhao Yi, if she dares to play any tricks, I will not give any face”

He touches her forehead, “That is of course”

Su Feng entered the room, to change the incense fragrance. She places it into the incense pot and lit it up, and left the room.

Ye Zhen Zhen took a sniff, “Do you still remember this fragrance, we bought it from Liao Dong, called “You Suo Si” (Thinking about something)

Ji Wu Jiu followed and took a sniff, “How can I not remember, just that... I still think that this fragrance is rather familiar to me”

Ye Zhen Zhen said, “I found the reasons behind this name. During the Han Dynasty there was a poem called “ You Suo Si”. While she tries to recite the poem.

Ji Wu Jiu saw her struggling so he helped her instead, “

‘何用问遗君，双珠瑇瑁簪，用玉绍缭之。闻君有他心，拉杂摧烧之。摧烧之，当风扬其灰。从今以往，勿复相思，相思与君绝！鸡鸣狗吠，兄嫂当知之。妃呼豨！秋风肃肃晨风飏，东方须臾高知之

It’s this one right?”

“Correct, “ she nodded, “It speaks about how a lady was scolding the man who left her. This scent was also called “You Suo Si”, maybe the maker was also a lady that was left behind, and wanted to use this name to scold the man?”

Ji Wu Jiu frowned, “This fragrance’s origin does not seem nice, stop using it”

“Why, it smells good”

“Only those who have been left will use, I am not a man that will abandon you, I am your lover” He smiled bending down wanting to kiss her.

Ye Zhen Zhen turned her face avoiding him, “Really Stupid is still here”

Ji Wu Jiu was not following her trail of thoughts, “Really... stupid?” (Zhen Ben)

“It” she pointed towards the mynah, “I gave him a name, using my last name too”

Ji Wu Jiu looked at the bird pitifully, “Why did you give it such a name?”

“I wanted to call him Really Black, I gave these two names to Su Yue and the rest to choose, in the end they chose Really Stupid”

“There are really a group of astonishing people” Ji Wu Jiu praised, just a pity that they are following this type of master....

After some small talks, they decided to head to Ci Ning Palace to visit the empress dowager. The relationship between the son and mother has improved slightly, as the empress did not do anything recently and only stayed in her palace to pray. In her heart Ye Zhen Zhen knew this was just a fake scenery, but she also hoped that the empress dowager would really be good now.

It was a hot day, Ji Wu Jiu was regretting that he pulled Ye Zhen Zhen out, he was afraid that she might get ill. So he prepared some cold fruits, at their meet up. Ye Zhen Zhen was looking at the both of them like watching a show, seeing them exchange their blows of filial and care. Occasionally she will also play her part on being a good daughter in law.

Ji Wu Jiu was really happy that his wife was so capable. Capable of using all types of weapons except the sewing needle, she is really good at all aspects.

Ye Zhen Zhen was sweating under the sun, so Su Feng took out a handkerchief for her to wipe her sweat. The empress dowager said unhappily, “Such a

servant!, how dare you let your master use a used handkerchief by you?”

Su Feng immediately replied, “Replying to your majesty, This handkerchief is not used, that was a new handkerchief that was dried after submerging in mint water, using that to wipe away sweat will feel very comfortable. I have brought a few with me, afraid that master will sweat.”

After hearing the explanation, the empress dowager’s became more calm and nodded, “It is indeed rather warm here, you must have suffered”, and then looking back at Su Feng, “Indeed a very good servant,” turning to Ji Wu Jiu, “if according me, although there are many servants around but to be able to find someone that knows how to treat their master well, and is loyal, would really be hard. Don’t you agree?”

Ji Wu Jiu nodded, “What you said is correct, mother”

Ye Zhen Zhen became alert the moment she heard those words, the empress dowager would not suddenly bring up this type of matter, was she really just looking for conversation topics?

Sighing she continued, “I know these years you have not many people beside you, still thinking about the capable person from the old times, this mother who care about her son, has decided to find a good servant for you. I am sure you will like her the moment you see her” she said while raising her head towards the maid servant beside her, “bring her”

Ye Zhen Zhen was speechless, the empress dowager was so broadly shoving someone to Ji Wu Jiu’s side? Was she not afraid that she will deal with the person later? What on earth is this old lady thinking?

In the meantime, someone was walking towards them. Long and slim figure, wearing palace clothes, looking down, moving towards their place slowly.

Ye Zhen Zhen was curious, waited for her to get closer before saying, “raise up your head”

She lifted up her head but her eyes was still looking downwards. Ye Zhen Zhen gave a few glances to her face, although not a really pretty girl, but still considered above average. She was still trying to guess what the empress dowager was trying to do, if she really want to shove someone to Ji Wu Jiu’s bed,

she should have chosen someone that could attract his eyes. If really just a servant, with Ji Wu Jiu's caution towards her, it would not be very useful as well.

Ye Zhen Zhen looked at Ji Wu Jiu with a "I don't understand what's happening face", to find out that he was looking at the person in front of him as though as he was struck by lightning. After a moment of daze, he finally slowly called out, "Xiang Ru?"

Chapter 80

Work started, busy.. sad .sad.. enjoy =D

On a site note.. this site has passed 1 million views!!!!!!! Thank you people ~~
ahaha ^^

Ye Zhen Zhen has never seen Ji Wu Jiu like that. It was like some parts of his soul was lost, his gaze was lost towards the person in front of him, but it also seems like he is lost in thoughts.

The empress dowager says, “Xiang Ru, I am transferring you to serve the emperor, from today onwards you would be the grade 1 maidservant, you need to take care of the emperor properly, understood?”

Xiang Ru kneeled down and bowed, “Yes, I will do my best and be loyal”

Ye Zhen Zhen used her handkerchief to wipe her mouth, and said “Mother, this girl seems like a very clever and loyal, may I ask who’s family daughter is this?”

The empress dowager smiled and answers “ she is the daughter of the ministry of rites, Bai Jian Cheng, also considered as a noble lady, now that she has entered the palace to be a maid servant, really not befitting.”

Seems like she is feeling bad for her? Can’t wait to turn her into a master tomorrow.

Ye Zhen Zhen’s eye brows twitched when she heard the name “Bai Jian Cheng”

That person seems to be involved in a case right now, although not sure if the mistake he made was real or not, but if its true then this Bai Xiang Ru will not be able to benefit much.

However, there is no 100% in this world, looking at Ji Wu Jiu’s attitude, it was obvious that he has deep relationship with this Bai Xiang Ru. Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly recalled something that Ji Wu Jiu mentioned to her, this Xiang Ru must be the old acquaintance that he mentioned. It looks like the empress dowager did not grant her death, not only did she not kill her, she purposely kept her under her wings. Seems like its now the right time to use her against the empress.

It's just that why did this Bai Xiang Ru decide to appear now? The empress dowager is really not afraid of bringing trouble to herself?

Also, has Bai Xiang Ru been in the palace all along? Ji Wu Jiu has so many eyes in the palace, how is it possible that he didn't know?

Furthermore, Bai Jian Cheng was once sent to exile in Liao Dong....

Ye Zhen Zhen suddenly thought of the signboard "Xiang Ru Gu", so she smiled and said, "I heard that you are very good in making fragrances?"

Bai Xiang Ru answered, "replying your majesty, I do indeed know a little. If your majesty does not mind, If you need any fragrance please let me know"

If so, then things become clear. That shop in Liaodong could most probably be opened by Bai Xiang Ru, even if it was not directly opened by her, it definitely has something related to her. She was previously exiled to Liaodong, and when a great pardon was granted to the whole nation, did she only returned to the capital. The days she was invited in to the palace by the empress dowager should not have been long.

Ye Zhen Zhen answered, "That is good too, if in anytime I need to use you, I would borrow you from the emperor, just not sure if the emperor would be willing" she looks at Ji Wu Jiu and says "Your Majesty, what do you think?"

Ji Wu Jiu regained his senses from her call, "hmm?"

Ye Zhen Zhen stop bothering him. Eventhough in her heart, she was not happy, but she did not show it at all, afraid that the empress dowager will be happy.

That night, Ji Wu Jiu slept at Gan Qing Palace. Wang You Cai came to report and said Feng You De was leaning against the wall to eavesdrop, but the emperor did not call upon Bai Xiang Ru.

Zhuang Concubine has been with Ji Wu Jiu for a lot of years, when Xiang Ru left previously, Zhuang Concubine should have already been by Ji Wu Jiu's side. Therefore Ye Zhen Zhen went to Han Guang Hall to look for Zhuang Concubine, wanting to hear directly from her about the past.

The moment Zhuang Concubine heard Xiang Ru's name, she was shocked, "She

is dead”

“Didn’t die” Ye Zhen Zhen shook her head, “Tell me about the past”

Zhuang Concubine knows about Ye Zhen Zhen’s temper, so she did not dare to bring her round the bushes, and told her everything, “She was the crown prince’s personal maid, and was of the same rank of the Meng Head butler. But his majesty seemed to rely on her more. Not to mention, she was pretty, not only during the day she helps him, at night too....”

Ye Zhen Zhen stops her, and asks “She slept with him before?”

Zhuang Concubine nodded, “Yes, that time there would definitely be 2 or 3 times in a month where she accompanies him”

“After that, she is still only a maid ? What type of rules is this?”

“Empress, you wouldn’t know, last time the head of the inner palace was the empress dowager, and she has never liked Xiang Ru, therefore....”

Ye Zhen Zhen can’t help but to think it’s funny. It seems like the empress dowager’s foolishness was not due to old age, but has been originally so. A maid servant, after serving the master, but was not given any title, she was really a small hearted person. The concubine’s ranking in the Eastern Palace can’t be very high either, and can only be considered as Cai Ren rank, simply giving her that rank will save face for all. However, a maid servant is still indeed to get rid of than a concubine.

Ye Zhen Zhen asks “The emperor did not try to get her a title?” Doesn’t seem like Ji Wu Jiu at all.

Zhuang Concubine answered, “Of course he did. The emperor knows his mother’s temper, and decided to ask the previous emperor to help grant the title, but it seems like Xiang Ru was the one that wasn’t willing. Saying that the moment she becomes a Cai Ren, she would not be able to serve him everyday, and was willing to be a ordinary maid only to hope to stay by his side. In the end the emperor was moved, so she didn’t receive ranking in the end”

Such a loyal servant. Ye Zhen Zhen laughed coldly, and asks “This should not have been known by others, how did you find out?”

“It was the deceased Su Jie Yu whom told me, last time Su Jie Yu was in very good terms with Bai Xiang Ru”

“Don’t tell me, the reason why Su Jie Yu was doted upon was because of Bai Xiang Ru”

“This... I am not sure. But the way the emperor treats Bai Xiang Ru, is indeed different from the others, In Xie Fang Hall, her drawing is still being hung on the wall.”

Ye Zhen Zhen closes her eyes, and a maiden in red plum blossom and snow appears, looking at her smiling. In a blink of an eye the maiden actually becomes real and came out from the drawing, slowly approaching her, but the moment she raises up her head, it became Su Jie Yu’s face.

Ye Zhen Zhen laughed, indeed that “You Suo Si” did have a back story, Bai Xiang Ru was using that fragrance to scold Ji Wu Jiu for abandoning her. If indeed he abandoned her, then why did she not keep her feelings aside, like how the poem speaks about “forgetting now and forever, no longer needed to be remembered”, wouldn’t that show she has pride? I really don’t believe that if you were not willing the empress dowager can force you!

The more she thinks about it, the angrier she gets, linking it to Ji Wu Jiu, she got even angrier. How is that fella any good, so many past lovers coming one by one, uncountable... Ignoring, those powdered women in the palace... now an old lover from many years back turned up, this type of men should have been thrown into the snow pants-less and get his **** frozed.!

Ji Wu Jiu slept in his own palace for two nights, so Ye Zhen Zhen felt a little cautious. She felt that this Xiang Ru is not easy to handle, Ji Wu Jiu also treats her very differently. Both of them had feelings for one another previously, after so many years, and unlike Ji Wu Jiu she does not have so many spies for her around the palace, what if the both of them.....n?”

Not to mention, this maid servant was given to him by his mother, even if the empress wants to do something, it would be hard to find a start.

Ye Zhen Zhen can only go find out what’s happening first. She was never a

weakling, if that two really have something going on, she would naturally have a way to handle.

As a good emperor, Ji Wu Jiu is busy at work in Yang Xin Hall. When he saw Ye Zhen Zhen come in, his hands holding the pen did not stop, but only looked up and said, “Empress, you are here? Have a sit, Xiang Ru serve tea”

Bai Xiang Ru serves the tea as ordered, Ye Zhen Zhen receives the tea, and called her “I thought you are in charge of Gan Qing Palace, how come you are at Yang Xin Hall now?”

Bai Xiang Ru knows the empress is here to create troubles, looking down she answers calmly, “I have left my duties and post, please punish me your majesty”

Ji Wu Jiu places his pen down and answered for her, “It was me who asks her to come”

No wonder she is not afraid of anything, there is someone to back her up. Ye Zhen Zhen places her cup down, and said lazily, “If the master cannot leave you, then you should have said so, if everything requires your master to answer for you, do you have the virtue to receive it”

Bai Xiang Ru immediately knelt down “I know my wrongs!”

Ye Zhen Zhen answered, “Since you know you are wrong, there will be a need to punish, but since you are the emperor’s person I would be more considerate, go outside the gates and kneel for 4 hours”

This was just to test, if the maid servant sent by the empress dowager, the emperor’s personal maid, can she be punished by the empress.

Indeed, Ji Wu Jiu stopped her, “She was only working on my orders, you don’t have be like that”

Ye Zhen Zhen raises her eye brows and looked at him, smiling but no smiling she says, “Heartache?”

Ji Wu Jiu laughed, “Why are you in such a bad temper today?”

Ye Zhen Zhen got up and bid farewell.

Ji Wu Jiu looked at her back till she disappears from the door and then continued with his work.

Ji Wu Jiu once again worked till the night.

Fang Xiu Qing has submitted a very lengthy report and since Ji Wu Jiu wanted to be a good emperor, such work needs to be done and be done properly at that, he does not begrudge such work as well.

At night, when it was time to sleep, Xiang Ru along with 3 maid servants was preparing the imperial bed, when the bedsheets was ready, the rest of the maid servants left, and Bai Xiang Ru remained in the room, standing in front of Ji Wu Jiu, helping him remove his clothes.

Because he just got out from the bath, Ji Wu Jiu was wearing lighter clothes, and his clothes was very easy to remove. Bai Xiang Ru removed his outer clothes, and not sure if it was on purpose or what, but her fingers lingered at his waist, and lightly scratched him.

Summer clothes was thin, her finger's temperature was able to pass through the thin clothing layers and reach his skin.

Ji Wu Jiu also didn't know why, but when he was touched like that, he felt very bad as though as his heart grew furs. He pushed her away and said, "I will do it myself"

Bai Xiang Ru whom was still holding his waist belt, sighed and said "It's my fault that I am not able to serve you well. Having not met you for these years, my hands are not good any more, I deserve a beating"

Ji Wu Jiu sighed and said "There is no need to say those type of words," He pulls back his waist belt, and seeing her not moving, he said, "Nevermind, wear it back again"

Bai Xiang Ru surprised, "Your majesty?"

"Go Kun Ning Palace" Not seeing her for 2 days, he is missing her already.

Bai Xiang Ru returned to her senses and reacted, "The night is dark, why don't the emperor sleep earlier? Most probably the empress is already asleep, if you are to go to Kun Ning Palace now..." It would be troublesome.

Ji Wu Jiu answered, "no worries"

Very quickly, Bai Xiang Ru understood what does the “no worries” means, the empress doesn’t even need to come receive the emperor! The emperor doesn’t let anyone announce his arrival, so she is sleeping nicely inside.

Bai Xiang Ru was not happy, what type of noble lady is this, treating the emperor like so. She followed Ji Wu Jiu to Kun Ning Palace, and wanted to serve him in front of her bed, however Su Feng blocked her path, “the emperor has arrived at Kun Ning Palace, we will serve him, Gu gu may rest. If you are still required to do it personally here, then we would have no face to meet people” Xiang Ru’s ranking was higher than Su Feng so she calls her Gu gu, Su Yue’s ranking was also higher than Su Feng, however their relationship was close, so they call each other sisters.

Bai Xiang Ru has no more excuses to go in. With a layer of curtain in between, she looks at whats happening inside, afraid that he might wake the empress up, he quietly and lightly climbed up to bed, the yellow bed curtains was pulled down by the maid servants, and covered the lady who was in a deep sleep on the bed.

Bai Xiang Ru became depressed.

- Gu gu = what normally a children would call their father’s elder sister. but in this context of palace talk, it’s a honorific way to call maid servants that is of higher ranking.

Chapter 81

hehe... no teasers this round =p

The next day was a rest day, Ji Wu Jiu for once woke up later than Ye Zhen Zhen. When Ye Zhen Zhen opened her eyes she saw him laying by her side, the weather was hot, so he couldn't wrap her up in his arms, therefore he was holding on to her hands, fingers knotted.

Ye Zhen Zhen lifted up her hands to see, and yawned with the other. She sat up, looked down to see his face. The jade like carved face was in deep slumber and lacks the usual stern and neutral face, with no lines between his forehead, so peaceful like a painting.

She bend down and gave him a peck on his cheeks.

After kissing him, Ye Zhen Zhen's brain finally kicked in. She remembered yesterday's happenings and took another look at the sleeping person, and found him detestable. She slowly remove her fingers from his hands one by one, and then pushed Ji Wu Jiu inch by inch towards the end of the bed.

Dong! Ji Wu Jiu got kicked down from the bed, and fell to the floor.

Ye Zhen Zhen immediately climbed back up the bed, and pretended to sleep.

Ji Wu Jiu was in a daze before finally realizing he was on the floor. With the aid of the bed frame, he got up, and through the cloth he could see someone is still laying inside not moving.

Thickening his face, he climbs back on to the bed, and hugged Zhen Zhen from the back.

Ye Zhen Zhen couldn't act anymore and starts to remove the hands on her waist.

Ji Wu Jiu smiled, "Zhen Zhen, don't be angry anymore" While he uses his jaw to push towards her shoulders.

Ye Zhen Zhen moves her body uncomfortably and said "Who is acting up"

"Its me, I am the one acting up, ok?" Ji Wu Jiu holds her down, "Stop moving, if

you keep moving I will have to eat you up”

Ye Zhen Zhen stopped moving. Then, suddenly her stomach growled.

Ji Wu Jiu knows just how important is eating towards Ye Zhen Zhen, therefore he immediately got up from the bed with her, washed up, changed clothes and starts eating.

After the meal, Ji Wu Jiu acted like he needs to leave, Ye Zhen Zhen look at the him who is one step away from the main door and suddenly said, “ What with Bai Xiang Ru..”

Ji Wu Jiu’s leg which one almost crossing the door moved, and made a turn, sat down and smiled, “You finally asks..”

Ye Zhen Zhen looked away, “If I don’t ask, then you wouldn’t tell me?”

Ji Wu Jiu asks her back , “If I don’t tell, then you won’t ask?”

Ye Zhen Zhen looked down and didn’t answer.

Ji Wu Jiu stood up and went to her, holding her shoulders against his body. Ye Zhen Zhen was sitting on the chair, bending her waist, face on his stomach, not a very comfortable but yet she was unwilling to part, so she just let her side face continue leaning on his stomach, closes her eyes and not speak.

Ji Wu Jiu caress her chin, and laughs, “Zhen Zhen, I like to see you get jealous because of me”

Ye Zhen Zhen frowns, “So you are telling me that, the day when you first met back Bai Xiang Ru, that expression of losing your soul was also acted out for me to be jealous on purpose?”

“No, I was just shocked that she was still alive. I did have some feelings with her previously, and was regretful that I was not able to protect her last time, but when I saw her alive and standing, I was indeed happy”

Ye Zhen Zhen looks at him suspiciously, “Nothing else?”

Then with a guilty face, like having committed a mistake infront of a teacher,” Zhen Zhen, there is indeed something I need to be honest, last time we were indeed intimate before..”

Ye Zhen Zhen pushes him away, “Then what about now”

Ji Wu Jiu crouch down and held on to her knees, and looks up at her, “Now, my body is thoroughly locked by you, no one else can touch”

Ye Zhen Zhen blushed, and shyly said, “Flowery words”

Ji Wu Jiu held on to Ye Zhen Zhen’s hand, and gave a light kiss on the back of her hands. Ye Zhen Zhen pulls her hands back and asks, “Then, what do you plan to do with her now?”

For a maid servant to have been intimate with the emperor before, she should have been promoted. There was already so many concubines and consorts in the palace, to have another one makes no difference to Ye Zhen Zhen. But from the empress dowager and the emperor’s way of action, it seems like they don’t plan to give her a title, what on earth are they planning? Let’s first forget about the empress dowager,.. but Ji Wu Jiu... Perhaps his feelings towards her hasn’t ended, and want to keep her by his side?

Ye Zhen Zhen gave a stare to Ji Wu Jiu when her thoughts reached there.

How would Ji Wu Jiu not know what she was thinking, “My Zhen Zhen is so cute, “ he said while standing up, “What you decide shall be it”

Ye Zhen Zhen gave it a thought, in name, Bai Xiang Ru was given to the emperor by the empress dowager, it is not appropriate for the empress to interfere. Therefore she said, ‘Why don’t you first ask her, if she wants to continue staying in the palace, then she will need to be promoted, if she wants to leave the palace, then you help marry her off to a good family. The current situation now is neither good or bad, really not following the customs, if she really wants to be a servant then she can come serve me at Kun Ning palace, I am a good tempered master, I will not treat her badly”

“Alright, then its settled. Let’s put this matter aside, I have another issue to discuss with you, and this matter will definitely make you lost for words”

The issue that Ji Wu Jiu said was actually his plan to roam in the lands of the citizen in plain clothes. The area around Su Zhe flooded, and it also became the place where ministers starts to corrupt. Since he wants to push for a better kingdom, so he decides to look for one of the heads to be punished to scare the

rest.

And as usual, Ye Zhen Zhen was super happy when she can join him to play at Jiangnan area.

The both of them discussed a while on matters such as, who to bring, what to bring and using which route to travel, where to go and etc,...

After the discussion, Ji Wu Jiu returned to Gan Qing palace, and called upon Bai Xiang Ru, and pass on Ye Zhen Zhen's decision.

Actually, although Ji Wu Jiu was acting according to Ye Zhen Zhen's decision, but there is something that he is hiding beneath his sleeves as well, just that now wasn't the right time to tell. When the time comes it will be known.

The moment Bai Xiang Ru heard that the empress wants to send her away from him, her face was full of tears, "Your majesty, I have been sent to Liao Dong for so long, and have finally been able to endure the cold bitter weather just to reunite with you. Now that I have finally returned to your side, I have only hope to be able to be able to serve you everyday. Although I am a slow but I hope that seeing how loyal I am, don't send me away, just scold me if I do anything wrong!"

Ji Wu Jiu sighed, "Helping you find a good suitor would definitely be better than living in the palace don't you think?"

Bai Xiang Ru looks at him sadly. "Master, why are you saying it like that. I am already of not virgin body, how can I marry another"

In another words, you have already slept me, now you want to push me to another men? Too late!

Seeing that Ji Wu Jiu was turned speechless by her, she continued "I know that your majesty and the empress are deeply in love, and the empress is just not comfortable with me around, thinking that I am bothering you guys. If so, why don't I just avoid her everytime I see her, and I would not bother the both you, is that alright?"

Her speech makes her sound like a lovelorn bird, and are willing to sacrifice for him, and is only hoping for a little bit of concern from him.

To be dense in the matters of love, does have some good points, Ji Wu Jiu is someone who does not react much to the soft words of women, and has always been a rational person, and matters that will change his emotion are very rare. He just felt a little guilty towards Bai Xiang Ru, and wanted to repay her, so he treated her a little bit better that is all. Furthermore, her father was Bai Jian Cheng, how can Ji Wu Jiu not have some sort of guard against her.

Therefore no matter how much she was crying or acting pitiful, he also showed no reaction, and listening to what she just said, he didn't give her any more face and straightforwardly replied, "Although you will not meet her, but meeting me everyday is not good too"

Bai Xiang Ru almost burst to death. Towards her understanding of Ji Wu Jiu, although he was a very mysterious person but he definitely wasn't a caring and gentle person, but for matters towards the empress he is so caring to such extent making others feel jealous. Although with deep hatred in her heart, her face tells otherwise, and continue crying "I only have one hope of staying by your majesty's side, although I can't see you I would still hope to be near you, I hope your majesty will allow"

This time, she is going for the I will stand back and sacrifice route. Ji Wu Jiu looked down on the person kneeling, without any emotions he agreed.

Following Ye Zhen Zhen's suggestion, he granted the title of Mei Ren to Bai Xiang Ru. Mei Ren is ranked 5th, and for Bai Xiang Ru, this rank is neither too high or too low. Ye Zhen Zhen purposely allocate her at Ba Jiao Hall, this place was located at the southeast corner of the palace, even if Ji Wu Jiu were to take a stroll it will never reach there.

After the empress dowager found out about this matter, even if she was not happy, but there was nothing that she can say. The empress done it all in the right order, and she can't find any fault in it.

After a few days, Ji Wu Jiu and Ye Zhen Zhen was getting ready to head southwards, and in order to avoid any mishaps happening in the palace, Ji Wu Jiu purposely wrote an edict to announce that Zhuang Concubine will be the one in charge of the inner palace while the empress was gone.

And because they were on a plain clothes trip, and Ji Wu Jiu purposely gave Ye Zhen Zhen a secret letter to as to avoid any problems in the future.

The both of them traveled from the capital to Jinling, while playing along the way, enjoying the scenery and trying the local foods, so they don't really feel tired.

Ever since Ji Wu Jiu was the emperor, he has managed the country well, therefore the area here is peaceful and clam. On route he will occasionally ask the citizens a few question, where are they from, how are they living, are their local minister treating them well, and how they think of the emperor....

The citizens normally answers honestly as they are currently living in a harmonious pace. When the emperor is mentioned, it was full of praises, but the only thing that they were unhappy was that the emperor once visited the local brothels. Naturally he was a man, so to make this type of mistake was understandable, the emperor also made an official apology so they thought he should be given a chance.

Ji Wu Jiu was also shocked on how powerful the story of the Celestial Maiden was,...

That is correct, because he got married to the "Celestial Maiden", who would even bother to keep pin pointing on the fact that the emperor visited the brothel before.

Therefore, when Ji Wu Jiu found out that all the citizens were praising the empress, he also didn't feel that it was weird.

Zhen Zhen's popularity is way higher than his, as a man, as a husband Ji Wu Jiu more or less felt in a lost. But no matter, no matter how legendary the celestial maiden is, when the night falls, she would still be under him. Ji Wu Jiu thought perversly.

Original Author's Note: The enemy is high in perserverance, Xiang Ru will not be easily turned to bubbles, she would still have scenes at the back

Hmm.. another one will appear soon...

